The original of this book is in the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in the United States on the use of the text.
SIDNEY'S ARCADIA.
THREE HUNDRED COPIES OF THIS EDITION HAVE BEEN PRINTED, OF WHICH THIS IS

NO. 123.
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE'S

ARCADIA

WRITTEN BY

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, KNT.

THE ORIGINAL QUARTO EDITION (1590) IN PHOTOGRAPHIC
FACSIMILE, WITH A BIBLIOGRAPHICAL INTRODUCTION
EDITED

BY H. OSKAR SOMMER, PH.D.

LONDON

KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER AND CO., LTD.

1891
TO

Elizabeth Margaret, Lady Wilbanke

OF EARTHAM, CHICHESTER,

IN EARNEST APPRECIATION OF HER

MANY RARE QUALITIES.

* * *
T Wilton, the seat of his brother-in-law, the Earl of Pembroke, in rural seclusion, Sir Philip Sidney conceived the plan of writing his "Arcadia." It is contrary to his wish that we now possess his work; he did not intend it for the world at large, having only designed it to express his tender affection for his sister, Mary, Countess of Pembroke. How modestly Sir Philip Sidney thought of his work is plainly shown in the dedicatory epistle to his sister: "Now it is done onelie for you, onely to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such friends, who will weigh errors in the ballaunce of good will, I hope, for the father's sake it will be pardoned, perchance made much of, though in it selfe it haue deformities. For indeede, for seuerer eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflinglie handled." The author's contemporaries and posterity have judged the "Arcadia" differently, for soon after its publication it was widely read—a fact which is sufficiently proved by the great number of editions it has passed through, and by the references to it by Shakespeare, Milton, Waller, Fuller, Cowper, and others. Even the unhappy King Charles I. is said to have adopted Pamela's prayer ["Arcadia," Book III.,
chap. vi., page 263] as his favourite, and it formed part of the collection which he handed to Archbishop Juxon at their parting on the scaffold. Milton in his "Iconoclastes," blames the king severely for "having stolen a prayer word for word from the mouth of a heathen woman praying to a heathen god."

After her brother's premature and lamented death in the battle of Zutphen, Lady Pembroke was advised that she would serve his memory better by disobeying his wish than by abandoning this noble work to oblivion. And, indeed, if it were not for his literary legacy, Sir Philip Sidney's blameless life, his valour, and noble character would perhaps long since have been forgotten. Thus in 1590—now three hundred years ago—was ushered into the world under the title of "The Covntesse of Pembroke's Arcadia," the quarto volume of which the following sheets are a faithful reproduction by photolithography. Sir Philip Sidney had written the book on loose sheets, partly in his sister's presence, partly sent to her immediately after their composition; this very likely is the reason that the original edition is not quite perfect.

The obligation of English literature to Sir Philip Sidney, perhaps more as defender and patron of poetry than a poet, would be in itself sufficient to justify the present issue of his work in its original shape, if there were no other reason to be adduced. But the editio princeps of the "Arcadia" has become very scarce; it is a fine specimen of quaint old typography, and it is different, though not in the sense generally asserted, from all later editions—a fact which attaches a peculiar value to it. I am inclined to believe that the text as the quarto gives it is more likely the original one of the author than that of the folio.
Preface.

When asked to supply an Introduction to the present volume, I first thought of treating of the "Arcadia" as a specimen of the English pastoral novel, and of thus realizing a plan I conceived several years ago. The limited space, however, at my disposal, no less than the consideration that I might detract by my humble addition from the value of the work itself, induced me to abandon this plan, and to give instead a bibliographical account of the book during the past three centuries.¹

It is with great pleasure I express my gratitude to E. Maunde Thompson, Esq., the Principal Librarian of the British Museum, for kindly permitting Mr. Charles Praetorius to photograph the copy of the edition of 1590 in the Grenville Collection. I am greatly obliged to Mr. R. E. Graves for valuable information respecting various copies of the "Arcadia" in the Britwell Library.

H. Oskar Sommer.

London, April, 1891.

¹ "Sir Philip Sidney's Arcadia and its Sources" is the title of Mr. H. Frank Heath's dissertation, Strassburg, June, 1890, which is shortly to be published in "Quellen und Forschungen zur Sprach- und Culturgeschichte der germanischen Völker, herausgegeben von Bernhard ten Brink, Ernst Martin, E. Schmidt," Strassburg, C. Trübner, 1874, etc.
CONTENTS.

Bibliographical Introduction . . . . . pp. 1-45
Photographic Facsimile of the Quarto Edition of
1590 . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 2 ff. and ff. 1-360
INTRODUCTION.

ONE of the writings of Sir Philip Sidney were printed during his lifetime, but they were known to many of his contemporaries and friends through MS. copies. Concerning the "Arcadia" we possess evidence to this effect in a letter of Lord Brooke to Sir Francis Walsingham, Sidney's father-in-law, preserved in the State Papers. It is endorsed 1586.

On August 23rd, 1588, the "Arcadia," "written by Sir Philippe Sidney," was entered under the name of

---

1 From the letter of Fulke Greville, Lord Brooke, I quote only the following lines:

"To the Right honorable S't francis Walsingham."

"S', this day, one ponsonby, a booke-bynder in pols church yard, came to me and told me that ther was one in hand to print S't Philip Sydney's old arcadia, asking me yf it were done with your honors consent, or any other of his frendes? I told him, to my knowledge, no: then he advysed me to give warninge of it, either to the archbishope or doctor Cosen, who have, as he says, a copy to peruse to that end.

"S', I am loth to renew his memory unto you, but yeat in this I must presume; for I have sent my lady, your daughter, at her request, a correction of that old one, don 4 or 5 years since, which he left in trust with me; wherof there is no more copies, and fitter to be reprinted then the first, which is so common: notwithstanding, even that to how and why; so as in many respects, espetially the care of printing of it; so as to be don with more deliberation."
William Ponsonby, the same who published Spenser's "Faerie Queene," in the Registers of the Stationers' Company of London. It was published in a quarto volume of 764 pp. in 1590, the same year in which the first three books of the "Faerie Queene" saw light of day in print. But very few perfect copies of this original edition of the "Arcadia" are extant. The reproduction in photographic facsimile of the present edition is done from the copy in the Grenville Collection (N° 10,440) in the British Museum. The typographical execution of the editio princeps is very satisfactory, in many respects even tasteful. The quarto volume (7 x 5½ in.) is arranged in sheets from A to Z, and from Aa to Zz in eights; the folios are at the same time marked by numbers in the right-hand top corner of every recto. Folio A₁, is a blank. The title on A₂ recto runs thus:


2 Mr. Grenville, according to his habit, fixed a little slip in his copy, bearing the following note: "Sidney Arcadia 1st edition 4° Ponsonbie 1590. I am assured that this is the only perfect copy of this very rare first edition. Mr. Heber's copy & Mr. Collier's are both very imperfect."—This statement is erroneous; there are several perfect copies extant, though perhaps not so well preserved. See "Catalogue of the Huth Library,” vol. iv, p. 1355: “A, 3 leaves, title on A₂ ; B—ZZ in eights; Aiii is in facsimile. First edition. In the subsequent ones the text was much altered and improved, the M.S. used for this 4° being imperfect and otherwise faulty."—There are also perfect copies in the Britwell and Rowfant Libraries. There is no copy at the Bodleian Library, Oxford, which only contains copies of the editions of 1598, 1605, 1613, 1624-25, 1629, 1638, and 1725.

3 All the title-pages described in the Introduction are faithful reproductions of the originals, as far as modern type permits; they
Introduction.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA,

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE SIDNEI.

Below this title follows the large coat-of-arms of the Sidneys, with the motto, "Quo fata vocant," and the lines:

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini, 1590.

A_2 verso is a blank. On A_3 verso, below some ornamental design, follows the dedicatory epistle: "To My Deare Ladie and Sister, The Covntesse of Pembroke," which fills three pages. On A_4 verso is a notice by "the ouerseer of the print," telling the readers that the division of the chapters as well as the summaries preceding them are his additions, and not found in Sir Philip's copy. He further states that he distributed the eclogues at the end of the various books. The text of the "Arcadia" begins on B_1 recto. The summaries by are set up in type from tracings made by myself. Except those of the editions of 1599, 1628, 1655, 1662, and 1674, which, being too large in size for the present volume, are reduced, they are the exact size of the originals.
“the ouerseer of the print” are printed in italics. These summaries are omitted in the later editions.

The second edition of the “Arcadia,” in folio, was published by William Ponsonbie in 1593. This edition is as rare as the editio princeps, if not more so; there is no copy of it at the British Museum. The following account of this edition is based upon the copy of the Britwell Library, which, through the kindness of Mr. Graves, I had the chance of examining. As concerns the text of the “Arcadia,” this edition is the one on which all later editions are based, the text of the original edition having been slightly altered in the “Eclogues” adjoined to each book, and augmented by two books. The copy begins with a blank leaf. The second leaf contains on its recto the following title:

THE
COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR
PHILIP SIDNEY
Knight.

NOW SINCE THE FIRST EDI-
tion augmented and ended.

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie.

Anno Domini 1593.
Introduction.

This title is surrounded by an ornamental emblematic frame specially cut in wood for this edition of the "Arcadia" and used again for the editions of 1598, 1613, 1623, 1629, 1633, and 1638. The centre of the lower part of the frame is occupied by a picture representing in the background a hilly landscape with a castle or a church, in the foreground a pig and a rosemary shrub, with the motto "Non tibi spiro," evidently allegorically expressive of the idea that the "Arcadia" was not what everybody could appreciate. This picture is surrounded by a frame of scrollwork, from which on the right and left-hand sides, supported by arabesque designs, start two pedestals. These two pedestals are crowned with two Arcadian figures, a shepherd on the left and a huntress on the right. Both figures hold up an emblem forming the top part of the design, and consisting of the armorial bearings of the Sidney's—a bear and a lion on both sides of an ornamental shield, with the crest, a wild boar. The whole is surmounted by two cupids blowing horns.

The third leaf, marked \( I_f \), contains the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc.; \( f_4 \) is occupied by the preface, "To the Reader." The first book of the "Arcadia" begins on leaf \( A_r \) recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, and from Aa to Ss in sixes; the first four leaves of every signature are marked, the last two not. \( l_2 \) (leaf 50) is misprinted for \( H_2 \) (leaf 44), and leaf 46 for leaf 49. \( Y_z \) appears to be inserted into the Britwell copy from another copy. Between \( f_1 \) and \( A_r \) the Britwell copy

---

1 This ornamental marginal design was used by W. Ponsonbie for the title-page of his edition of a translation of "Nicolo Macchia-
veli's Florentine History," London, 1595, 4to.—Mr. A. W. Pollard, in
his article on "The History of the Title-page" ("Universal Review,"
London, 4to., vol. for May to August, 1889), has reproduced this title
in photographic facsimile.
contains on four leaves of MS, an Index and a Table to the "Arcadia" in the same handwriting as copious notes throughout the text, very likely that of a certain "John Wylde" whose name appears on the title-page as that of the former owner of the book. The volume has all in all 247 leaves, four of preliminary matter and 243 of text. The colophon on SS, verso runs thus:

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie, dwelling in Paules Church-yard neere vnto the great north dore of Paules.  
Anno Domini. 1593.

The statements concerning the relationship of the quarto to the first and all other folio editions generally given by bibliographers and literary scholars are erroneous. There do not exist numberless variations between the two texts, and it is equally wrong to assert "that not a few original poems are found in the 4to which are not reprinted when the Countess of Pembroke revised the whole." Nobody seems to have ever compared the two texts, and the erroneous statements seem to be caused by the words in the preface in the folio edition "To the Reader:" "The disfigured face, gentle Reader, wherewith this worke not longe since appeared to common view . . . . to take in hand the wiping away of those spots wherewith the beauties thereof were unworthely blemished." The main differences of the two texts are these:

1. The folio contains a part of the third book, and a fourth and fifth book, not to be found in the quarto.
2. The additions of "the ouerseer of the print" added in the quarto, such as the division of the books into chapters and the summaries of the contents preceding them, are omitted in the folio.
3. Some poems, but only such as are subjoined to the end of the books under the heading of "Eclogues," are differently placed or replaced by others. Thus it occurred that Sir John Harrington states in his "Ariosto," 1591, that the quarto does not contain the following poem:

"Who doth desire that chaste his wife should be,
First be he true, for truth doth truth deserve:
Then such be he, as she his worth may see,
And one man still credit with her preserve.

"Not toying kinde, nor causeleslie vnkinde,
Not stirring thoughts, nor yet denying right,
Not spying faults, nor in plaine errors blind,
Neuer hard hand, nor euer raines too light.

"As farre from want, as farre from vaine expence
(The one doth force, the latter doth entice),
Allow good companie, but keepe from thence
All filt by mouthes that glory in their vice.
This done, thou hast no more, but leaue the rest
To vertue, fortune, time and womans brest."

On the other hand, the prose text of the quarto is with very insignificant orthographical differences reprinted in the folio, and all poems occurring in the text are to be found unaltered in the same places in the folio where they stand in the quarto.

The following account is the result of a comparison of the quarto with the folio of 1598 [which is a faithful reprint from the folio of 1593] at the British Museum. All textual variations are quoted; the beginnings of all poetical passages occurring in the text are referred to in both editions; some passages omitted in the quarto are
supplied from the folio, such as, e.g., the epitaph of "Argalus and Parthenia."

1590. Book I. folio 1 r. p. 11
f. 12 r. "What length of verse braue Mopsas good to show?"
   [14 lines.]

f. 51 r. "Transformed in shew, but more transformed in minde."
   [15 lines.]

f. 77 r. "Come shepheards weedes become your maisters minde."
   [10 lines.]

f. 83 r. "Now thanked be the great God Pan."
   [12 lines.]

f. 86 r. The first Eclogues.

The prose paragraph beginning "Basiliaus" and terminating "half saying," the following eight lines of poetry with intercalated prose, as well as the next prose paragraph, agree in both texts. The then following dialogue varies a little in the last stanzas, and for "Lalas" in the quarto is written "Thyrsis" in the folio.

fol. 89 r. Lalus: p. 77. Thyrsis:

But if my Kala this my suite denies,
Which so much reason beares,
Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which saw too much:
If still her minde be such, If she still hate loves law,
My earthy moulde will melte in watrie teares.

... ... ... ... ... ...
... ... ... ... ... ...
... ... ... ... ... ...
... ... ... ... ... ...
... ... ... ... ... ...
... ... ... ... ... ...
... ... ... ... ... ...
... ... ... ... ... ...
Introduction.

f. 89 v. Lalus:
So doth my life within it selfe dissolue,
That I am like a flower
New plucked from the place where it did breed,
Life showing, dead indeed:
Such force hath Loue above poore Natures power.

ibid. Dorus:
Such force hath Loue above poore Natures power.
That I growe like a shade,
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,
While that one body shine.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.

ibid. Lalus:
Oh he is mard that is for others made.
Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it hath mard my shepheards trade.
Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loues condition:
Of singing take to thee the reputation.

ibid. Dorus:
Of singing take to thee the reputation

p. 77. Thyrsis:
Thus . . . . . . .
That I grow like the beast,
Which beares the bit a weaker force doth guide
Yet patient must abide
Such weight it hath, which once is full possest.

ibid. Dorus:
Such weight it hath which once is full possest.
That I become a vision,
Which hath in others head his only being
And lines in fancie seing.
O wretched state of man in selfe division!

ibid. Thyrsis:
O wretched state of man in selfe division!
O vvell thou sayest! a feeling declaration
Thy tongue hath made, of Cupids deepe incision,
But now . . . . . . .

p. 78. Dorus:
. . . thou hast got the . . . . . . .
Introduction.

New friend of mine; I yield
to thy habilitie

My soule doth seeke another estimation.

But ah my Muse I would
thou hadst agilitie,

To worke my Goddesse so by thy inuention,

On me to cast those eyes,
where shine nobilitie.

Seen, and unknowne; heard,
but without attention.

Hereafter follow in the quarto a prose paragraph and a poem beginning: "As I my little flocke on Ister banke." This is inserted in the folio in the fourth book. The same takes place with the next prose paragraph and the dialogue between "Geron" and "Histor." The poem "Fortune, Nature, Loue long haue contended about me," etc., etc., in the folio, is not in the quarto; but the next poem, "If mine eyes can speke to do heartie errand," etc., is found in another place, but in the same book. The dialogue between "Strephon" and "Klaus" in the quarto occurs in the folio in the second book. The dialogue between "Dorus" and "Zelmane," and the following poem beginning: "A Shepheards


Introduction.

*tale no height of stile desires,* etc., are not in the quarto.

f. 98r. Book II. p. 96

f. 99r. "In vaine mine eyes you labour to amend."

[14 lines.]

f. 101r. "Let not old age disgrace my high desire."

[14 lines.]

f. 105v. "Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight."

[10 lines.]

f. 111v. "My sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serue."

[8 lines.]

f. 117v. "You liuing powres enclosed in stately shrine."

[18 lines.]

f. 118r. &v. "My Words, in hope to blaze my steadfast minde."

[12 lines.]

ff. 150-52 "What toong can her perfection tell."

[147 lines.]

ff. 156-58 "Alas how long this pilgrimage doth last."

[180 lines.]

ff. 164-65 "Poore Painters oft with silly Poets ioyne."

[48 lines.]

f. 174r. "Loued I am, and yet complaine of Loue."

[14 lines.]

p. 97

p. 98-99

p. 102-3

p. 107-8

p. 113

p. 114

p. 141-44

p. 146-50

p. 155-56

p. 164
Introduction.

f. 176v. "Ouer these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes."
[18 lines.]

f. 196v. "Me thought some slaues be mist: if so, not much amisse."
[6 lines.]

f. 214r. "With two strange fires of equall heate possesst."
[14 lines.]

f. 224v. "A hatefull cure with hate to heale."
[12 lines.]

f. 225v. "Thy Elder care shall from thy carefull face."
[10 lines.]

f. 226v. "Apollo great, whose beames the greater world do light."
[16 lines.]

f. 234 ff. 234-37 The second Eclogues. Both texts agree till "fortisfie."

Hereafter follow in the quarto a prose paragraph and a dialogue between "Nico" and "Dorus," in the folio a prose paragraph and a dialogue between "Strephon" and "Klaius." Hereafter follow in the quarto another prose paragraph and a dialogue between "Strephon" and "Klaius." The prose paragraph is much shorter in the folio, but the dialogue is common to both. In the quarto the second Eclogues terminate then with another prose paragraph and some hexameters describing "Philisides" words and an
Introduction.

echo. The folio also contains these hexameters, but besides dialogues between "Geron" and "Philisides," "Geron" and "Mastix;" and several other poems, such as:

1. "My muse what ailes this ardour To blase my onely secrets?" etc.

2. "Reason, tell me ily mind, if there be reason," etc.

3. "O sweet woods the delight of solitariness!" etc.

f. 244 Book III. p. 235
ff. 246v., 247 "Vnto a caitife wretch whom long pp. 237-39 affliction holdeth."
[86 lines.]

ff. 272v.-275 "Now was our heau'ny vaulte de- pp. 260-63 priued of the light."
[86 lines.]

f. 306 "The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth." p. 289
[24 lines.]

f. 311v. Space left for The Epitaph: p. 294
an epitaph. His being was in her alone: And he not being, she was none.

They ioy'd one ioy, one grief they grieu'd,
One loue they lou'd, one life they liu'd.
Introduction.

The band was one, one was
the sword
That did his death, her death
afford.

As all the rest, so now the
stone
That tombs the two is justly
one.

Argalus & Parthenia.

ff.346v.-348 "Since to death is gone the shep-
heard hie"

[This poem is in the folio in Book IV.] The third book in the quarto ends on fol. 360v. with the words, "Where at ashamed, (as hauing neuer done so much before in his life)" and below three asterisks, to show that it was not complete. This passage in the same imperfect state occurs on p. 332 of the folio edition. There are 57 pp. of text added in the folio to the third book, viz., pp. 333-390; 40 pp. from 391 to 431 contain the fourth book, and 40 pp. from 431 to 471 the fifth book.

The third edition of the "Arcadia" was published by William Ponsonbie in 1598, together with the Sonnets, "Astrophel and Stella," and the "Defence of Poesie."

The British Museum copy, once belonging to John Payne Collier (C. 40. k. 5), is in a splendid state of preservation. It has eight pages of preliminary matter. ¶1 is a blank; ¶2 is occupied by the following title:
THE
COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.
WRITTEN BY SIR
PHILIP SIDNEY
Knight.
NOW THE THIRD TIME
published, with sundry new additions
of the same Author.

LONDON
Imprinted for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini 1598.

This title is surrounded by the same ornamental marginal design as noticed in the preceding edition. ¶ is taken up by the epistle, "To My Deare Lady And Sister," etc. On ¶ is printed the preface, "To the Reader." The text of the "Arcadia" begins on A recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, from Aa to Zz, and from Aaa to Bbb in sixes, and ends on the verso of Bbb with the word "Finis." Pages are marked throughout. The "Arcadia" ends on page 471, i.e., Rr recto, "The end of the fifth and last booke of Arcadia." On Rr verso commence "CERTAINE SONETS WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEY: Neuer before printed," and finish on Ss verso. Leaves Ss recto to Xx verso are occupied by "THE DEFENCE OF POESIE, by Sir PHILIP SIDNEY, Knight (·.)" and
Introduction.

Xx₂ recto to Bbb₃ recto by "Astrophel and Stella." The last leaves of the book, i.e., from Bbb₃ verso to Bbb₆ verso, contain "HER MOST EXCELLENT MAIESTIE WALKING IN VVANSTEET GARDEN, AS SHE PASSED DOWNE INTO THE groue, there came suddenly among the traine one apparelled like an honest mans wife of the countrey, where crying out for iustice, and desiring all the Lords and Gentlemen to speak a good word for her, she was brought to the presence of her Maiestie, to whom upon her knees she offred a supplication, and used this speech." This edition is, with very slight orthographical differences and the additions specified, a reprint of that of 1593.

The next and fourth edition of the "Arcadia" was published in 1599. There is a copy of it at the British Museum (C. 40. l. 21). Two leaves without the signatures open the book. The first has on its recto the title-page. Below an ornamental design of scrollwork bearing a shield with a rampant lion in the centre, the title runs thus:

THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEY

Knight.

Now the third time published, with sundry new additions of the same Author.
Introduction.

Then follows another small ornamental design, and below:

**EDINBURGH.**

*PRINTED BY ROBERT WALDE-GRAUE, PRINTER TO THE KINGS MAJESTIE.*

*CUM PRIVILEGIO REGIO. 1599.*

The verso of this leaf is blank. The recto of the second leaf is occupied by the epistle, "To My Deare Ladie and Sister," etc., and the verso contains the preface, "To the Reader." The first book of the "Arcadia" begins on A, recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, Aa to Zz, and Aaa in sixes; it ends on Aaa₆ recto. The folios are marked by figures on the top of each recto. The "Arcadia" ends on Qq₅ verso, the remainder of the volume being occupied by "The Sonets, the Defence of Poesie, Astrophel and Stella, and Her Most Excellent Maiestie Walking in Wansteed Garden."

For the fifth time the "Arcadia" was published in 1605, by Mathew Lownes.¹ This edition is almost a facsimile reprint of the one of 1598. There are four pages of preliminary matter. ¶₁, a blank, is missing; ¶₂ recto contains the title:

¹ From the following entry into the Registers of the Stationers' Company: "21 July 1601. John Harrison the younger, in a cause betweene him and Ponsonby, confessed he had V of the bookes of Arcadia, printed in Scotland or elsewhere by Waldegrave." It appears that Harrison imported copies of the Edinburgh edition of 1599, and was accused by Ponsonby. It is, however, impossible to say how the controversy was settled.
Introduction.

THE
COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR
Philip Sidney
Knight.

NOW THE FOURTH TIME
PUBLISHED, WITH SVNDRY
NEW ADDITIONS OF THE
same Author.

London
Imprinted for Mathew Lownes
Anno DOMINI.
1605.¹

These lines are printed into two rectangular spaces left vacant in an ornamental design covering the whole page. The background of this design represents the clouds with many small stars and various allegorical figures. The centre of the lower part is taken up by Mercury surrounded by stars. On his right hand is “Gemini” and an allegorical figure of “Arithmetica;” on his left “Virgo” and “Musica.” There are on the

¹ The expense of printing the editions of 1605 and 1613 having been shared by Simon Waterson and Mathew Lownes, some copies of these editions have the name of the one, some that of the other publisher on the title-page.
same side three figures representing "Astronomia," a woman with a heavenly sphere in her hand; "Polibius," a man looking with a telescope towards a planet; "Strabo" designing a map of "Anglia." On the other side, above "Arithmetica," follows "Geometrica," a woman with a pair of compasses, a square, and a ruler; "Hipparchus," a man sitting down and fixing a sextant to the sun; and "Aratus," a man teaching in a sitting attitude. The centre of the upper part is taken up by a globe, with the motto, "VIRESCIT VULNERE VERITAS," "Ptolemeus" sitting on the one and "Marinus" on the other side. Above the globe "Time" is represented leading away a young man, an old one limping after him, and a boy with a toy in his hand preceding him. The design is crowned by two more allegorical figures: on the one side a king and child with a lion, on the other a man and woman with a crayfish.

On f. 1 is printed the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc.; on f. 4, "To the Reader." The text of the "Arcadia" begins on A1 recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, from Aa to Zz, and from Aaa to Bbb in sixes, and contains 576 pages. The "Arcadia" ends on Rr2 recto. The remainder of the volume is occupied exactly as in the ed. 1598 by "The Sonets," "Defence of Poesie," "Astrophel and Stella," and "Her Most Gracious Maiestie walking," etc.

For the sixth time the "Arcadia" was printed in 1613. This is the first edition to which a portrait of the author is prefixed. It bears the inscription: "The Right Honourable S'r PHILIP SIDNEY, Knt." and further: "From a curious Limning drawn by Isaac Oliver in the Collection of Dr Richard Mead." It represents Sir Philip Sidney in a sitting attitude under a tree, his sword in his hand. There are only two leaves preliminary matter. The recto
Introduction.

of the first has, surrounded by the above-described emblematic marginal design (p. 5) this title:

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEY
Knight.

NOW THE FOURTH TIME published, with some new Additions.

LONDON
Imprinted by H. L. for Simon Waterfon 1613.

The next leaf contains the epistle, "To My Dear Lady and Sister," etc. The preface, "To The Reader," is omitted. The "Arcadia" begins on A₁. The volume is then exactly arranged as the preceding edition, save that in signature

The Registers of the Stationers' Company (E. Arber's "Transcript," vol. iii. p. 133) contains the following entry:

"Edward Aldee Entred for his copy vnder the handes of master HARTWELL and Master feild warden / A booke Called, the Countesse of Bedforde Arcadia / begynnynge where the Countesse of Pembrokes endes vj." The book announced here seems however to have never appeared. I have not been able to find any other reference to it.
Introduction.

Ee one leaf is inserted. Page 332 corresponds in every detail to p. 332 of the ed. of 1605; both are marked Ee₄. In the ed. of 1613 follows now a leaf marked Ee₅; but this leaf is not numbered, so that the whole volume has again 576 pages. The following lines are printed on the recto of this leaf, the verso being a blank:

"Thus far the worthy Author had revised or enlarged that first written Arcadia of his, which onely passed from hand to hand, and was neuer printed: hauing a purpose likewise to haue new ordered; augmented, and concluded the rest, had he not bene prevented by vn tymely death. So that all which foloweth here of his Work, remayned as it was done and sent away in seuerall loose sheets (beeing neuer after reviewed, nor so much as seene all together by himself) without any certaine disposition or perfect order. Yet for that it was his, how soeuer depriued of the iust grace it should haue had, was held too good to be lost: & therefore with much labor were the best coherencies, that could be gathered out of those scattred papers, made, and afterwards printed as now it is, onely by hir Noble care to whose deare hand they were first committed, and for whose delight and intertainyment only vndertaken.

"What conclusion it should haue had, or how far the Work haue bene extended (had it had his last hand thereunto) was onely knowne to his owne spirit, where only those admirable Images were (and no where else) to bee cast.

"And here we are likewise vterly depriued of the relation how this combat ended, and how the Ladies by discouery of the approching forces were deliuered and restored to Basilius: how Dorus returned to his old master Dametæs: all which vnfortunate mayme we must be content to suffer with the rest."

There is another leaf inserted in signature Ss after Ss, marked Ss₅, containing "A Dialogue betwene two Shepherds, vttred in a pastorall shew, at Wilton," which occurred for the first time in this edition. It consists of
forty-eight lines rhyming with one another. There is a copy of this so-called "fourth" edition in the Huth Library, the title of which differs in so far as the name "Simon Waterson" is replaced by "Mathew Lownes." From the description in the Huth Catalogue it appears that there are several more leaves inserted into that copy besides the two I have found in the British Museum copy:

"Title and dedication, 2 leaves; A—Ee in sixes; ¶, 4 leaves; *, 5 leaves; Ee₅-₆, 2 leaves; Ff—Bbb in sixes, except that in Ss there is an extra leaf unpaged, marked Ssᵟ."  
"The extra leaves marked ¶ and * in sig. Ee appear to have been introduced from the Supplement by Sir W. Alexander, first printed in 1621, to assist in completing the text, which is, notwithstanding, still imperfect and inconsequent, having been left so probably in the original MS. In the copy of edit. 1605, described by Hazlitt, twelve additional leaves were inserted with a similar object from the same source."

"This is a very uncommon edition."

"Beling's supplement to the 'Arcadia' was first printed separately at Dublin, 8vo., 1624. It is a very rare volume, and a copy in gilt vellum sold at Heber's sale for £3 19s."

The seventh edition of the "Arcadia" appeared in 1621 at Dublin. It has four leaves preliminary matter, ¶₁, is a blank; ¶₂ contains on its recto the following title in a monumental frame representing two columns on a pedestal united at the top by a sort of triumphal arch:

THE

COVNTESSE

OF PEMBROKES

ARCADIA.
Introduction.

W R I T T E N B Y S I R P H I L I P S I D N E Y K N I G H T.

Now the fift time published, with some new Additions.

Also a supplement of a defect in the third part of this History. By Sir W. Alexander.

D V B L I N,
Printed by the Societie of STATIONERS, 1621.
Cum Privilegio.

§ 3 contains the epistle, "To My Deare Lady And Sister," etc., § 4, the preface, "To the Reader." The "Arcadia" begins on A, recto. The volume is arranged from A—Z, Aa—Zz, Aaa—Bbb in sixes. The "Arcadia" ends on Rr, verso; the remainder of the book contains the Sonnets, etc. Also the dialogue described as having been inserted for the first time in the ed. 1605 is here reprinted (p. 493).

On page 326 the paragraph quoted above, "Thus far the worthy Author had revised that first written Arcadia of his," etc., is followed on the next page by "A supplement of the said defect by Sir W. A."; this runs from page 327 to page 346, and is followed by the following note by Sir W. Alexander:
Introduction.

"If this little Essay haue not that perfection which is required for supplying the want of that place for which it was intended, yet shall it serue for shadow to giue a luster to the rest. I haue onely herein conformed my selfe to that which preceeded my beginning, and was knowne to be that admirable Authors owne, but doe differ in some things from that which followes, specially in the death of Philisides, making choise of a course, whereby I might best manifest, what affection I beare to the memorie of him, whom I tooke to be alluded vnto by that name, and whom I onely by this imperfect parcell (designing more) had a minde to honour."

Except this addition, the text is exactly that of the previous editions.

The eighth edition of the "Arcadia" was published in 1623 at London. This is the first London edition to which the supplement of Sir W. Alexander is added, though not mentioned on the title and partly on pages not marked. In the main points this edition is arranged as previous ones. ¶, is a blank; ¶₂ contains, surrounded by the same emblematic marginal design referred to repeatedly, this title:

THE

COVNTESSE

OF

PEMBROKES

ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR
PHILIP SIDNEY,
Knight.
Introduction.

NOW THE SIXT TIME PUBLISHED.

LONDON,
Imprinted by H. L. for Matthew Lownes. 1623.

On the verso of the title-page is mounted a cut-out portrait of Sir Philip Sidney, representing his bust. The name "Sydney Philosophus" surrounds it, and the verses "vix ea nostra uoco," and

"Carmen Apollo dedit, belli Mars contulit artes
Sed iuueni vitam Mors rapit ante diem B."

are written below it.

There are further on a separate mounted slip these lines:

"de ipsius Arcadia.
Ipse tuam moriens (sed conjuge teste) jubebas
Arcadiam sævis ignibus esse cibum.
Si meruit mortem, quia flammam accendit amoris,
Mergi, non uri debuit iste liber.
In librum quæcunque cadat sententia : nullâ
Debuit ingenium morte perire tuum."

On ¶ begins the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc.; on ¶ the preface, "To the Reader." The "Arcadia" begins on A, recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, and from Aa to Zz, and Aaa to Bbb. The text of this edition corresponds to that of the former ones up to page 326 (Ee), which terminates with the above-quoted paragraph: "Thus far the worthy Author had revised," etc. The next leaf is marked ¶.

1 The nine folios inserted after page 326, containing the supplement by Sir W. Alexander, do not belong to this edition at all;
and bears the number 335, though in the book it is 327. On the margin at the top of the page in small type is printed: "Here this Story, left vnperfect by the Authour, is continued by S' W. A." The verso of this page is not marked; the next leaf \( q_2 \) is marked on the recto 334, though it would be 329, and \( q_3 \) is marked 335 instead of 331; \( q_4 \) and the then following six folios \( *_{1-6} \) are not marked by numbers. Sir W. Alexander's supplement terminates on the recto of \( *_6 \). After this \( *_6 \) follows a leaf bearing no signature, but marked on the recto 347, and on the verso 348, the numbers due to those pages if all the pages described as not marked were counted. Page 347 begins: "From hence the History is againe continued out of the Authors owne writings and conceits, as followeth." Page 349 is marked Ff, and from now forward the volume runs regularly in sixes to its end. The "Arcadia" terminates on page 482, i.e. Rr, verso. "A dialogue betweene two Shepheards," etc., occurs on Ss,.

only the first three leaves are marked. As I was unable to discover this supplement in the same shape in any other edition, it must be a portion of an edition which I was unable to trace, perhaps that of 1622, if there existed one of that date. The copy of this edition is a duplicate of that of 1621, only the title being different. It is, however, not at all impossible that the whole copy is made up:—of a title-page of the edition of 1623, the body of the work of the edition of 1621, and the supplement from a source unknown to me.

1 W. Carew Hazlitt, in his "Second Series of Bibliographical Collection and Notes on Early English Literature, 1474-1700," London, 1882, 8vo., p. 559, describes an edition of the "Arcadia" of 1622 thus: "The Covntesse of Pembrokes Arcadia . . . . Now the sixth time Published. London. Imprinted by H. L. for Simon Waterson. 1622. Folio. Title, Dedication, and to the Reader 3 leaves: A to 3 B in sixes, but only two leaves in Ee, and between Ee, and 9 nine leaves inserted to supply the lacuna in the story." From the fact that the edition Mr. Hazlitt describes is a "sixth," as well as that of 1623 I have seen, I am inclined to think that he
The ninth edition of the "Arcadia" appeared in 1627 at London. There are three leaves preliminary matter in this edition. The first leaf has on its recto the title surrounded by a design of scrollwork occupying the greater part of the page:

THE C O V N T E S S E
OF P E M B R O K E S
Arcadia.

Written by Sir Philip Sidney
K N I G H T.
Now the sixt time published,
with some new Additions.

Also a supplement of a defect in
the third part of this Historie,
By Sir W. Alexander.

L O N D O N
Printed by W. S. for Simon
Waterson.
1627.

There is for the first time added to this edition "a sixth book," though not mentioned in the title. The next mistook a copy of the 1623 edition bearing on the title-page "Simon Waterson" for "Mathew Lownes," as a separate edition, forgetting that Waterson and Lownes were both concerned in several editions of the "Arcadia," as extant copies show.
leaf contains the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc., the third the preface, "To the Reader." The "Arcadia" begins on A₁. The volume is arranged in sixes, A to Z, Aa to Zz, and Aaa to Fff. Sir W. Alexander's Supplement occupies pp. 327-346. Page 483 is another title-page running thus:

A SIXTH BOOKE, TO THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA: VVritten by R. B. of Lincolnes Inne Esquire.

Sat, si bene; simale, nimium.

* 

LONDON,
Printed by H. L. and R. R.
1628.
The place marked by the asterisk in this title is occupied by an emblematic design, representing in its centre a mermaid carrying a looking-glass in one hand, and combing her hair with the other, with the motto: "Omnia Tempus Habent." The verso of this title-page is blank. Page 485 contains the following preface: "To the Reader."

"To strue to lessen the greatnesse of the attempt, were to take away the glory of the Action. To adde to Sir Philip Sidney, I know is rashnesse; a fault pardonable in me if custome might as well excuse the offence, as youth may prescribe in offending in this kinde. That hee should vndergoe that burden, whose mother-tongue differs as much from this language, as Irish from English; augments the danger of the enterprise, and giues your expectation, perhaps an assurance, what the euent must be. Yet let no man iudge wrongfully of my endeavours: I haue added a limme to Apelles Picture, but my minde neuer entertain'd such vaine hopes, to thinke it of perfection sufficient to delude the eyes of the most vulgar, with the likenesse in the workmanship. No, no, I doe not follow Pythagoras his opinion of transmigrations: I am well assur'd diuine Sidney's soule is not infus'd into me, whose Judgement was onely able to finish, what his Inuention was onely worthe to vndertake. For this, courteous Reader, let it suffice I place Sir Philip Sidney's desert (euen in mine own esteeme) as farre beyond my endeavours, as the most fault-finding Censor can imagin this assay of mine, to come short of his Arcadia. Vale."

"R. B."


In 1629 appeared the tenth edition, which is in every
Introduction.

detail a reprint of that of 1627; page for page correspond, and both have exactly 624 pp. The title-page, however, shows again the emblematic marginal design so often mentioned, and states the addition of a sixth book:

THE

COVNTESSE

OF PEMBROKES

ARCADIA.

Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight.

Now the seuenth time published,
with some new Additions.

With the suppletion of a Defect in the third part of this History, by Sir W. A. Knight.

Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke,
By R. B. of Lincolnnes Inne, Esq.

London printed by H.L. and R.Y. and are sold by S. Waterson in S. Pauls Church-yard. 1629.

On the second title-page, i.e., on p. 483, the year printed is "1628." (Compare page 28.)

The next and eleventh edition again only varies in the title-page, which runs thus:

THE

COVNTESSE

OF PEMBROKES
Introduction.

Arcadia.

Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight.

Now the eighth time published, with some new Additions.
With the supplement of a Defect in the third part of this History, by Sir W. A. Knight.

Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke, By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq.


This title is printed within the well-known emblematical design.

There appeared four more editions in the course of the seventeenth century of the "Arcadia," but in none of them the arrangement of the text on 624 pages has been altered; the title-pages, of course, of these editions are different, and to some a few additions have been made.

The twelfth edition was published at London in 1638. Its title-page runs thus:

The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia,
Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight.
Introduction.

Now the ninth time published, with a twofold supplement of a defect in the third Book: the one by Sir W. A. Knight; the other, by Mr. J. Johnstoun Scoto-Brit. dedicated to K. James, and now annexed to this work, for the Readers benefit.

Whereunto is also added a sixth booke,
By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne Esq.

LONDON
Printed for J. Waterfowm and R. Young, 1638.

This title is surrounded by the well-known emblematic design. The supplement by Ja. Johnstoun is printed on ten leaves marked aa₁₆ and bb₁₄. aa₁ is fully occupied by the following dedication:

TO THE MOST POTENT, || HIGH, AND INVINCIBLE PRINCE,

K. JAMES THE SIXT,
KING OF SCOTLAND, &c.

Grace, Health, Prosperity, and Peace, with daily increase of Honour.

Having, Sir at some idle houres, oft and oft evolved the worke of Sir Philip Sidney, intituled his Arcadia, I was carried with such pleasure in perusing the same, that I could never find an end of reading: while at length my braine transported with the Idea's of his conceit, brought forth a little complement, of what was rather desired than wanted in him: desired, I say, because there is nothing missing but himselfe; and yet his person is so well represented in his worke, that if he any wayes could be absented from the assertion of the Ladies liberty, it was needfull, because he left in the midst; that by that want his want should be livelier deciphered. True it is, that whatsoever is wanting in him, can no more be filled up but by
himselfe, than one man can invest anothers mind: yet I have assayed to play the Ape, albeit I cannot represent the author. However it be, I can not thinke how it shall be better censured, than by your Majesties owne tryall; who, beside the great accompt your Majesty hath of the Writer, could better supply your selfe his default, than any other that I know; if at least so much time were permitted to your Maiesty, from other serious and important affaires of your Realme, as to peruse the same. Which, if it may seeme worthy of the light, hath need of your Majesties protection, as who by the beames of your countenance can abundantly cleere, what cloudes the obscurity of my present fortune may bring to the flourishing fame of Sir Philip Sidneys memory. Which accessory, concurring with my travell and diligence herein, I am sure otherwise to have a warrant in his owne writings for my invention. The language, so far as I could, I have borrowed from himselfe; and if I be more compendious herein, than need were, I am bound within the limits of his owne conceits, which I durst not exceed: further your Majesty in censuring hereof may better conjecture, than I can informe thereabout. For which cause, committing the same to your Highnesse leisurable inspection, I pray the eternall to blesse your grace, with long life, prosperity, and honour, to the advancement and furtherance of vertue, and comfort of your peaceable and obedient subjects.

Your Highnesse humble Servitor

The thirteenth edition was published at London in 1655. The title on A₂ recto is this:

THE COUNTESS OF
Introduction.

PEMBROKE'S

ARCADIA

WRITTEN BY

Sr PHILIP SIDNEY

K N I G H T.

The tenth Edition.

With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal heads, and some other new Additions.

*

L O N D O N

Printed by William Du-Gard: and are to be sold by

George Calvert, at the half Moon in the new buildings in Paul's Church-yard; and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in Paul's Church-yard, M.DC.LV.

In the British Museum copy, facing this title-page is mounted a portrait representing Sir Philip Sidney in his armour. His crest is below the portrait, but no information is given as to where the portrait is taken from or who has designed it.

On A₃ is printed the epistle, "To My Dear Lady and Sister;" on A₄ the preface, "To the Reader." After this follow thirteen leaves considered as preliminary matter, containing "The Life and Death of Sir Philip

* The place occupied by the asterisk is taken up by a square ornamental design.
Sidney," and a great many epigrams and epitaphs. The "Arcadia" begins on sig. B, and the recto of B, is numbered page 1, so that the arrangement of the text on 624 pages of the former editions is also here preserved. After page 624 is first added the Supplement to the third book by J. Johnstoun, and after that—1°. "A Remedie for Loue" WRITTEN BY S' PHILIP SIDNEY, "Heretofore omitted in the Printed ARCADIA," consisting of 48 couplets; 2°. "An Alphabetical Table, or Clavis, whereby the Reader is let in to view the principal Stories contein'd in the Arcadia, as they stand in their proper places," covering four pages.

The fourteenth edition of the "Arcadia" was published at London in 1662. It is except the title-page exactly the same as that of 1655, and even the title-page differs but slightly, viz.:

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA

WRITTEN BY Sir Philip Sidney

K N I G H T.
Introduction.

The eleventh Edition
With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal Heads, and som other new Additions.

* 

London
Printed by Henry Lloyd, for William Du-Gard: and are to bee fold by George Calvert, at the half Moon in the new buildings, and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in St. Paul's Church-yard, MDCLXII.

The fifteenth and last edition of the "Arcadia" in the seventeenth century was published at London in 1674. As concerns the text and all additional matter, it exactly agrees with the two preceding editions. The title-page differs a little; it runs thus:

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA
WRITTEN BY Sir Philip Sidney
K N I G H T.
In 1725 appeared an edition of Sir Philip Sidney's works in three volumes 8vo., described as the "fourteenth edition." Besides, there is a general title-page at the beginning of the first volume with the date 1725, running thus:

THE WORKS
OF
The Honourable
Sr Philip Sidney, Kt.
In Prose and Verse.

In Three Volumes.

CONTAINING,
I. The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.
II. The Defense of Poesy.
Introduction.

III. _Astrophel_ and _Stella._
IV. The _Remedy of Love; Sonnets, &c._
V. The _Lady of May. A Masque._
VI. The _Life of the Author._

_Death, the Devourer of all World's Delight,_
_Hath rob'd you, and rest from me my Joy;_
_Both you and me, and all the World be quight_
_Hath robb'd of Joyance, and left sad Annoy._
_Joy of the World, and Shepherds Pride was he,_
_Shepherds hope never like again to see,_
_S P E N S E R'S_ _Astrophel._

The Fourteenth Edition.

_LONDON:_
Printed for E. _Taylor, A. Bettesworth, E. Curll, W. Mears, and R. Gosling._
M.DCC.xxv. Price 15s.

The first volume has eight leaves preliminary matter: the first is a blank; the second contains on its verso the portrait of Sir Philip Sidney; the third the above quoted general title-page to the three volumes; the fourth and fifth are occupied by a dedication "To the Right Honourable the Earl of Leicester;" the sixth leaf contains on its recto the following title-page to the first volume:

**THE WORKS OF**
Introduction.

The Honourable
Sir Philip Sidney, Kt.

Vol. I.

CONTAINING
The First, and Second Books of the Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

* LONDON:
Printed in the Year MDCXXV.

and finally, the seventh and eighth leaves bear the epistle "To My deare Lady," etc. Then follows, with a separate pagination, "The Life of Sir Philip Sidney," occupying thirty-two pages (signatures A and B in eights). On a page marked i (sig. B,) begins the "Arcadia." The first volume contains on 420 pages the first two books.

The second volume has two pages preliminary matter, one blank and a title, which only in the centre differs from that of the first volume, viz.:

Vol. II.

CONTAINING
The Third, Fourth, and Fifth Books of the Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

* The place occupied by the asterisk is taken up by a cupid on a pedestal, from which bay branches project.
Introduction.

The third book of the "Arcadia" begins, very likely through a mistake of the printers, not as one would expect, on page 421, but on p. 401 (sig. B₁). The fifth book ends on page 881, which, if it were marked, would be sig. Ii₁.

The third volume has four pages preliminary matter, one blank, one title to the third volume, differing only in the centre from those of the first and second volumes, viz.:

Vol. III.

CONTAINING,
I. A SIXTH BOOK to the Countess of Pembroke’s ARCADIA.
  Written by R. B. of Lincoln’s-Inn, Esq;
II. Sir Philip Sidney’s Poetical Works.

Then follow two pages containing an “Explanation of some Characters &c. in the Countess of Pembroke’s Arcadia,” and the fourth leaf is occupied by the following title to the sixth book:

A SIXTH BOOK TO THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE’S ARCADIA.

WRITTEN
By R. B. of Lincoln’s-Inn, Esq;
Introduction.

*S*

**LONDON:**
Printed in the Year M.DCC.XXIV.

The sixth book covers 64 pp. After it follow, with a new title-page and a separate pagination, "The Poetical Works of Sir Philip Sidney," running through 184 pp. The volume ends with two leaves "Postscript" and two leaves "Table."

The fact that the first volume is dated 1725, whereas the second and third bear the date 1724, seems to point out that the preliminary matter of the first was only completed in 1725.

The only modern edition of the "Arcadia" was published in 1867 at London, 8vo., under this title:

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE'S ARCADIA

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, Knt.

*WITH NOTES AND INTRODUCTORY ESSAY BY HAIN FRISWELL AUTHOR OF "THE GENTLE LIFE," ETC., ETC.*

**LONDON**
SAMPSON LOW, SON, & MARSTON,
MILTON HOUSE, LUDGATE HILL.

1867.

D 2
To give an idea in what relation this edition stands to the quarto and first folio I quote the following paragraph from the editor's introduction:

"The principle on which this edition of the 'Arcadia' has been put through the press perhaps needs some explanation. As the sheets of MS. left the hands of Sidney, after the first book, or perhaps two, had been completed, they were transmitted to his sister the Countess of Pembroke, and some of them mislaid and lost. Hence one very great hiatus supplied by Sir William Alexander, others by R(ichard) B(eling) and Mr. Johnstone. It is also known that the Countess of Pembroke added to the episodes, adventures, and strange turns, at least in all the later books. Hence there is to be met with an Arcadian undergrowth which needs much careful pruning; and this undertaken, with needful compression, will leave the reader all that he desires of Sidney's own. Growing like certain fanciful parasites upon forest trees, on the books of the 'Arcadia' are certain eclogues of laboriously-written and fantastical poetry, some in Latin measures, against which Walpole was right to protest, and anent which Pope said—

'And Sidney's verse halts ill on Roman feet.'

These have been boldly removed, without any loss, it is believed, to the romance; lastly, long episodes of no possible use to the book, which we think have been supplied by other hands than Sidney's, have, whilst using their very words and phrases, been cut down. Tedious excrescences have thus been removed, but it is to be hoped with judgment, so that the reader gets all we think is Sidney's, and without curb put upon his utterance," etc.

The various supplements to the "Arcadia" have also been published separately, viz.:

"A Supplement of a Defect in the third Part of Sidney's Arcadia by William Alexander, Earl of Stirling." Dublin, 1621. Folio. (Reprinted in the ed. of 1722 and ff.)

"A sixth book of the Arcadia by R(ichard) B(eling)." Dublin, 1624. 4to. (Reprinted in the ed. of 1629 and ff.)

"A Continuation of Sir P. Sidney's Arcadia written by a young Gentlewoman" (Mrs. A. W. Weames). London, 1651. 12mo.


Based upon the "Arcadia," the following books appeared:


"Argalus and Parthenia. Originally compiled in Prose by Sir Philip Sidney and afterwards done into Verse by Francis Quarles Esq. in three books. Adorn'd with thirty copper-plates, to illustrate the Story: And the Life of the author now prefix'd." London, 1726. 8vo.

"The History of Argalus and Parthenia. Being A Choice Flower Gathered out of Sir Philip Sidney's Rare Garden." (?) 1770 and 1788. 8vo.

In 1625 appeared a French translation of the "Arcadia" entitled: "L'arcadie de la Comtesse de Pembrok. Composee par Messire Philippes Sidney, Cheualier An-

The “Arcadia” was also translated into German by Valentinus Theocritus, and afterwards this translation was revised by Martin Opitz.

The first German translation was published in 1629, at Frankfort-on-the-Main, with the following curious title:


Introduction.


This translation, revised by Martin Opitz, appeared again in 1643, entitled thus:


This edition was reprinted in 1646 at Leyden, with almost the same title, in two parts 12mo., by Frantz Hegern.
THE COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA,
WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE
SIDNEI.

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini, 1590.
TO MY DEARE LADIE
AND SISTER, THE COUN-
TESSE OF PEMBROKE.

Ere now haue you
(most deare, and
most worthy to be
most deare Lady)
this idle worke of
mine: which I fear
(like the Spiders
webbe) will be
thought fitter to be swept away, then worn
to any other purpose. For my part, in ve-
ry trueth (as the cruell fathers among the
Greekes, were woont to doo to the babes
they would not foster) I could well find in
my harte, to cast out in some desert of for-
getfulness this child, which I am loath to.

A3  fa-
father. But you desired me to doo it, and your desire, to my hart is an absolute commandement. Now, it is done onelie for you, onely to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such friendes, who will weigh errors in the ballaunce of good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it will be pardoned, perchance made much of, though in it selfe it haue deformities. For indeede, for seuerer eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that trislinglie handle'd. Your deare selfe can best witnes the maner, being done in loose sheetes of paper, most of it in your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent unto you, as fast as they were done. In summe, a young bead, not so well stayed as I would it were, (and shall be when God will) having many many fancies begotten in it, if it had not ben in some way delivered, would haue grown a monster, & more sorie might I be that they came in, then
then that they gat out. But his chiefest safety, shall be the not walking abroad, & his chiefest protection, the bearing the liuerie of your name; which (if much much good will do not deceau me) is worthy to be a sanctuary for a greater offender. This say I, because I knowe the vertue so; and this say I, because it may be ever so; or to say better, because it will be ever so. Read it then at your idle tymes, and the follyes your good judgement wil finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And so, looking for no better stufte, then, as in an Haberdashers shoppe, glases, or feathers, you will continue to love the writer, who doth exceedinglie love you, and most most hartelie praires you may long line, to be a principall ornamet to the familie of the Sidneis.

Your louing Brother

Philip Sidnei.
He division and summing of the Chapters was not of Sir Philip Sidneis dooing, but adventured by the ouer-seer of the print, for the more ease of the Readers. He therefore submits himselfe to their judgement, and if his labour answere not the worthines of the booke, desireth pardon for it. As also if any defect be found in the Eclogues, which although they were of Sir Phillip Sidneis writing, yet were they not perused by him, but left till the worke had bene finished, that then choice should have bene made, which should have bene taken, and in what manner brought in. As this time they have bene chosen and disposed as the ouer-seer thought best.
THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEI.

THE FIRST BOOKE.

CHAP. 1.

* The shepherdish complaints of the absented lovers Strephon and Claius. * The second shipwreck of Pyrocles and Musidorus. Their strange seeing, enterview, and parting.

*T was in the time that the earth begins to put on her new apparell against the approach of her lower, and that the Sun running a most euer cours becomes an indifferent arbitre betweene the night and the day, when the hopelesse shepheard Strephon was come to the sandes, which lie against the Island of Cithera, where viewing the place with a heauy kinde
of delight, and sometimes casting his eyes to the Ileward, he called his friendly rival, the pastor Claisius vnto him, and setting first downe in his darkned countenance a dolefull copye of what he would speake: O my Claisius, said he, either we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are so called vnto by ouer-busie Remembrance, Remembrance, restless Remembrance, which claymes not onely this dutie of vs, but for it will haue vs forget our selues. I pray you when wee were amid our flocke, and that of other shepheardes some were running after their sheepe strayed beyond their bounds, some delighting their eyes with seeing them nibble vp the short and sweete grass, some medicating their sicke ewes, some setting a bell for an ensigne of a sheepish squadron, some with more leasure inventing new games of exercising their bodies & sporting their wits: did Remembrance grant vs any holiday, eyther for pastime or deuotion, nay either for neccesarie foode or naturall rest: but that is forced our thoughts to worke vp this place, where we last (alas that the word last should so long last) did gaze our eyes vpon her euer vvorishe beautie: did it not still erie within vs. Ah you base minded wretches, are your thoughts so deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for respect of gaine some poultry wooll may yeeld you, to let so much time passe without knowing perfectly her estate, especially in so troublesome a seacon: to leaue that shore vnflated, from whence you may see to the Island where she dwelleth: to leaue those steeps vnkifled wherein Vrania printed the farewel of all beautie? Wel then, Remembrance commaund, we obeyed, and here we finde, that as our remembrance came euer cloathed
cloathed vn to vs in the forme of this place, so this place gives newe heate to the seauer of our languishing remembrance. Yonder my Claius, Vrania lighted, the verie horse (me thought) bewayled to be so disburdened: and as for thee, poore Claius, when thou wentst to help her downe, I saw reverence and desire so deuide thee, that thou didst at one instant both blushe and quake, and in stead of bearing her, weart ready to fall downe thy selfe. There shee sate, vouchsafing my cloake (then most gorgeous) vnder her: at yonder rising of the ground she turned her selfe, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and because of her parting bearing much sorrow in hir eyes, the lightomes whereof had yet so naturall a cherefulnesse, as it made euene sorrow seeme to smile; at that turning she spake vn to vs all, opening the cherrie of hir lips, & Lord how greedily mine cares did feed vpon the sweete words she uttered! And here she laide her hand ouer thine eyes, when shee saw the teares springing in them, as if she would conceale them from other, and yet her selfe feele some of thy sorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did she put her foote into the boate, at that instant as it were deuiding her heauenly beautie, betwenee the Earth and the Sea. But when she was imbarke, did you not marke how the windes whistled, & the seas daunts for ioy, how the failes did sivel with pride, and all because they had Vrania? O Vrania, blessed be thou Vrania, the sweetest fairenesse and fairest sweetnesse: with that worde his voice brake so with sobbing, that he could say no further; and Claius thus answered. Alas my Strophon (saide he) what needes this skore to reckon vp onely our losses? What doubt is there, but that the light of this place doth call

B 2
our thoughts to appear at the court of affection, held by that racking steward; Remembrance: As well may shepe forget to feare when they spie woolues, as wee can misse such fancies, when wee see any place made happie by her treading. Who can choose that saw her but thinke where she stayed, where she walkt, where she turned, where she spoke? But what is all this: truely no more, but as this place serued vs to thinke of those thinges, so those thinges serue as places to call to memorie more excellent matters. No, no, let vs thinke with consideration, and consider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with admiration, and admire with loue, and loue with joy in the midst of all woes: let vs in such sorte thinke, I say, that our poore eyes were so inriched as to behold, and our low hearts so exalted as to loue, a maide, who is such, that as the greattest thing the world can shewe, is her beautie, so the leaft thing that may be prayed in her, is her beautie. Certainly as her eye-lids are more pleasant to behold, then two white kiddes climing vp a faire tree, and browsing on his tenderst branches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-shining starres contayned in them; and as her breath is more sweete then a gentle South-west wind, which comes creeping ouer flowrie fieldes and shaddowed waters in the extreme heate of sumre, and yet is nothing, compared to the hony flowing speach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can see of her (though when they have seene her, what else they shall euer see is but drie stuble after clouers grasse) is to bee matched with the flocke of vn-speakable vertues laid vp delightfully in that best builded folde. But in deede as wee can better consider the sunnes
funnes beautie, by marking how he guildes these waters, and mountaines them by looking up on his owne face, too glorious for our weake eyes: so it may be our conceits (not able to beare her immayning excellency) will better way it by her workes upon some meaner subiect employed. And alas, who can better witnesse that then we, whose experience is grounded upon feeling, hath not the onely loue of her made vs (being silly ignorant shepheards) raise vp our thoughts aboue the ordinary旌uell of the worlde, so as great clerkes do not disdain our conference: hath not the desire to seeme worthie in her eyes made vs when others were sleeping, to sit vewing the course of heavens: when others were running at base, to runne ouer learned writings: when other marke their sheepe, we to marke our selues: hath not shee throwne reason upon our desires, and, as it were given eyes vnto Cupid? hath in any, but in her, loue-fellowship maintained friendship betweene riuels, and beautie taught the beholders chaflitie? He was going on with his praises, but Strephon bad him stay, & looke: & so they both perceaued a thing which floeted drawing nearer and nearer to the banke, but rather by the savourable working of the Sea, then by any selte industry. They doubted a while what it should be; till it was cast vp even hard before the: at which time they fully saw that it was a man: Whereupon running for pitie sake vnto him, they found his hands (as it should appeare, constant friends to his life then his memorie) fast griping vpon the edge of a square small coffer, which lay all vnder his breast: els in him selfe no shew of life, so as the boord seemed to bee but a beere to carry him aland to his Sepulchre. So B 3 drew
The Countesse of Pembroke

drew they vp a young man of so goodly shape and well pleasing favour, that one would think death had in him a lorely countenance: and that though he were naked, nakedues was to him an apparrell. That sight increased their compassion, and their compassion called vp their care; so that lifting his feete above his head, making a great deale of salt water to come out of his mouth, they layd him vp upon some of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recover both breath the servuant, & warmth the companion of living. At length, opening his eyes, he gaue a great groane, (a dolefull note but a pleasaunt dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but strength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, untill (his spirits being well returned,) hee (without so much as thanking them for their paines) got vp, and looking round about to the uttermost lymites of his sight, and crying vp upon the name of Pyrocles, nor seeing nor hearing cause of comfort: what (said he) and shall Musidorus live after Pyrocles? therewithall hee offered wilfully to cast destruction & himselfe againe into the sea: a strange sight to the shepheards, to whom it seemed, that before being in apparence dead had yet sate his life, and now comming to his life, should be a cause to procure his death; but they ranne vnto him, and pulling him backe, (then too feeble for them) by force stckled that unnatural fray. I pray you (said he) honest men, what such right haue you in me, as not to suffer me to doe with my self what I lift? and what pollcie haue you to bestow a benefit where it is counted an injury? They hearing him speake in Greek (which was their natural language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and con-

idering
dering by his calling and looking, that the losse of some deare friend was great cause of his sorrow, told him they were poore men that were bound by course of humanitie to prevent so great a mischiefe, and that they wilst him, if opinion of some bodies perishing bred such desperate anguish in him, that he should be comforted by his owne proofe, who had lately escaped as apparant danger as any might be. No, no (said hee) it is not for me to attend so high a blissfulness: but since you take care of mee, I pray you finde meanes that some Barke may be provided, that will goe out of the hauen, that if it be possible we may finde the body farre farre too precious a foode for fishes: and for the hire (said he) I haue within this casket, of value sufficient to content them. Cains presently went to a Fisherman, & having agreed with him, and provided some apparrell for the naked stranger, he embarked, and the Shepheards with him: and were no sooner gone beyond the mouth of the hauen, but that some way into the sea they might discerne (as it were) a stayne of the waters colour, and by times some sparkes and smoke mounting thereout. But the young man no sooner saw it, but that beating his breste, he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, instructing them to bend their course as neere vnto it as they could: telling, how that smooke was but a small relique of a great fire, which had driue both him & his friend rather to committe themselves to the cold mercie of the sea, then to abide the hote crueltie of the fire: and that therefore, though they both had abandoned the ship, that he was (if any where) in that course to be met withall. They steered therefore as neere thetherward as they could: but when they came so neere as
their eyes were full masters of the object, they saw a sight full of piteous strangenes: a ship, or rather the carcass of the shippe, or rather some few bones of the carcass, hul- ling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned: death having vised more then one dart to that destruction. About it floated great store of very rich things, and many chestes which might promise no lesse. And amidst the precious things were a number of dead bodies, which likewise did not onely testifie both elements violence, but that the chiefe violence was grown of humane inhumanitie: for their bodies were ful of grisyly wounds, & their blood had (as it were) filled the wrinckles of the seas vifage: which it seemed the sea woulde not wafh away, that it might witnes it is nor alwaies his fault, when we condemne his crueltie: in summe, a de- feat, where the conquered kept both field and spoile: a shipwrack without storme or ill footinge: and a waft of fire in the midst of water.

But a little way off they saw the maft, whose proude height now lay along; like a widdow having lost her make of whom she held her honor; but upon the maft they saw a yong man (at leaft if he were a man) bearing shew of about 18. yeares of age, who sat (as on horstback) hauing nothing vpon him but his shirte, which being wrought with blew silk & gold, had a kind of resem- blance to the sea: on which the sun (then near his We- sterne home) did shooe some of his beames. His haire (which the young men of Greece vised to wear very long) was stirred vp & down with the wind, which see- med to have a sport to play with it, as the sea had to kiss his feet; itselfe full of admirable beautie, set foorth by the strangenes both of his seate & gesture; for, holding his
his head vp full of vnmove\d maiestie, he held a sworde aloft with his faire arm, which often he waue\d about his crowne as though he would threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fishermen, when they came so neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their simplicity bred such amaze\ment, & their amaze\ment such a superstition, that (assuredly thinking it was some God begotten betweene Neptune and Venus, that had made all this terrible slaughter) as they went vnder sayle by him, held vp their hands, and made their prayers. Which when Mufidorus sawe, though they were almost as much rauished with joy, as they with astonishment, he leapt to the Mariner, and tooke the rope out of his hande and (saying, doest thou liue, and art well? who answered, thou canst tell best, since most of my well beyng standes in thee,) threwe it out, but alreadie the shippe was past beyond Pyrocles: and therefore Mufidorus could doo no more but perswade the Mariners to cast about a-gaine, assuring them that hee was but a man, although of most divine excellencies, and promising great rewardes for their paine.

And now they were alreadie come vpon the staies; when one of the saylers descried a Galley which came with sayles and oares directly in the chase of them; and freight perceaued it was a well knowne Pirate, who hunted not onely for goodes but for bodies of menne, which hee imployed eyther to bee his Galley flaues, or to fell at the best market. Which when the Maister understood, he commanded forthwith to set on all the canuas\f they could, and sile homeward, lea\ing in that fort poore Pyrocles so neere to be reskewed.

B 5  But
But what did not Mysidorus say: what did he not offer to persuade them to venture the fight? But fear standing at the gates of their ears, put back all persuasions: so that he had nothing to accompany Pyrocles, but his eyes; nor to succour him, but his wishes. Therefore praying for him, and casting a long look that way he saw the Galley leave the pursuit of them, & turn to take up the spoiles of the other wrack: and lastly, he might well see them lift up the young man; and alas (said he to himselfe) deere Pyrocles, shall that bodie of thine be enchayned? shall those victorious handes of thine be commaund to base offices? shall vertue become a slave to those that be slaves to viciousnes? Alas, better had it bene thou hadst ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is so euill as unworthy fruitude? But that opinion soone ceased when he saw the gallie setting upon an other ship, which held long and strong fight with her: for then he began a fresh to feare the life of his friends, and to wish well to the Pirates whome before he hated, least in their ruyne hee might perish. But the fishermen made such speed into the hauen, that they absent his eyes from beholding the issue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themselves into the sea: so that byeing as full of sorrow for being vnable to doe any thing, as void of counsell how to doe any thing, besides, that sicknesse grew something upon him, the honest shepheards Strephon and Clauis (who being themselves true friends, did the more perfectly judge the iustnesse of his sorrowe) aduise him, that he should mitigate somewhat of his woe, since he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from assu-
red persuation of his death, to have no cause to dispaire of his life. as one that had lamented the death of his sheepe, should after know they were but strayed, would receive pleasure though readily hee knew not where to finde them.

CHAP. 2.

1 The pastors comfortes to the wrackt Musidorus. 2 His passage into Arcadia. The descriptions of 3 Laconia, 4 Arcadia, Kalanders 5 person, 6 house, and 7 entertainment to Musidorus, now called Palladius. His 8 sicknes, recovery, 9 and perfections.

Ow sir (said they) thus for our selues it is. Wee are in profession but shepheard, and in this countrie of Laconia little better then strangers, and therefore neither in skill, nor habilite of power greatly to stead you. But what we can present vnto you is this: Arcadia, of which courantie wee are, is but a little way hence, and euen vpon the next confines.

There dwelleth a Gentleman, by name Kalander, who vouchsafeth much fauour vnto vs: A man who for his hospitallitie is so much haunted, that no newes sturre, but comes to his eares; for his vpright dealing so beloved of his neighbours, that he hath many euer readie to doe him their uttermost service, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may soone obtaine the vse of his name and credit, which hath a principall
The Countesse of Pembroke

swaie, not only in his owne Arcadia but in al these countries of Peloponnese: and (which is worth all) all these things give him not so much power, as his nature gives him will to benefit: so that it seemes no Musicke is so sweet to his eare as deserued thankes. To him we will bring you, & there you may recover againe your helth, without which you cannot be able to make any diligent search for your friend: and therefore but in that respect you must labour for it. Besides, we are sure the courte of curtesie, & ease of wife counsell shall not be wanting.

Musidorus (who besides he was meerly unacquainted in the countrie had his wits astonisshed with sorrow) gave easie consent to that, fro which he saw no reason to disagree: & therefore (defraying the Mariners with a ring bestowed vpon the) they tooke their journey together through Laconia; Clais & Strephon by course carrying his chest for him. Musidorus only bearing in his countenance evidet marks of a sorrowfulmind supported with a weak bodie, which they perceiuing, & knowing that the violence of sorrow is not at the first to be striue withal: (being like a mighty beast, sooner tamed with folowing, the overthow by withstanding) they gaue way vnto it for that day & the next; never troubling him, either with asking questions, or finding fault with his melancholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorous discourses of their own & other folks misfortunes. Which speeches, thogh they had not a liuely entrance to his seyes shut vp in sorrow, yet like one half asleep, he toke hold of much of the matters spoken vnto him, so as a man may say, ere sorrow was aware, they made his thoughts beare away something els beside his own sorrow, which wrought in him, that at length he grew content to mark their speeches, then to maruel at such wit in shepheardes, after to like
like their company, & lastly to vouchsafe conferences: so that the 3d day after, in the time that the morning did strow roses & violets in the heavenly floor against the coming of the Sun, the nightingales (striving one with the other which could in most dainty variety recount their wrong-caused sorrow) made the put of their sleep, & rising from under a tree (which that night had bin their pailio) they went on their journey, which by & by welcomed Musidornus eyes (wearing with the wasted foil of Laconia) with delightfull prospects. There were hilles which garnished their proud heights with stately trees: huble valleis, whose base estate semed comforted with refreshing of siluer ritters: medows, enameld with all sorts of ey-pleasing floures: thickets, which being lined with most pleasat shade, were witnessed so to by the chereful depositio of many well-tuned birds: each pasture stord with sheep feeding with sober security, while the perty labs with bleting oratory craued the dams comfort: here a shepheards boy piping, as though he should never be old: there a yong shepheardesse knitting, and withall singing, & it seemed that her voice comforted her hands to work, & her hands kept time to her voices musick. As for the houses of the coutry (for many houses came vnder their eye) they were all scattered, no two being one by th'other, & yet not so far off as that it barred mutual succour: a shew, as it were, of an accountantable solitaries, & of a ciuil wildnes. I pray you (said Musidornus, then first unsealing his long silent lips) what coutries be these we passe through, which are so divers in shew, the one wasting no store, th'other having no store but of want.

The country (answered Chaim) where you were cast a shore, & now are past through, is Laconia, not so poore by the barrennes of the foyle (though in it selfe not
The Countesse of Pembrokes

passing fertill) as by a ciuill warre, which being these two yeares within the bowels of that estate, betweene the gentlemen & the peasants (by them named Helots) hath in this forte as it were disfigured the face of nature, and made it so vn hospitall as now you haue found it: the townes neither of the one side nor the other, willingly opening their gates to strangers, nor strangers willingly entering for feare of being mistaken.

But this countrie (where now you set your foote) is Arcadia: and euen harde by is the house of Kalandar whether we lead you: this countrie being thus decked with peace, and (the childe of peace) good husbandrie. These houses you see so scattered are of men, as we two are, that liue upon the commoditie of their theape: and therefore in the diuision of the Arcadian estate are termed shepheardes, a happie people, wanting little, because they desire not much. What cause then, said Musidorus, made you venter to leaue this sweete life, and put your selfe in yonder vnpleasant and dangerous realme: Garded with pouertie (answered Strephon) & guided with loue: But now (said Claius) since it hath pleased you to aske any thing of vs whose basenes is such as the very knowledge is darkness: geue vs leaue to know somthing of you, & of the young man you so much lament, that at least we may be the better instructed to conforme Kalandar, and he the better know how to proportion his entertainment. Musidorus (according to the agreement betweene Pyrocles and him to alter their names) answered, that he called himself Palladin, and his friend Daiphantus, but till I haue him againe (said he) I am in deede nothing: and therefore my florie is of nothing, his entertainment (since so good a man he is) cannot be so lowe
lowe as I account my estate: and in summe, the summe of all his curtse it may be to helpe me by some means to seeke my friend.

They perceived he was not willing to open himselfe further, and therefore without further questioning brought him to the house: about which they might see (with fitte consideration both of the ayre, the prospect, and the nature of the ground) all such necessarie additions to a great house, as might well shewe, Kalander knew that provision is the foundation of hospitallitie, and thrift the fewell of magnificence. The house it selfe was built of faire and strong stone, not affecting so much any extraordinarie kinde of finenes, as an honorable representint of a firme flatelines. The lightes, doores and staires, rather directed to the vse of the guest, then to the eye of the Artificer: and yet as the one cheefly heeded, so the other not neglected; each place handsome without curiositie, and homely without lothsomnes: not so daintie as not to be trode on, nor yet flubberd vp with good fellowshippe: all more lasting then beautifull, but that the consideration of the exceeding lastingnesse made the eye beleue it was exceeding beautifull. The servants not so many in number, as cleanlie in apparell, and serviceable in behauiour, testifying euen in their countenaunces, that their maister tooke aswell care to be serued, as of the that did serue. One of them was forth-with ready to welcome the shepheards, as men, who though they were poore, their maister greatly fauoured: and understanding by them, that the young man with them was to be much accounted of, for that they had seene tokens of more then common greatnes, how so cuernow eclipsed with fortune.
The Countesse of Pembroke

fortune: He ranne to his master, who came presentlie forth, and pleasantly welcomming the shepheardes, but especially applying him to Musidorus, Strephon privately told him all what he knew of him, and particularly that hee found this stranger was loath to be known.

No said Kalander (speaking alowd) I am no herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it sufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mans face be not a falle witnes) doe better apparrell his minde, then you haue done his body. While hee was speaking, there came a boy in shew like a Merchants prentice, who taking Strephon by the fleue, deliuered him a letter written ioynitly both to him and Claius from Vrania: which they no sooner had read, but that with short leaue-taking of Kalander (who quickly gheft and smiled at the matter) and once againe (though hastily) recommending the yong man vnto him, they went away, leauing Musidorus euyn lothe to part with them, for the good conuersation he had of them, & obligation he accounted himselfe tied in vnto them: and therefore, they deliuering his cheft vnto him, he opened it, and would haue presented the with two very rich ieuels, but they absolutelie refused them, telling him they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, and without herkening vnto a replie (like men whose harts disdained all desires but one) gate speedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that light Kalander soone judged that his guest was of no meane calling, and therefore the more respectfullie entertaining him, Musidorus found his sicknes (which the light, the sea, and late trauell had layd vpon him) growe
grow greatly: so that fearing some suddaine accident, he delivered the chest to Kalander, which was full of most precious stones, gorgeously & cunningly set in divers manners, desiring him he would keep those trifles; and if he died, he would beftow so much of it as was needfull, to finde out and redeeme a young man, naming himselfe Daiphantus, as then in the handes of Laconia pirates.

But Kalander seeing him faint more and more, with carefull speede conveyed him to the most commodious lodging in his house: where being possessed with an extreme burning feuer, he continued some while with no great hope of life: but youth at length got the victorie of sickness, so that in six weeke the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible embassadour of his health, to the great joy of Kalander: who, as in this time he had by certaine friendes of his that dwelt neare the Sea in Messenia, set forth a shippe and a galley to seeke and succour Daiphantus: so at home did hee omit nothing which he thought might eyther profite or gratifie Palladius.

For hauing found in him (besides his bodily giftes beyond the degree of Admiration)by dayly discourses which he delighted him selfe to haue with him, a mind of most excellent composition (a pearcing witte quite voide of ostentation, high erected thoughts seated in a harte of courtesie, an eloquence as sweete in the uttering as flowe to come to the uttering, a behaviour so noble, as gaue a maestie to aduersitie: and all in a man whose age could not be aboue one & twenty yeares,) the good old man was euene enamoured with a fatherly loue towards him; or rather became his seruant by
The Countesse of Pembrokes
the bondes such virtue laid vpon him; once hee acknowledged him selfe so to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

CHAP. 3.

The pictures of Kalanders dainty garden-house. His narration of the Arcadian estate, the King, the Queene, their two daughters, and their gardians, with their qualities, which is the ground of all this storie.

Vt Palladius hauing gotten his health, and onely staying there to be in place, where he might heare answere of the shippes set foorth, Kalander one afternoone led him abroad to a well arayed ground he had behind his house, which hee thought to shewe him before his going, as the place him selfe more then in any other deligh'ted: the backeside of the house was nether field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both fielde, garden, and orcharde: for as soone as the descending of the stayres had deliuered them downe, they came into a place cunningly set with trees of the moiste tastpleasing frui'tes: but scarcelie they had taken that into their consideration, but that they were suddainely spte into a delicate greene, of each side of the greene a thickest bend, behinde the thickesters againe newe beddes of flowers, which being vnder the trees, the trees were to them a Pavillion, and they to the trees a mosaical floore: so that it seemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull
lightfull by counterfafting his enimie error, and making order in confusion.

In the middest of all the place, was a faire pond, whose shaking chriftall was a perfect mirroure to all the other beauties, so that it bare three of two gardens; one in decid, the other in shadowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountain made thus. A naked Venus of white marble, wherein the grauer had vsed such cunning, that the naturall blew veines of the marble were framed in fitte places, to set forth the beauti-

full veines, of her bodie. At her brest she had her babe Æneas, who seemed hauing begun to sucke) to leaue that, to looke vpon her fayre eyes, which smiled at the babes follic, the meane while the breast running. Hard by was a house of pleafure builte for a Sommer retiring place, whether Kalander leading him, he found a square roomie full of delightfull pictures, made by the most excellent workeman of Greece. There was Diana when Acteon sawe her bathing, in whose cheekes the painter had set such a colour, as was mixt betweene flame & disdain; & one of her foolish Nymphes, who weeping, and withal lowring, one might fee the work-

man meant to set forth teares of anger. In another table was Atalanta; the posture of whose lims was so liuelie expressed, that if the eyes were the only judges, as they be the onely feers, one would haue sworne the very pi-

cure had runne. Besides many mo, as of Helena, Omphale, Iole: but in none of them all beautie seemed to speake so much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excel-

let beautie; & more excellet would have bene deemed, but that there stood betweene the a yong maid, whose
wonderfulness took away all beauty from her, but that, which it might seem she gave her back againe by her very shadow. And such difference, being knowne, that it did in deed counterfeit a person living, was there betweene her and all the other, though Goddesses, that it seemed the skill of the painter bestowed on the other new beauty, but that the beauty of her bestowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquisitiveness an vncomely guest, he could not choose but ask who she was, that bearing shew of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of invention. Kalandar answered, that it was made by Philoclea, the younger daughter of his prince, who also with his wife were contained in that Table: the painter meaning to represent the present condition of the young Ladie, who stood watched by an over-curious eye of her parents; & that he would also have drawne her eldest sister, esteemed her match for beauty, in her shepheardish attire, but that the rude clown her gardian would not suffer it: nether durst he ask leave of the Prince for fear of supplication. Palladin perceiving that the matter was wrapt up in some secrecie, and therefore would for modestie demand no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumme Eloquence desire it: Which Kalandar perceiving, well said he, my deere guest, I know your minde, and I will satisfie it: neyther will I doe it like a niggardly answerer, going no further then the boundes of the question, but I will discover unto you, as well that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extraordinarie means is delivered unto me: knowing so much in you, though not long acquainted, that I shall find your cares faithfull treasurers.
So then sitting downe in two chaires, and sometimes casting his eye to the picture, he thus spake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the provinces of Grecce, hath ever beene had in singular reputation: partly for the sweetnesse of the ayre, and other natural benefites, but principally for the well tempered minds of the people, who (finding that the shining title of glorie so much affected by other nations, doth in deed helpe little to the happinesse of life) are the onely people, which as by their Justice and prouidence geue neither cause nor hope to their neighbours to annoy them, so are they not disturbed with false praiue to trouble others quiet, thinking it a small reward for the wafting of their owne liues in raunening, that their posteritie should long after faie, they had done so. Euen the Muses seeme to approve their good determinatiō, by chooing this countrie for their chiefe repairing place, & by bestowing their perfecions so largely here, that the very shepheardes haue their fancies lifted to so high conceits, as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whose picture you see) by name Basilius, a Prince of sufficient skill to gouerne so quieta countrie, where the good minds of the former princes had set downe good lawes, and the well bringing vp of the people doth serue as a most sure bond to hold the. But to be plaine with you, he excelles in nothing so much, as in the zealous loue of his people, wherein he doth not only passe at his owne fore-goers, but as I thinke all the princes luing. Whereof the cause is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration, as depth of wisdome, height of C 3 courage
The Countesse of Pembroke's

courage and largenesse of magnificence, yet is hee notable in those whiche stirre affection, as truth of worde, meekenesse, corteesie, mercifulnesse, and liberalitie.

He being already well striken in yeares, maried a young princes, named Gynecia, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you see: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband: of most unspotted chastitie, but of so working a minde, and so vehement spirits, as a man may say, it was happie shee tooke a good courfe: for otherwise it would haue beene terrible.

Of these two are brought to the worlde two daughters, fo beyonde measure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reasonable creatures, that wee may think they were borne to shewe, that Nature is no stepmother to that sex, how much soeuer some men (harpe witted onely in euill speaking) haue sought to disgrace them. The elder is named Pamela; by many men not deemed inferior to her sister: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at leaft such perfections may receyue the worde of more) more sweetnesse in Philoclea, but more maieftie in Pamela: mee thought loue plaide in Philoclea eyes, and threatened in Pamela: me thought Philoclea beautie onely perswaded, but so perswaded as all harts must yeeld: Pamela beautie vied violence, and such violence as no hart could restist: and it seemes that such proportion is betweene their mindes; Philoclea so bashfull as though her excellencies had stolen into her before shee was aware: so humble, that she will put all pride out of countenance: in summe, such proceeding as will stirre hope,
but teach hope good manners. *Pamela* of high thoughts, who avoids not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be void of pride; her mothers wisdom, greatness, nobility, but (if I can gessle a right) knit with a more constant temper. Now then, our Basilius being so publickly happy as to be a Prince, and so happy in that happiness as to be a beloved Prince, and so in his private bless'd as to have so excellent a wife, and so over-excellent children, hath of late taken a course which yet makes him more spoken of then all these blessings. For, having made a journey to Delphos, and safely returned, within four space he brake vp his court, and retired himselfe, his wife, and children into a certaine Forest hereby, which he calleth his desert, where in (besides a house appointed for stables and lodgings for certaine persons of mean calling, who do all household services,) hee hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them himselfe remaines with his younger daughter *Philoclea*, which was the cause they three were matched together in this picture, without having any other creature living in that lodge with him.

Which though it bee strange, yet not so strange, as the course he hath taken with the prince'sle *Pamela*, whom hee hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accompanied truly with none other, but one *Dametas*, the most arrant doltish clowne, that I thinke euer was without the privilege of a bable, with his wife *Misio*, and daughter *Mopsa*, in whom no wit can devise any thing wherein they maie pleasure her, but to exercise her patience, and to serve for a foil of her perfections. This loutish clowne is such, that
The Countesse of Pembroke's

you neuer saw so ill fauour a viser: his behaioyr such, that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparr, even as I would with him: Mifio his wife, so handfome a beldame, that onely her face and her fplay-foote haue made her accused for a witch; onely one good point she hath, that she obeyes 'decorum', hauing a froward mind in a wretched body. Betwene these two personages (who neuer agreed in any humor, but in dis-agreeing) is issued forth mistrefle Mopha, a fitte woman to partake of both their perfections: but because a pleasanf fellow of my acquaintance sett forth her praises in verfe, I will onely repeate them, and spare mine owne tongue, since she goes for a woman. These verses are thefe, which I haue so often caufed to be fong, that I haue them without booke.

What length of verfe can serve brane Mophas good to show? Whose vertues strange, & beauties such, as no ma the may know. Thus shrewdy burnd the bowr va my Mufe escape? (Shape. The gods must help, and preitious things must serve to show her. Like great god Saturn faire, and like faire Venus chaste: As smothe as Pan, as Iuno milde, like goddefe Iris fafte. With Cupid she foere-foe, and goes god Vulcans pace: And for a taste of all these gifts, he steales god Momus grace. Her forhead iacinth like, her cheekes of opall hue, Her twinkling eies bedeckt with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew: Her haire like Crapal-stone, her mouth O heavenly wyde; Her skin like burnifht gold, her hands like filver were untryde. As for her parts unknowne, which hidden sure are best: Happie be they which well beleuue, & neuer fecke the rest.

Now
Now truely hauing made these descriptions vnto you, me thinkes you shou'd imagine that I rather faine some pleasant deuise, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not banisht from his owne wits) could possibly make so vnworthie a choise. But truely (deare guest) so it is, that Princes (whose doings haue beene often soothe'd with good successe) thinke nothing so absolute, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes straying out of the way, one time he hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way, & so falling into other queftions, he found some of his answers (as a dog fure if he could speake, had wit enough to describe his kennell) not vnsensible, & all yttered with such rudenes, which he interpreted plainnesse (though there be great difference betweene them) that Basilius conceauing a sodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparant shew of his good opinion: where the flattering courtier had no sooner take the Princes minde, but that there were straight reasons to confrme the Princes doing, & shadowes of vertues found for Dametas. His silence grew with his bluntnesse integritie, his beastly ignorance vertuous simplicitie: & the Prince (according to the nature of great persons, in loue with that he had done himselp) fancied, that his weakness with his presence would much be mended. And so like a creature of his owne making, he liked him more and more, and thus hauing first giuen him the office of principall heardman, lastly, since he tooke this strange determination, he hath in a manner put the life of himselp and his children into his hands. Which authoritye (like too great a fayle for so small a boate) doth so ouer-sway poore Dametas, that if before he were a good
good foole in a chamber, he might be allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt me (I feare mee in deed) my mafter will in the end (with his cost) finde, that his office is not to make men, but to vie men as men are, no more then a horfe will be taught to hunt, or an ass to mannage. But in sooth I am afraide I haue geuen your ears too great a surfette, with the groffe discourses of that heauie pece of fleth. But the zealous greefe I conceue to fee so great an error in my Lord, hath made me beflowe more words, then I confesse to base a subject deserveth.

CHAP. 4.

The caufe of Basilius his discourting. 
Philanax his dif- 
servasine letter. 
Basilius his priuiledged companie. 
Fourc 
causes why old men are discoursers. 
The statethe skil, and 
exercife of the Arcadian shepheards.

Hus much now that I haue tolde you, is nothing more then in effect any Arcadian knowes. But what moued him to this strange solitari-
nes hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one perfon living. My selfe 
cœcœter, & in deed more then coniecuture, by this accident that I will tell you: I haue an onely sonne, by name Clitophon, who is now absent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane shortly shalbe here celebrated. This sonne of mine (while the Prince kept his Court) was of his bed-chamber; now since the breaking vp thereof, returned home, and shewed me (among other things he had gathered) the coppy
copy which he had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he had laid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not on ly tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed Clitophon for the curiositie, which made him break his dutie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subje& to be revealed: but since it was done, I was content to take so much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I euer since for my good liking, have carried about me: which before I read vnto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named Philanax, appointed by the Prince, Regent in this time of his retiring, and most worthie so to be: for, there liues no man, whose excellent witte more simplie imbraseth integritie, besides his unsained love to his master, wherein neuer yet any could make question, fearing, whether he loued Basilius or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either servilely yeeld to all appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fancy good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whom of all other (and most worthie) the Prince cheefly loues, it should seeme (for more then the letter I haue not to ghesse by) that the Prince vpon his returne from Delphos, (Philanax then lying sick) had written vnlo him his determination, rising (as evidently appeares) vpon some Oracle he had there receaued: whereunto he wrote this answere.

Philanax his letter to Basilius.

Most redouted & beloued prince, if aswel it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to have
The Countesse of Pembroke

ved my humble service, both I should in better season, and to better purpose have spoken: and you (if my speech had prevailed) should have been at this time, as no way more in danger, so much more in quietness; I would then have said, that wisdom and virtue be the only destinies appointed to man to follow, whereas we ought to seek all our knowledge, since they be such guides as cannot fail; which, besides their inward comfort, do lead so direct a way of proceeding, as either prosperity must ensue; or, if the wickedness of the world should oppress it, it can never be said, that evil hath been to him, who falls accompanied with virtue: I would then have said, the heavenly powers to be reuerenced, and not searched into; & their mercies rather by prayers to be sought, than their hidden counsels by curiosity. These kind of soothsayers (since they have left us in ourselves sufficient guides) to be nothing but fantastic, wherein there must either be vanitie, or insallibleness, & so, either not to be respected, or not to be prevented. But since it is weakenes too much to remember what should have been done, and that your commandement stretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (most deare Lord) with humble boldnes say, that the manner of your determination doth in no sort better please me, then the cause of your going. These thirtie yeares you have so governed this Region, that neither your Subjectes have wanted justice in you, nor you obedience in them; & your neighbors have found you so hurtlesly strong, that they thought it better to rest in your friendship, then make newe triall of your enmitie. If this then have proceeded out of the good constitution of your state, and out of a wise providence, generally to prevent all
all those things, which might encober your happines: why should you now seeke newe courses, since your owne ensample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me most certaine (though it please you not to tell me the very words of the Oracle) that yet no destinie, nor influence whatsoever, can bring mans witte to a higher point, then widsome and goodnes: Why should you deprive your selfe of government, for feare of losinge your government? Like one that should kill himselfe for feare of death? Nay rather, if this Oracle be to be accouted of, arme vp your courage the more against it: for who will stick to him that abandones himselfe? Let your subiects haue you in their eyes; let them see the benefites of your justice dayly more and more, and so must they needes rather like of present sureties, then vncertaine changes. Lastly, whether your time call you to liue or die, doo both like a prince. Now for your second resolution; which is, to suffer no worthie prince to be a suiter to either of your daughters, but while you liue to keep the both vnmaried; & as it were, to kill the joy of posteritie, which in your time you may enjoy: moued perchance by a mis-understoode Oracle: what shall I say, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead sufficietly against such fancies: once certaine it is, the God, which is God of nature, doth never teach vnnaturalnes: and even the same minde hold I touching your banishing them from companie, least, I know not what strange loues should follow: Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiseth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene hethero such, as hath beene most fit to restraine all euill: geting their mindes vertuous delights,
lights, and not greeting them for want of wel-rulled libertie. Now to fall to a sodain straightning them,what can it doo but argue suspition, a thing no more vnplea-
sant,then vntrue, for the preferring of vertue ? Leave womens minds, the most vntamed that way of any:see whether any cage can please a bird; or whether a dogge growe not fiercer with tying : what dooth iclousie, but flirre vp the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are restrayned: for they are treasures,or things of great delight, which men vse to hide, for the aptnesse they haue to catch mens fancies : and the thoughtes once a-
waked to that,harder sure it is to keepe those thoughts from accomplishmment, then it had been before to have kept the minde (which being the chiefe part, by this meanes is defiled)from thinking. Lastly,for the recomm-
ending so principall a charge of the Princesse Pamela,
(whose minde goes beyond the gouerning of many thousands such) to such a person as Dametas is (besides that the thing in it self is strange)it comes of a very evil ground, that ignorance should be the mother of faith-
fulnes. O no,he cannot be good,that knowes not why he is good, but stands so farre good,as his fortune may keepe him vnassailed: but comming once to that, his rude simplicitie is either easilly changed,or easilly decei-
ued : & fo growes that to be the last excuse of his fault, which seemed to have been the first foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commandement and my zeale drawn me: which I,like a man in a valley that may discern hilles , or like a poore passenger that may spie a rock,so humbly submit to your gracious consideration, befeching you againe,to stand wholy vpon your own vertue, as the surest way to maintaine you in that you are,and to auoyd any euill which may be imagined.

By
By the contents of this letter you may perceive, that the cause of all, hath beene the vanitie which poiffeoth many, who (making a perpetuall mansion of this poore baiting place of mans life) are desirous to know the certaintie of things to come, wherein there is nothing so certaine, as our continual uncertaintie. But what in particular points the oracle was, in faith I know not; nether (as you may see by one place of Philanax letter) he himselfe distinctly knew. But this experience shewes vs, that Basilius judgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune, hath rather heard then followed the wife (as I take it) counsell of Philanax. For, having lost the sterne of his government, with much amazement to the people, among whom many strange bruits are receiued for currant, and with some appearance of danger in respect of the valiant Amphaleus, his nephew, & much enuy in the ambitious number of the Nobilitie against Philanax, to see Philanax so aduaunced, though (to speake simply) he deserve more the as many of vs as there be in Arcadia: the prince himself hath hidden his head, in such sort as I told you, not sticking plainly to cőseffe, that he means not (while he breathes) that his daughters shal haue any husband, but keep the thus solitary with him: wher he gues no other body leue to visit him at any time, but a certain prieft, who being excellent in poctrie, he makes him write out such things as he best likes, he being no les delightful in cőuerfatiō, the needfull for deuotiō, & about twëty specified shepehards, in who (some for exercises, some for Eglogs) he taketh greater recreatiō.

And now you know as much as my self; wherin if I haue held you ouer long, lay hardly the fault vpon my olde age, which in the very disposition of it is talkative; whether it be (said he smiling) that nature loues to
The Countesse of Pembrokes Exercife that part most, which is least decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowledge being the only thing whereof we poore old men can brag, we cannot make it knowne but by utterance: or, that mankinde by all meanes seeking to eternize himselfe so much the more, as he is neere his end, dooth it not only by the children that come of him, but by speeches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I wil say for my selfe, that I haue not laid these matters either so openly, or largely to any as your selfe: so much ( if I much fayle not ) doo I see in you, which makes me both loute and truft you. Neuer may he be old, answered Palladis, that dooth not reuerence that age, whose heauines, if it waie downe the frayl and fleshly ballance, it as much lift vp the noble and spirituall part: and well might you haue allledged another reason, that their wisdome makes them willing to profite others. And that haue I receiued of you, never to be forgotten, but with vngratefulnes. But among many strange conceits you tolde me, which haue shewed effects in your Prince, truly even the laft, that he should conceiue such pleasure in the shepheardes discourses, would not seeme the least vnto me, fauing that you told me at the firft, that this countrie is notable in those wits, and that in deed my selfe hauing beeene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by Strephon and Clauis, in their conference found wits as might better become such shepheardes as Homer speakes of, that be gouernors of peoples, then such senatours who hold their councell in the hepecoate: for them two (laid Kalander) especialy Clauis, they are beyond the rest by so much, as learning commonlie doth addde to nature: for, hauing neglected
neglected their wealth in respect of their knowledge, they hauenot so much empayred the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithstanding, it is a sorte to heare howe they impute to loue, whiche hath indewed their thoughts (faie they.) with suche a strength.

But certeyne, all the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is giuen to those sortes of the witte, so as you would wonder to heare howe fome euene children will beginne to versusifie. Once, ordinary it is among the meanest sorte, to make Songes and Dialogues in mecter, either loue whetting their braine, or long peace haung begun it, example and emulation amending it. Not so much, but the cloune Dametas will stumble sometimes vpon some Songs that might become a better brayne: but no sorte of people fo excellent in that kinde as the pastors, for their lijuing standing but vpon the looking to their beastes, they haue ease, the Nurse of Poetrie. Neither are our shepheardes such, as (I heare) they be in other countries, but they are the verie owners of the sheepe, to which eyther themselves looke, or their children giue daylie attendaunce. And then truely, it would delight you vnder some tree, or by some riuers side (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall muse, how pretely it will deliuer out, sometimes ioyes, sometimes lamentations, sometimes challenging one of the othere, sometimes vnder hidden formes vittering such matters, as otherwise they durst not deale with. Then they haue most commonly one, who iuogeth the price to the best doer, of which they are no lesse gladde, then great Princes are of triumphes: and his parte is to sette D downe
The Countesse of Pembroke

downe in writing all that is faide, saue that it may be, his pen with more leasure doth polish the rudenesse of an unthought-on songe. Now the choife of all (as you may well think) either for goodnesse of voice, or pleasantnesse of wit, the Prince hath: among whom also there are two or three straungers, whom inwarde melancholies hauing made weery of the worldes eyes, haue come to spende their liues among the countrie people of Arcadia, & their converfation being well approv'd, the prince vouchsafeth them his presence, and not onely by looking on, but by great courtesie and liberalitie, animates the Shepheardes the more exquisitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no caufe to blame the Prince for somtimes hearing them; the blame-worthinesse is, that to heare them, he rather goes to solitarinesse, then makes them come to compa-}nie. Neith'er doo I accuse my maister for aduauncing a countriman, as Dametas is, since God forbid, but where worthinesse is (as truely it is among diuers of that fellowship) any outward lownesse should hinder the hieft rayling, but that he would needs make elec-'tion of one, the balenesse of whose minde is such, that it finckes a thousand degrees lower, then the bas-est bodie could carrie the most base fortune: Which although it might bee aunswered for the Prince, that it is rather a trust hee hath in his simple plainnesse, then any great aduauncement, beyng but chiefe heardman: yet all honest hartes feele, that the trust of their Lord goes beyond all aduauncement. But I am ever too long upon him, when hee crosseth the waie of my speache, and by the shaddowe of yonder Tower, I see it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we owe
owe to our stomacks, the to break the aire with my idle discourses: And more witte I might haue learned of Homer (whome euene now you mentioned) who never entertayned eyther guestes or hostes with long speaches, till the mouth of hunger be throughly stopped. So withall he rose, leading Palladius through the gardeine againe to the parler, where they vled to supper; Palladius assuring him, that he had alreadie bene more fed to his liking, then hee could bee by the skillfullest trencher-men of Media.

CHAP. 5.

The sorrow of Kalandar for his sonne Clitophon. The storie of Argalus and Parthenia, their perfections, their love, their troubles, her impossoning, his rare constancie, her straunge refusall, their pathologies, her flight, his revenge on his rivall the mischiefe-worker Demagogas, then Captaine of the rebell Helots, who take him, and Clitophon that sought to helpe him: but both are kept alive by their new captaine.

Vt beeing come to the supping place, one of Kalanders seruaunts rounded in his eare; at which (his colleur chaungyng) hee retired him selfe into his chamber; commaunding his men diligentlie to waite and attend vpon Palladius, and to excuse his absence with some necessarie busines he had presentlie to dispatch. Which
The Countesse of Pembrokes

Which they accordinglie did, for some fewe dayes forcing theelesues to let no change appeare: but though they framed their countenaunces neuer so cunningly, Palladius perceaued there was some il-pleasing accident fallen out. Whereupon, being againe set alone at supper, he called to the Steward, and desired him to tell him the matter of his suddaine alteration: who after some trifling excuses, in the ende confessed vnto him, that his maister had receiued newes, that his sone before the daie of his neere marriage, chaunt to be at a battaile, which was to be fought betweene the Gentlemanne of Lacedaemon and the Helots: who winning the victorie, hee was there made prisoner, going to deliver a friend of his taken prisoner by the Helots; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great raunson for his life: but that the hate those paysaunts conceaued agaynst all Gentlemen was suche, that euerie hour hee was to looke for nothing, but some cruell death: which hether-vento had onely beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who seemed to haue a hart of more manlie pittie then the rest. Which losse had stricken the old Gentleman with such sorrowe, as if aboundance of teares did not seeme sufficiently to witnesse it, he was alone retyr’d, tearing his bearde and hayre, and cursing his old age, that had not made his graue to stoppe his eares from such aduertisements: but that his faithfull seuaunts had written in his name to all his friends, followers, and tenants (Philanax the governour refusing to deale in it, as a priuate cause, but yet giving leave to seeke their best redresse, so as they wronged not the state of Lacedaemon) of whom there were now gathered
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

Upon the frontiers good forces, that he was sure would spende their liues by any way, to redeeme or reuenge Clitophon. Now sir (said he) this is my maisters nature, though his grief be such, as to liue is a grieue vnto him, & that euene his reason is darkened with sorrow; yet the lawes of hospitallity (long and holily observed by him) giue still such a sway to his proceeding, that he will no waie suffer the stranger lodged under his rooffe, to receyue (as it were) any infection of his anguife, especially you, toward whom I know not whether his loue, or admiration bee greater. But Palladius could scarce heare out his tale with patience: so was his hart torne in pieces with compassion of the case, liking of Kalanders noble behauiour, kindnesse for his respect to himwardes, and desire to finde some remedie, besides the image of his dearest friend Daiphantus, whom he judged to suffer either a like or a worse fortune: therefore rising from the boorde, he desyred the steward to tell him particularly, the ground, and euent of this accident, because by knowledge of many circumstaunces, there might perhaps some waie of helpe be opened. Whereunto the steward easilie in this forte condiscended.

My Lord (said he) when our good king Basiliss, with better suucessie then expectation, tooke to wife (euene in his more then decaying yeares) the faire yong princes Cynecia, there came with her a young Lord, coufin german to her selfe, named Argalus, led hether, partly with the loue & honour of his noble kinswomana, partly with the humour of youth, which euere thinkes that good, whose goodnes he fecs not: & in this court he receyued so good encreas of knowledge, that after some yeares spent,
spent, he so manifested a most vertuous mind in all his actions, that Arcadia gloried such a plant was transported vnto them, being a Gentleman in deed most rarely accomplished, excellentlie learned, but without all vayne glory: friendly, without factiousnes: valiant, so as for my part I thinke the earth hath no man that hath done more heroicall acts then hee; how sooner now of late the fame flies of the two princes of Thessalia and Macedon, and hath long done of our noble prince Amphius; who in deed, in our partes is onely accounted likely to match him: but I say for my part, I thinke no man for valoure of minde, and habilite of bodie to bee preferred, if equalled to Argalus; and yet so valiant as he neuer durst doo any bodie injurie: in behauiour some will say euuer fadde, surely sober, and somewhat giuen to musing, but neuer vncourteous; his worde euere ledde by his thought, and followed by his deed: rather liberall then magnificent, though the one wanted not, and the other had euere good choise of the receiver: in summe (for I perceive I shall easily take a great draught of his praires, whom both I and all this countrie love so well), such a man was (and I hope is) Argalus, as hardly the nicest eye can finde a spot in, if the ouer-vehement constancie of yet spotles affection, may not in harde wrested constructions be counted a spot: which in this manner began that worke in him, which hath made bothe him, and it selfe in him, ouer all this country famous. My maisters sonne Clitphon (whose losse giues the cause to this discourse, and yet giues me cause to beginne with Argalus, since his losse procedes from Argalus) beyng a young Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings sitters
fitters sonne) so truely of good nature, and one that can fe good and love it, haunted more the companie of this worthie Argalus, then of any other: so as if there were not a friendship (which is so rare, as it is to bee doubted whether it be a thing in deed, or but a worde) at least there was such a liking and friendlines, as hath brought forth the effectes which you shall heare. About two yeares since, it so fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies house, sister to my mai-
ster, who had with her, her only daughter, the faire Parthenia; faie in deede (fame I thinke it selfe daring not to call any fayrer, if it be not Helena queene of Cor-
rinth, and the two incomparable sisters of Arcadia) and that which made her fairenesse much the fayrer, was, that it was but a faire embassadour of a most faire minde, full of wit, and a wit which delighted more to judge it selfe, then to shewe it selfe: her speach being as rare as pretious; her silence without fullenesse; her modestie without afection; her shamefastnes without ignorance: in summe, one, that to praise well, one must first set downe with himselfe, what it is to be ex-
cellent: for so she is.

I thinke you thinke, that these perfections meeting, could not choose but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in rea-
son to drawe liking with affection: mens actions doo not alwaies crosse with reason: to be short, it did so in deed. They loued, although for a while the fire therof (hopes winges being cut of) were blowen by the bel-
lowes of dispaire, vpon this occasion.

There had beene a good while before, and so con-
tinued, a futer to this same lady, a great noble ma, though
of Laconia, yet neere neighbour to Parthenia mother, named Demagoras: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, stubbornly stout, lousting no body but him selfe, and for his owne delights sake Parthenia: and pursuing vehemently his desire, his riches had so goulded ouer all his other imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers minde) had given her consent, and wrung a mothers authoritie vpon her faire daughter, had made her yeeld thereunto, not because shee liked her ehoise, but because her obedient minde had not yet taken vpon it to make choyse; and the daie of their assurance drew neere, when my young Lord Clitophon brought this noble Argalus, perchaunce principallie to see so rate a sight, as Parthenia by all well judging eyes was judged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of assurance appointed, yet loust that sawe hee had a great journey to make in shorte time, hafted so him selfe, that before her worde could tie her to Demagoras, her harte hath vowed her to Argalus, with so grassefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if shee desired above all things to haue Argalus, Argalus feared nothing but to misse Parthenia. And now Parthenia had learned both liking and misliking, louing and lothing, and out of passion began to take the authoritie of judgement; in so much, that when the time came that Demagoras (full of proude ioy) thought to receave the gifte of her selfe, shee with woordes of resolute refusall (though with teares shewing she was forie she must refuse) assured her mother, she would first be bedded in her graue, then wedded to Demagoras. The chaunge was no more
more strange than unpleasant to the mother: who by being determinately (lest I should say of a great Lady, wilfully) bent to marry her to Demagoras, tried all ways which a wittie and hard-hearted mother could use, upon so humble a daughter: in whom the only resisting power was love. But the more she assaulted, the more she taught Parthenia to defend; and the more Parthenia defended, the more she made her mother obstinate in the assault: who at length finding, that Argalus standing between them, was it that most eclipsed her affection from shining upon Demagoras, she fought all means how to remove him, so much the more, as he manifested himself an unremovable suit to her daughter: first, by employing him in as many dangerous enterprises, as ever the cruel stepmother Juno recommended to the famous Hercules: but the more his vertue was tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things she did to overthrow him, did set him upon the height of honor; enough to have moved her harte, especially to a man every way so worthy as Argalus: but she struggling against all reason, because she would have her will, and shew her authoritie in matching her with Demagoras, the more vertuous Argalus was, the more she hated him: thinking her selfe conquered in his conquests, and therefore still employing him in more and more dangerous attempts: mean while, she used all extremities possible upon her faire daughter, to make her give over her selfe to her direction. But it was hard to judge, whether he in doing, or she in suffering, shewed greater constantrie of affection: for, as to Argalus the world sooner wanted occasions, then he valour to goe thorow them; so to Parthenia, malice sooner ceased, the her
The Countesse of Pembroke's

er unchangeed patience. Lastly, by treasons, Demagoras
and she would haue made away Argalus: but hee with
prudence & courage fo past over all, that the mother
tooke such a spitefull grief at it, that her hart brake with-
all, and she died.

But then, Demagoras assuring himselfe, that now Par-
thenia was her owne, she would neuer be his; and receiv-
ing as much by her owne determinate answere, not
more desiring his owne happines, then enuying Arga-
lus, whom he saw with narrow eyes, even ready to en-
joy the perfection of his desires; strengthening his con-
ceite with all the mischievous counsels which disday-
ned loue, and envious pride could geue vnto him; the
wicked wretch (taking a time that Argalus was gone to
his countrie, to fetch some of his principall frendes to
honour the mariage, which Parthenia had most joyfully
conseed vnto,) the wicked Demagoras (say) desiring
to speake with her, with vnmercifull force, (her weake
armes in vaine resisting,) rubd all ouer her face a most
horrible pooylon: the effect whereof was such, that ne-
uer leaper lookt more vgly the she did: which done, ha-
ung his men & horses ready, departed away in spite of
her seruants, as redy to revenge as they could, in such
an vnexpected mishiefse. But the abominablenes
of this fact being come to my L. Kalander, he made such
meanes, both by our kings intercession, & his own, that
by the king, & Senat of Lacedaemo, Demagoras was up-
on paine of death, banished the countrie: who hating
the punishement, where he should haue hated the fault,
joynde himselfe, with all the powers he could make, vnto
the Helots, lately in rebellion against that state: and
they (glad to haue a man of such authority among th'5)

made
made him their general: & vnder him haue committed divers the most outrageous villanies, that a base multitude (full of desperate reuenge) can imagine.

But within a while after this pitifull fact committed vpon Parthenia, Argalus returned (poore gentleman) having her faire image in his heart, and alredy promising his eies the uttermost of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) were the first messengers to themselves of their owne misfortune. I meane not to moue passions with telling you the grieue of both, when he knew her, for at first he did not, nor at first knowledge could possibly haue Vertues aide so ready, as not euen weakly to lament the losse of such a iewell, so much the more, as that skilful men in that arte assured it was vnone recoverable: but within a while, trueth of loue (which still held the first face in his memorie) a vertuous constancie, and euen a delight to be constant, faith geuen, and inward worthines shining through the foulest mistes, tooke so full holde of the noble Argalus, that not onely in such comfort which witty arguments may bestow vpon adversitie, but euen with the most a-boundant kindnesse that an eye-rauished louer can expresse, he laboured both to drue the extremity of sorrow from her, & to haften the celebration of their mariage: wherunto he vnfeinedly shewed himself no lesse cherefully earnest, then if she had neuer been disinherited of that goodly portion, which nature had so liberally bequeathed vnto her; and for that cause deferred his intended reuenge vpon Demagoras, because he might continuallie be in her presence; shewing more huble seruice-ablenes, and ioy to content her, then euer before.

But as he gaue this rare example, not to be hoped for a.

any
The Countesse of Pembroke's

any other, but of an other Argalus: so of the other side, she tooke as strange a course in affection: for, where she desired to enjoy him, more then to liue: yet did she ouerthrow both her owne desire, and his, and ir no forte would yeeld to marry him: with a strange encounter of loues affections, and effects: that he by an affection sprong from excessive beautie, should delight in horrible souldinesse, and the, of a vehement desire to haue him, should kindly buyld a resolution neuer to haue him: for trueth is, that so in heart she loued him, as she could not finde in her heart he should be tied to what was unworthy of his presence.

Truely Sir, a very good Orator might haue a fayre field to vie eloquence in, if he did but onely repeate the lamentable, and truely affectionated speeches, while he conjured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not to make him so vn-happy, as to think he had not only lost her face, but her hart; that her face, when it was fayrest, had been but as a marshall, to lodge the loue of her in his minde; which now was so well placed, as it needed no further help of any outward harbinger: befeeching her, euen with teares, to know, that his loue was not so superfical, as to go no further then the skin, which yet now to him was most faire, since it was hers: how could he be so vn-gratefull, as to love her the lesse for that, which she had onely received for his fake; that he neuer beheld it, but therein he saw the louelines of her loue towarde him: protestinge vnto her, that he would neuer take ioy of his life, if he might not enjoy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that ouer-heard them) she (wringing him by the hand) made no other
other answer but this: my Lord (said she) God knowes I love you: if I were Princesse of the whole world, and had withall all the blessings that ever the world brought forth, I should not make delay, to lay my selfe, & them, under your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I must confess) far vnworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a joy for my hart to think of) have accepted your vouchsafing me to be yours, & with faith and obedience would have supplied all other defects. But first let me be much more miserable then I am, ere I match Argalus to such a Parthenia:Lieue happy, deare Argalus, I geue you full libertie, and I beseech you take it; and I assure you I shall reioyce (whatsoever become of me) to see you so coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, and satisfaction. With that she burst out in crying and weeping, not able longer to conteine her selfe from blaming her fortune, and wishing her owne death.

But Argalus with a most heavie heart still pursuing his desire, she fixt of mind to avoid further intreatie, & to flie all companie, which (even of him) grew vnpleasant vnto her; one night she stole away: but whether as yet is vnknowne, or in deede what is become of her.

Argalus fought her long, and in many places: at length (despairing to finde her, and the more he despai-red, the more enraged) weeke of his life, but first determining to be revenged of Demagoras, hee went alone disguyled into the chiefe towne held by the Helots: where comming into his presence, garded about by many of his souldiers, he could delay his fury no longer for a fitter time: but setting vpon him, in despight of a great many, that helped him, gave him diuers mortall wounds,
The Countesse of Pembroke

wounds, and himself (no question) had been there pre-

ferly murdered, but that Demagoras himselfe de-ferred

he might be kept alieue; perchaunce with intention to

feed his owne eyes with some cruell execution to be-

layd vpon him; but death came sooner then he lookt for,

yet haung had leaure to appoint his successor, a young

man, not long before deliered out of the prison of the

King of Lacedemon, where hee shoulde have suffered
dee for haung slaine the kings Nephew: but him he

named, who at that time was absent, making roads vpon

the Lacedemonians, but being returned, the rest of

the Helots, for the great liking they conceiued of that

yong man, (especially because they had none among

themselves to whom the others would yeeld) were co-

tent to roillow Demagoras appointment. And well hath

it succeded with them, he haung since done things be-
yond the hope of the yongest heads; of whom I speake

the rather, because he hath hetherto preferred Argalus

alieue, vnder pretence to haue him publiquely, and with

exquisite tormentes executed, after the ende of these

warres, of which they hope for a soone and prosperous

issue.

And he hath likewise hetherto kept my young Lord

13 Clitophon alive, who (to redeeme his friend) went with
certaine other noble-men of Laconia, and forces gath-
ered by them, to besiege this young and new successor:
but he issuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated

14 the Laconians, flew many of the noble-men, & tooke
Clitophon prisoner, whom with much a doo he keepeth
alive: the Helots being villanously cruell, but he tempe-
reth the so, sometimes by folowing their humor, some-
times by struing with it, that hetherto hee hath faued

both
both their lines, but in different estates, Argalus being kept in a close & hard prison, Clitophon at some libertie. And now Sir, though (to say the truth) we can promise our selues little of their safeties, while they are in the Helots hands, I have deliered all I vnderstande touching the losse of my Lords sonne, & the cause therof: which, though it was not necessarie to Clitophons case, to be so particularly told, yet the straungenes of it, made me think it would not be vnpleasant vnto you.

CHAP. 6.

Kalander's expedition against the Helots. * Their estate.
Palladius his strat ageme against them: * which pre-
wayeth. * The Helots resistance, discomfiture, and * re-
enforce by the returne of their new captaine: * The com-
bat and * enterknowledge of Daiphantus & Palladius,
and by their * means a peace, with * the release of Kal-
lander and Clitophon.

Alladius thanked him greatly for it, being eu'n passionately delightede with hearing so straunge an acci-
det of a knight so famous over the world, as Argalus, with whom he had himselfe a long desier to meet: so had fame poured a noble emu-
lation in him, towards him.

But the (wel bethinking himself) he called for armour,
defiring them to prouide him of horfe & guide, and ar-
medal fauing the head, he went vp to Kalader, whom he found lying vpō the groud, having eu'uer since banished
both
both sleepe and foode, as enemies to the mourning which passion perswaded him was reasonable. But Palladins rayfed him vp, saying vnto him: No more, no more of this, my Lord Kalander, let vs labour to finde, before wee lament the losse: you know my selfe miste one, who, though he be not my sonne, I would disdayn the saueur of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of sorrow, make the strength of it languish: take comfort, and good successe will follow. And with those wordes, comfort seemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and gesture was painted victorie. Once, Kalanders spirits were so reuived withal, that (receiuing some sustenance, and taking a little rest) he armed him selfe, and those few of his servants he had left vnscant, and so himselfe guyded Palladins to the place vpon the frontiers: where already there were assembled betwene three and four thousand men, all well disposed (for Kalanders sake) to abide any perill: but like men dused with a long peace, more determinate to doo, than skilfull how to doo: lusty bodies, and braue armours: with such courage, as rather grew of despising their enemies, whom they knew not, than of any confidence for any thing, which in them felues they knew, but neither cunning use of their weapons, nor arte shewed in their marching, or incamping. Which Palladins soone perceiuing, he desired to understand (as much as could be delivered vnto him) the estate of the Helots.

2    And he was answered by a man well acquainted with the affaires of Laconia, that they were a kinde of people, who having been of old, freemen and possessi-
oners, the Lacedemonians had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage vpon them: which
they had long borne; till of late the Lacedemonians through greedinesse growing more heavy then they could bear, and through contempt lefse carefull how to make them bear, they had with a generall consent (rather springing by the generalnes of the cause, then of any artificiall practife) let themselves in armes, and whetting their courage with reuenge, and grounding their resolution upon despaire, they had proceeded with unlooked-for succes: having already take divers Towns and Castels, with the slaughter of many of the gentrie, for whom no sex nor age could be accepted for an excuse. And that although at the first they had fought rather with beastly furie, then any fouldierly discipline, practife had now made then comparable to the best of the Lacedemonians; & more of late then euer, by reason, first of Demagoras a great Lord, who had made him felf of their partie, and since his death, of another Captaine they had gotten, who had brought vp their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to such a meane of good government, and withall led them so valouroufie, that (besides the time wherein Clitophon was taken) they had the better in some other great conflicts: in such wise, that the estate of Lacedamon had sent unto them, offering peace with most reasonable and honorable conditions. Palladius hauing gotten this generall knowledge of the partie against whom, as hee had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to Kalander, and told him plainlie, that by playne force there was small apparaunce of helping Clitophon: but some device was to be taken in hand, wherein no lefse discretion then valour was to be vsed.

Whereupon, the council of the chiefe men was cal-

led
led, and at last, this way Palladius (who by some experience, but especially by reading Historics, was acquainted with stratagemes) invented, and was by all the rest approoved: that all the men there should dress themselves like the poorest sorte of the people in Arcadia, having no banners, but bloudie shirites hanged upon long stances, with some bad bagge pipes in stead of drumme and fife, their armour they should as well as might be, cover, or at least make them looke so rustilie, and ill-favouredly as might well become such wearers: and thus the whole number should doo, sundering two hundred of the best chosen Gentlemen, for courage and strength, whereof Palladius himself would be one, who should have their armes chayned, and be put in cartes like prisoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towards the towne of Cardamilla where Clitophon was captive, and being come two houres before Sunne-set within vewe of the walles, the Helots alreadie descriyng their number, and beginning to sound the Allarum, they sent a cunning fellow, (so much the cunninger as that he could maske it under rudenes) who with such a kind of Rhetorike, as weedéd out all flowers of Rhetorike, delivered vnto the Helots assembled together, that they were countrie people of Arcadia, no lesse oppressed by their Lords, & no lesse desirous of liberty then they, & therfore had put themselues in the field, & had alreadie (besides a great number slaine) taken nine or ten skore Gentlemen prisoners, who they had there well & fast chained. Now because they had no strong retiring place in Arcadia, & were not yet of number enouigh to keepe the fielde against their Princes forces, they
they were come to them for succor, knowing, that daily more & more of their qualitie would flock vnto the, but that in the mean time, left their Prince should pursuc the, or the Lacedemonian King & Nobilitie (for the likenes of the caufe) fall vpon them, they desired that if there were not roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might encampe vnder the walles, and for surety haue their prisoners (who were such me as were ever able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

The Helots made but a short consultatiō, being glad that their contagion had spread it selfe into Arcadia, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betwenece them and their King, that it was the best way to set fire in all the parts of Greece, besides their greediness to have so many Gentlemen in their handes, in whose raussons they already meant to haue a share, to which haft of concluding, two things wel helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wifteft of them, was at that time absent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the state of Lacedemon: the second, that ouer-many good fortunes began to breed a proude recklesnesse in them: therefore lending to view the campe, and finding that by their speach they were Arcadians, with whom they had had no warre, never suspecting a priuate mans credite could haue gathered such a force, and that all other tokens witnessed them to be of the lowest calling (besides the chaines vpon the Gentlemen) they graunted not only leave for the prisoners, but for some others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour vnder the walles. So opened they the gates, and receiued in the carts; which being done, and Palladius being fit time, he gaue the signe, and sha-
The Countesse of Pembroke

king of their chaynes; (which were made with such arte, that though they seemed most strong and fast, he that ware them might easily loose them) drew their swordes hidden in the cartes, and so setting upon the ward, made them to flie eyther from the place, or from their bodies, and so gave entrée to all the force of the Arcadians, before the Helots could make any head to resist them.

But the Helots being men hardened against dangers, gathered as (well as they could) together in the market place, and thence would have giuen a shrewd welcome to the Arcadians, but that Palladins (blaming those that were slow, hasting the that were forward, but especially with his owne enample leading them) made such an impression into the squadron of the Helots, that at first the great bodie of them beginning to shake, and stagger, at length, every particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feet. Then Kalander cried to go to the prifon, where he thought his sonne was, but Palladins with him (first scouring the streates) to house all the Helots, and make themselves masters of the gates.

But ere that could be accomplished, the Helots had gotten new hart, and with diuers fortes of shot from corners of streets, and house windowes, galled them, which courage was come vnto them by the returne of their Captain, who though he brought not many with him (hauing dispersd most of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great number running out of the gate, not yet possed by the Arcadians, he made them turne face, & with banners displayed, his Trumpet giue the lowest testament he could of his returne, which once
once heard, the rest of the Helots which were otherwise scattered, bent thetherward, with a new life of resolution: as if their Captaine had beene a roote, out of which (as into branches) their courage had sprong. Then began the fight to grow most sharpe, and the encounters of more cruel obstinacie. The Arcadians fighting to kepe that they had wonne, the Helots to reco- uer what they had lost. The Arcadians, as in an un- knowne place, hauing no succour but in their handes, the Helots, as in their own place, fighting for their li- uings, wives, & children. There was victory & courage against revenge and despair: safety of both sides being no otherwise to be gotten, but by destruction.

At length, the left winge of the Arcadians began to loose ground, which Palladius seeing, he streight thrust himselfe with his choise bande against the throng that oppressed the, with such an overflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the Helots (whose eies soone iudged of that wherwith thefelues were governed) saw that he alone was worth al the rest of the Arcadians. Which he so wondred at, that it was hard to say, whether he more liked his doings, or misliked the effects of his doings: but determining that vpon that cast the game lay, and disdaining to fight with any other, sought onely to joine with him: which minde was no lesse in Palladius, hauing easily marked, that he was as the first mouer of al the other handes. And so their thoughts meeting in one point, they consented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: & so drawing themselues to be the vtermost of the one side, they began a combat, which was so much inferior to the bataille in noife and num- ber, as it was surpassing it in braucery of fighting, & (as it were)
The Countesse of Pembroke

were) delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardinesse darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines: both valiant, as men despising death; both confident, as unwonted to be overcome; yet doubtfull by their present feeling, and respectfull by what they had already scene. Their feete stedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, & their harts resolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well known, and according to the knowledge should have bene sharply visited, but that the auntivere was as quicke as the objection. Yet some lighting; the smarthe bred rage, and the rage bred smarthe againe: till both sides beginning to vawe faint, and rather desirous to die accompanied, then hopeful to live victorious, the Captaine of the Helots with a blow, whose violence grew of furie, not of strength, or of strength proceeding of furie, strake Palladins vpon the side of the head, that he reeled astonied: and with-all the helmet fell of, he remayning bare headed: but other of the Arcadians were redie to shild him from any harme might rife of that nakednes.

But little needed it, for his chiefe enemie in steed of pursuing that advaunntage, kneeled downe, offering to deliuer the pommell of his sword, in token of yeelding, with all speaking aloud vnto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his prisoner, then any others general. Palladins standing vpon him selfe, and mifdoubting some craft, and the Helots (that were next their captaine) wavering betweene looking for some stratageme, or fearing treason, What, saide the captaine, hath Palladins forgotten the voice of Daiphantus? By
By that watche worde Palladius knew that it was his onely friende Pyrocles, whome he had lost upon the Sea, and therefore both most full of wonder, so to be mett, if they had not bene fuller of ioye then wonder, caused the retraite to be founded, Daiphanus by authoritie, and Palladius by persuasion, to which helped well the little aduauntage that was of eyther side: and that of the Helots partie their Captaines behaviour had made as many amazed as sawe or heard of it: and of the Arcadian side the good olde Kaland er triuing more then his old age could atchieue, was newly taken prisoner. But in deede, the chiefe partie of the fraye was the night, which with her blacke armes pulled their malicious fighetes one from the o-th-er. But he that tooke Kaland er, meant nothing lesse then to save him, but onelie fo long, as the Captaine might learne the enemies secrets: towards whom he led the old Gentleman, when he caused the retreit to be founded: looking for no other delierie from that captuittie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when whome should he see nexte to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that daie against the Arcadians) but his sonne Cithophon? But nove the Captaine had caused all the principall Helots to be assembled, as well to deliberate what they had to do, as to receive a message from the Arcadians; Amog whom Palladius vertue (besides the loue Kaland er bare him) hauing gotté principall authoritie, he had persuaded them to secke rather by parley to recouer the Father and the Sonne, then by the sword: since the goodnes of the Captain assured him that way to speed, and his value (wherewith he was of old acquainted
made him think any other way dangerous. This therefore was done in orderly manner, giving them to understand, that as they came but to deliver Clitophon, so offering to leave the footing they already had in the town, to go away without any further hurt, so as they might have the father, & the sonne without raunsome delivered. Which conditions being heard and conceaved by the Helots, Daiphantus perswaded them without delay to accept them. For first (sayd he) since the strife is within our owne home, if you loose, you loose all that in this life can bee deare vnto you: if you winne, it will be a bloody victorie with no profite, but the flattering in our felues that fame badde humour of revenge. Besides, it is like to stirre Arcadia vpon vs, which nowe, by vifing these persons well, maie bee brought to some amitie. Lastly, but especially, least the king and nobility of Latoonia (with whom now we haue made a perfect peace) should hope, by occasion of this quarrell to joyn the Arcadians with them, & so breake of the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In summe, as in al deliberations (waying the profite of the good successe with the harme of the euill successe) you shall find this way most safe and honorable.

The Helots alsmuch moused by his authoritie, as perswaded by his reasons, were content therewith. Whereupon, Palladius tooke order that the Arcadians should presently march out of the town, taking with them their prisoners, while the night with mutual diffidence might kepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and to avoid those accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarrel might engeder. This being on both sides concluded
concluded on, Kalandar and Clitophon; who now (with infinite joy did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feet of Daiphantus: Clitophon telling his father, how Daiphantus (not without danger to himselfe) had preferred him from the furious malice of the Helots: & even that day going to conclude the peace (lest in his absence he might receive some hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, vpon promise he should take the parte of the Helots, which he had in this fight performed, little knowing that it was against his father: but (said Clitophon) here is he, who (as a father) hath new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath saued me from many deaths, which already laid hold on me: which Kalandar with teares of joy acknowledged (besides his owne deliuerance) only his benefite. But Daiphantus, who loued doing well for himselfe, and not for thanks, brake of those ceremonies, desiring to know how Palladius (for he called Mufidorus) was come into that companie, & what his present estate was: whereof receiuing a brief declaration of Kalandar, he sent him word by Clitophon, that he should not as now come vnto him, because he held himselfe not so sure a master of the Helots minds, that he would aduenture him in their power, who was so well knowen with an unfriendly acquaintance, but that he desired him to return with Kalandar, whether also he within few daies (hauling dispatched himselfe of the Helots) would repaire. Kalandar would needes kiffe his hande againe for that promise, protestong he would esteeme his house more blessed then a temple of the gods, if it had once receiued him. And then desiring pardon for Argalus Daiphantus assured them that hee woulde die, but hee woulde bring him, (though
(though till then kept in close prison, indeed for his safety, the Helots being so animated against him as else hee could not haue liued) and so taking their leave of him, Kalander, Clistophon, Palladius and the rest of the Arcadians swearing that they would no further in any sorte molest the Helots, they straight way marched out of the towne, carrying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by morning were already within the limits of Arcadia.

**CHAP. 7,**

The articles of peace betwene the Lacedæmonians & Helots: 1 Daiphatus his departure fro the Helots with Argalus to Kalanders house. 2 The offer of a strange Lady to Argalus + his refusal, and 3 who she was.

He Helots of the other side shutting their gates, gaue them selues to burye their dead, to cure their woued, and rest their weered bodies: till (the next day bestowing the chereful vse of the light vp on them) Daiphantus making a generall conuocation spake vnto them in this manner. We are first (said he) to thanke the Gods, that (further then wee had either cause to hope; or reason to imagine) haue delivered vs out of this gulf of danger, wherein we were alredie swallowed. For all being lost, (had they had not directed, my
my return so iust as they did) it had bene too late to re-"couer that, which being had, we could not keep. And had I not happened to know one of the principall men among them, by which means the truce beganne betweene vs, you may easily conceiue, what little reason we haue to think, but that either by some supplie out of Arcadia, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would haue made fruities of wisdome grow out of this occasion,) wee should haue had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and sorrow. But now the storme, as it fell out, so it ceased: and the error committed, in retaining Clitophon more hardly then his age or quarrell deferred, becomes a sharply learned experience, to vs in other times more moderation.

Now haue I to deliver vnto you the conclusion betweene the Kings with the Nobilitie of Lacedæmon, and you, which is in all points as your selues desired: as well for that you would haue graunted, as for the assurance of what is graunted. The Townes and Fortes you presently haue, are still left vnto you, to be kept either with or without garrison, so as you alter not the lawes of the Countrie, and pay such duties as the rest of the Laconians doe. Your selues are made by publique decree, free men, and so capable both to give and receiue voice in election of Magistrates. The distinction of names betweene Helots and Lacedæmonians to bee quite taken away, and all indifferently to enjoy both names and priuileges of Laconians. Your children to be brought vp with theirs in Spartane discipline: and so you (framing your selues to be good members of that estate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer servants.

Which
The Countesse of Pembroke's

which conditions you see, carry in themselves no more contention than assurance. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Lastly, a forgetfulness decreed of all what is past, they shewing themselves glad to have so valiant men as you are, joined with them: so that you are to take mindes of peace, since the cause of war is finished, and as you hated them before like oppres-sours, so now to love them as brothers; to take care of their estate because it is yours, and to labour by vertuous doing, that the posteritie may not repent your ioyning. But now one Article onely they stood vpon, which in the end I with your commissioners have agreed vnto, that I should no more tarry here, mistaking perchaunce my humor, and thinking me as sedicious as I am young, or els it is the king Amiclas procuring, in respect that it was my il hap to kil his nephew Eurileon; but howsoever it be, I haue confiscended. But so will not wee cryed almost the whole assemblie, counselling one an other, rather to trie the vtermoost event, then to loose him by whom they had beene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of most credit, made them throughly see how necessary it was to preferre such an opportunity before a vaine affection; but yet could not peruaile, til openly he sware, that he would (if at any time the Lacedemonians brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

So then after a few dayes, setting them in perfect order, hee tooke his leave of them, whose eyes had him farwell with teares, & mouthes with kissing the places where he stept, and after making temples vnto him as
to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of
humanitie to haue a witt so farre ouergoing his age, and
such dreadful terror proceed from so excellent beutie.
But he for his sake obtayned free pardon for Argalus,
whom also (vpon oath never to beare armes against
the Helots) he deliuered: and taking onely with him
certaine principall Jewells of his owne, he would haue
parted alone with Argalus (whose countenaunce wel
shewed, while Parthenia was lost he counted not him-
selxe deliuered) but that the whole multitude would
needs gard him into Arcadia. Where again leaving the-
all to lament his departure, he by enquirie gotte to
the wel-knowne house of Kalendar: There was he re-
ceived with louing joye of Kalendar, with joyfull loue
of Palladius, with humble (though doulful) demeanor
of Argalus (whom specially both he and Palladius re-
garded) with gratefull seruialenes of Clitophon, and
honourable admiration of all. For being now well
veiwed to haue no haire of his face, to witnes him a
man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man,
and to looke with a certaine almost basefull kinde of
modestie, as if hee feared the eyes of men, who was
vnprouded with sight of the most horrible counte-
naunces of death; and as if nature had mistaken her
woorke to haue a Marses heart in a Cupides bodye: All
that beheld him (and al that might behold him; did be-
hold him) made their eyes quicke messengers to their
minds, that there they had seene the vtermost that
in mankind might be seene. The like wonder Palladius
had before stirred, but that Daiphantus, as younger and
newer come, had gotten now the aduantage in the
moyst & fickle impression of eye-sight. But while all
men
The Countesse of Pembroke's men-(seeing poor Argalus) made the joy of their eyes speake for their harts towards Daiphantus: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, & ment then to play the good fellow) brought a pleasaut adventure among the.

It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to Kalander a messanger, that brought him word, a young noble Lady, neere kinswoman to the fair Helen Queene of Corinth, was come thether, and desired to be lodged in his house. Kalander (most glad of such an occasion) went out, and all his other worthie guests with him, saving onely Argalus, who remained in his chamber, desirous that this company were once broken vp, that he might goe in his solitarie queft after Parthenia. But when they met this Lady; Kalander streight thought he sawe his niece Parthenia, and was about in such familiar forme to haue spoken vnto her: But she in grave and honorable manner giuing him to understand that he was mistaken, he halfe afielded, excused himselfe with the exceeding likenes was betwene them, though indeede it seemed that his Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion; she said, it might very well be, having bene many times taken one for another. But as soon as she was brought into the house, before she would rest her, she desired to speake with Argalus publickly, who she heard was in the house. Argalus came in hastily, and as haftelie thought as Kalander had done, with sodaine chaunges of ioye into sor-row. But she thow she had stayd their thoughts with telling them her name, and qualitie in this forme speake vnto him. My Lord Argalus, sayd she, being of late left in the court of Queene Helen of Corinth, as chiefe in her absence (she being vpo some occasion gone there)
there came unto me the Lady Parthenia, so disguised, as I thinke Greece hath nothing so ougly to behold. For my part, it was many dayes, before with vehement othes, and some good proofes, she could make me thinke that she was Parthenia. Yet at last finding certenly it was she, and greatly pitying her misfortune, so much the more, as that all men had ever told me, (as now you doo) of the great likenes betwene vs, I tooke the best care I could of her land of her vnderstood the whole tragicall historie of her vndefuered aduenture: and therewithall, of that most noble constancie in you my Lord Argalus: which whofoeuer loues not, shewes himselfe to be a hater of vertue, and vnworthie to liue in the societie of mankind. But no outward cherishing could salue the inward sore of her minde, but a fewe dayes since shee died: before her death earnestly desiring, and perswading me, to thinke of no husbande but of you; as of the onely man in the world worthie to be loued, with-all, she gaue me this Ring to deliver you, desiring you, & by the authoritie of Ioue comandung you, that the affection you bare her you shoule turne to me: assuring you, that nothing can please her soule more, then to see you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) futable to my estate nor sex, who shuld rather looke to be desired; yet, an extraordinarie desert requires an extraordinarie proceeding: and thersfore I am come (with faithfull loue built vpo your worthines) to offer my self, & to beseech you to accept the offer: & if these noble gentlemé prefer will say it is great folly, let the withal, say it is great Ioue. And then she staid, earnestly attending Argalus his answer, who (first making most hartie sighes do such obsequies as he could,) to Parthenia) thus answered her.
Madame (said he) infinitely bound am I vnto you, for this, no more rare, then noble courtesie; but most bound for the goodnes I perceiue you shewed to the lady Parthenia, (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes, but he followed on) and as much as so unfortunat a man, fitte to be the spectacle of miserie, can doo you service, determine you haue made a purchase of a slaue (while I liue) neuer to fayle you. But this great matter you propose vnto me, wherein I am not so blind, as not to see what happines it should be vnto mee; Excellent Ladie, know, that if my hart were mine to giue, you before al other, shoulde haue it; but Parthenias it is, though dead: there I began, there I end all matter of affection: I hope I shall not long tarry after her, with whose beautie if I had onely been in loue, I should be so with you, who haue the same beautie: but it was Parthenias selfe I loued, and loue, which no likenes can make one, no comauendement dissolue, no soulnes desile, nor no death finish. And shal I receiue (said she) such disgrace, as to be refused? Noble Ladie (said he) let not that harde word be vsed, who know your exceeding worthinesse farre beyond my desir: but it is onely happinesse I refuse, since of the onely happines I could and can desire, I am refused.

He had scarce spoken those words, when she ranne to him, and imbrasing him, Why then Argalus (said she) take thy Parthenia, and Parthenia it was in deede. But because forow forbade him too soon to beleue, she told him the truthe, with all circumstances, how being parted alone, meaning to die in some solitarie place, as she hapned to make her complaint, the Queen Helen of Corinth (who likewise felt her part of miferies) being then
then walking also alone in that louely place, heard her, and neuer left, till she had knowne the whole discourse. Which the noble Queene greatly pittyng, she sent her to a Phifition of hers, the most excellent man in the worlde, in hope he could helpe her: which in such forte as they law perfourmed, and she taking with her of the Queens servaunts, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true Parthenia, or no. Her speach was confirmed by the Corinthian Gentlemen, who before had kept her counsell, and Ar- galus easily persuaded to what more then ten thousand yeares of life he desired: and Kalander would needes haue the mariadge celebrated in his house, principallie the longer to hold his deare guestes, towards whom he was now (besides his owne habite of hospitallitie) carried with loue and dutie: & threfore omitted no service that his wit could inuent, and his power minister.

C H A P. 8.

The adventures first of Musidorus, then of Pyrocles since their shipwracke, to their meeting. The mariadge of Ar- galus and Parthenia.

Vt no waie he sawe he could so much pleasiure them, as by leaving the two friends alone, who being shrunkne aside to the banqueting house where the pictures were; there Palladius recounted vnto him, that after they had both abandooned the burning ship ( & either
The Countesse of Pembroke's

of them taken some thing vnder him the better to supporte him to the shore) he knew not how, but either with over-labouring in the sight and sodaine colde, or the too much receaung of salt water, he was past himselfe: but yet holding fast (as the nature of dying men is too doo) the chesst that was vnder him, he was cast on the sondes, where he was taken vp by a couple of Shepheardes, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning him selfe, when he despaired of his safetie. How after hauing failed to take him into the fisher boate, he had by the Shepheardes persuasion come to this Gentlemans house, where being daunge-rouslic sicke, he had yeelded to seeke the recovery of health, onely for that he might the sooner go seeke the deliuerie of Pyrocles: to which purpose Kalander by some friends of his in Messenia, had alreadie set a ship or two abroad, when this accident of Clitophons taking had so blessedly procured their meeting. The did he set foorth vnto him the noble entertainment and careful cherishing of Kalander towards him, & so vpon occasiō of the pictures present deliuered with the franknesse of a friends tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what Kalander had told him touching the strange storie (with all the particularities belonging) of Arcadia, which did in many sortes so delight Pyrocles to heare; that he would needs haue much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till Kalander himselfe had answered him divers questions.

But first at Musidorus request, though in briefe maner, his mind much running vpō the strange storie of Arcadia, he did declare by what course of aduertures he was come to make vp their mutuall happinesse in meeting. When
When (colin, said he) we had stript our selves, and were both leapt into the Sea, and sion a little toward the shoare, I found by reason of some wounds I had, that I should not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the maff of the shippe, where you found me, assuring my selfe, that if you came alieue to the shore, you would seek me; if you were lost, as I thought it as good to perishe as to liue, so that place as good to perish in as another. There I found my fworde among some of the shrowds, wishing (I must confesse) if I died, to be found with that in my hand, and with all waiving it about my head, that saylers by it might haue the better glimpse of me. There you missing me, I was taken vp by Pyrates, who putting me vnder boorde prisoner, prefentlie set upon another shippe, and maintaining a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the fworde. Amongst whom I might heare them greatlie prayse one younge man, who fought most valiantlie, whom (as loue is carefull, and misfortune subiect to doubtfullnes) I thought certainly to be you. And so holding you as dead, from that time till the time I sawe you, in trueth I fought nothing more then a noble ende, which per-chance made me more hardie then otherwise I would haue bene. Triall whereof came within two daycs after: for the Kingses of Lacedemon hauing sett out some Galleys, vnder the charge of one of their Nephews to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with vs, where our Captaine wanting men, was druen to armie some of his prisoners, with promife of libertie for well fighting; amongst whom I was one, and being boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to
The Countesse of Pembroke

kil Euriflon the Kings nephew: but in the end they pre-
uailed, & we were all take prisoners: I not caring much
what became of me (only keeping the name of Dari-
phantus, according to the resolution you know is be-
tweene vs,) but byey laid in the whyle of Tenaria, with
speciall sort of that towne conspird with the Helots, and so
by night opened them the gates, where entring and
killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honestie
false brake open all prisons, and so deliverd me; and
I mooved with gratefulnesse, and encouraged with
carelesnesse of life, so behaued my selfe in some con-
flicts they had in fewe dayes, that they barbarouslie
thinking unsensible wonders of mee, and withall so
much they better trusting mee, as they heard I was
hated of the Kinge of Lacedemon, (their chiefe Capt-
tayne beyng slaine as you knowe by the noble Argal-
us, who helped therevnto by his persuas Ion) hav-
ing borne a great affection vnto me, and to auoyde
the daungerous emulation whiche grewe among the
chiefe, who should haue the place, and all so affected,
as rather to haue a straunger then a competiour, they
elected mee, (God wotte little prowde of that digni-
tie,) restorind vnto mee such things of mine as being
taken first by the pyrates, and then by the Lacedemo-
nians, they had gotten in the sake of the towne. Now
being in it, so good was my successe with manie vi-
tories, that I made a peace for them to their owne
liking; the verie daie that you delivered Cithophon,
whom I with much ado had prefered. And in my
peace the King Amicas of Lacedemon would needes
have mee bannished, and deprived of the dignitie
where-
whereunto I was exalted: which (and you may see howe much you are bounde to mee) for your sake I was content to suffer, a newe hope rising in mee, that you were not dead: and so meaning to travaile ouer the worlde to seeke you; and now here (my deere Musidorus) you haue mee. And with that (embracing and kissinge each other) they called Kalander, of whom Daiphantus desirde to heare the full storie, which before hee had recounted to Palladius, and to see the letter of Philanax, which hee read and well marked.

But within some daies after, the marriage beweene Argalus and the faire Parthenia beyng to be celebraded, Daiphantus and Palladius telling some of their iweels, furnished themselves of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their louing hoste; who as much for their fakes, as for the marriage, set forth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine dackinges so much beautifie, nor all the daintie deuifes so much delight, as the fairenesse of Parthenia, the pearle of all the maydes of Mantinae: who as shee went to the Temple to bee married, her eyes themselfes seemed a temple, wherein loue and beautie were married: her lippes, although they were kepte close with modest silence, yet with a pretie kinde of naturall swelling, they seemed to invite the guestes that looke on them; her checkes blushing, and withal when shee was spoken vnto, a little smilyng, were like roses, when their leaues are with a little breath stirred: her hayre being layed at the full length downe her backe, bare shewe as if the voward sayled, yet that would

F 3 conquer.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

conquere. Daiphantus marking her, O Jupiter (saying he speaking to Palladius) how happens it, that Beautie is only confined to Arcadia? But Palladius not greatly attending his speech, some days were continued in the solemnizing the marriage, with all concepts that might deliver delight to mens fancies.

CHAP. 9.

Pyrocles his inclination to love. * His, and Musidorus disputations thereabouts; broken off by Kalander.

Vt such a change was grown in Daiphantus, that (as if cheerfulness had been tediousness, and good entertainment were turned to discourtesy) he would ever get him selfe alone, though almost when he was in company was alone, so little attention he gave to any that spake unto him: even the colour and figure of his face began to receive some alteration; which he shewed little to heede: but everyday morning earlie going abroad, either to the garden, or to some woods towards the desert, it seemed his only comfort was to be without a comforter. But long it could not be hid from Palladius, whom true love made ready to marke, & long knowledge able to marke; & therefore being nowgrowed weary of his abode in Arcadia, having informed himself fully of the strength & riches of the country, of the nature of the people, and manner of their laws; and, being
feing the courte could not be visited, prohibited to all men, but to certaine sheapearish people, he greatly desired a speedy returne to his own countrie, after the many mazes of fortune he had troden. But perceiving this great alteration in his friend, he thought first to breake with him thereof, and then to haften his returne; whereof he founde him but smally inclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances, as if he were disputing with the trees, began in this manner to say unto him.

A mind well trayned and long exercis'd in vertue (my sweete and worthy cosin) doth not easily change any course it once undertakes, but vpon well grounded & well wayed causes. For being witnes to its selfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of so high a price, for which it should be altered. Even the very countenaunce and behauior of such a man doth shew forth Images of the same constancy, by maintaining a right harmonie betwixt it and the inward good, in yeelding it selfe sutable to the vertuous resolution of the minde. This speech I direct to you (noble friend Pyrocles) the excellencie of whose minde and well chosen course in vertue, if I doo not sufficiently know, hauing seene such rare demonstrations of it, it is my weakenes, and not your vnworthines. But as in deede I know it, and knowing it, most dearely love both it; and him that hath it; so must I needs saye, that since our late comming into this country, I haue marked in you, I will not say an alteration, but a relenting truely, & a fllacking of the maine career, you had so notably begun, & almost performed
formed, and that in such sorte, as I cannot finde sufficient reason in my great loue toward you how to allow it; for (to leau of other secretar arguments which my acquaintaunce with you makes me easily finde) this in effect to any manne may be manyst, that whereas you were wont in all places you came, to giue your selfe vehemently to the knowledge of those things which might better your minde; to seeke the familiartye of excellent men in learning and souldiery: and lastly, to put all these things in practice both by continuall wise proceedinge, and worthie enterpris, as occasion fell for them; you now leau all these things undone: you let your minde fall asleep: beside your countenaunce troubled (which surely comes not of vertue, for vertue like the cleare heaven, is without cloudes) and lastly you subject your selfe to solitaries, the flye enemie, that doth most separate a man from well doing. *Pyrocles* minde was all this while so fixed vpoun another devotion, that he no more attentively marked his friends discourse, then the childe that hath leau to playe, markes the last part of his lesson; or the diligent Pilot in a daungerous tempest doth attend the vnskilful words of a passinger: yet the very sound hauing imprinted the general point of his speech in his hart, pierced with any mislike of so deeerey an esmeened friend, and desirous by degrees to bring him to a gentler consideration of him, with a shamefast looke (withouting he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) answered him to this purpose. Excellent Musidorus, in the praise you gaue me in the beginning of your spech, I easly acknowledge the force of your good will vnto mee, for neither coulde you
you have thought so well of me, it extremity of love had not made your judgment partial, nor you could have loved me so tenderly, if you had not been apt to make so great (though undeferred) judgments of me; and even so must I say to those imperfections, to which though I have ever through weakness been subject, yet you by the daily medly of your mind have of late been able to look into them, which before you could not discern; so that the change you speak of, falls not out by my impairing, but by your bettering. And yet under the leave of your better judgment, I must needs say thus much, my deere cousin, that I find not my selfe wholly to be condemned, because I do not with continuall vehemency follow those knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde itself must (like other things) sometimes be vnbenent, or else it will be either weakned, or broken: And these knowledges, as they are of good use, so are they not all the minde may stretch it selfe vnto: who knowes whether I feeke not my minde with higher thoughts. Trulie as I know not all the particularities, so yet I see the bounds of all these knowledges: but the workings of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can be fed vnto by the eye, or imagined by any, that distract their thoughts without themselves. And in such contemplation, or as I think more excellent, I enjoye my solitarines, and my solitarines perchaunce is the nurse of these contemplations. Eagles we see fly alone; and they are but sheepe, which alwaies heard together; condemne not therefore my minde sometime to enjoy it selfe, nor blame not the taking of such times as serue most fitte for it. And alas, deere misidorus, if I be sadde,
The Comtesse of Pembroke's

who knowes better then you the just causes I haue of

fades? And here Pyrocles sodainly stopped, like a man

unsatisfied in himselfe, though his witte might well haue

served to haue satisfied another. And so looking with

a countenance, as though he desired he should know

his minde without hearing him speake, and yet de-

sirous to speake, to breath out some part of his inward

euill, sending againe new blood to his face, he con-

tinued his speach in this manner. And Lord (dese cosin,

said he) doth not the pleasauantnes of this place carry in

itselfe sufficient reward for any time lost in it? Do you

not see how all things conspire together to make this
country a heauenly dwelling? Do you not see the graffe

how in colour they excell the Emeralds, euerie one

striuing to passe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of

an equal height? And see you not the rest of these beau-
tifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit

to know, and his life to express? Do not these stately
trees seeme to maintaine their florishing olde age with

the onely happines of their feat, being clothed with a

continuall spring, because no beautie here should ever

doe? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds

delightfull both to eare and eye) do dayly solemnize

with the sweet consent of their voyces: Is not every echo

therof a perfect Musicke: and these fresh and delightful

brookes howslowly they slide away, as loth to leave the

company of so many things united in perfection: and

with how sweete a murmure they lament their

forced departure? Certainelie, certainly, cosin, it must

needs be that some Goddesse inhabitteth this Region,

who is the soule of this soile: for neither is any,

leste then a Goddesse, worthie to be shrined in such

a heap of pleasures: nor any leste the a Goddesse, could

haue
haue made it so perfect a plotte of the celestiall dwellings. And so ended with a deep sigh, rusfully casting his eye vpon Mysidorum, as more desirous of pitie the pleading. But Mysidorus had all this while helde his looke fixed vpon Pyrocles countenance; and with no lesse looking attention marked how his words proceeded from him: but in both these he perceived such strange diversities, that they rather increased new doubts, then gave him ground to settle any judgement: for, besides his eyes sometimes even great with teares, the oft chaging of his colour, with a kind of shaking unstayednes over all his body, he might see in his countenace some great determinatiō mixed with feare; and might perceive in him store of thoughts, rather stirred then digested; his words interrupted continually with sighes (which served as a burthen to each sentence) and the tenor of his speech (though of his wōted phrase) not knit together to one conflat end, but rather dissoled in it selfe, as the vehemencie of the inwarde passion preuayled: which made Mysidorus frame his aunswere neerest to that humor, which should soonest put out the secret. For, having in the beginning of Pyrocles speech which defended his solitarine, framed in his minde a replie against it, in the praise of honourable action, in shewing that such a kind of cótēplatiō is but a glorious title to idlenes; that in actiō a man did not onely better himself, but benefit others; that the gods would not haue deliuercd a soule into the body, which hath armes & legges, only instrumenets of doing, but that it were intended the mind should imploy the, & that the mind should onely know his own good or euill, by præctise: which knowledge was the onely way to increase the one, and correct the other: besides many other argumentes, which the plentifulnesse of the matter yeeledd to the sharpnes of his wit-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

When he found Pyrocles leave that, and fall into such an affected praising of the place, he left it likewise, and joyned with him therein: because he found him in that humor utter more store of passion; and even thus kindly embracing him, he said: Your words are such (noble cousin) so sweetly and strongly handled in the praise of solitariness, as they would make me likewise yeeld my selfe vp into it, but that the same words make me know, it is more pleasant to enjoy the companie of him that can speake such words, then by such wordes to be per- swaded to follow solitarines. And euen so doo I giue you leaue (sweet Pyrocles) euer to defend solitarines; so long, as to defende it, you euer keep companie. But I maruell at the excessive praises you giue to this coun- trie;in truth it is not vnpleasant: but yet if you would returne into Macedonia, you should see either many hea- uens, or find this no more then earthly. And euë Temple in my Thessalia, (where you & I to my great happinesse were brought vp together) is nothinginferiour vnto it. But I think you will make me see, that the vigor of your witte can shew it selfe in any subiect: or els you feeede sometimes your solitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whose liberall penes can as easlie travaile ouer mountaines, as molehils: and so like wel disposed men, set vp every thing to the highest note; especially, when they put such words in the mouths of one of these fan- tasticall mind-infected people, that children & Musitiä's cal Louers. This word, Louer, did nolesse pearce poore Pyrocles, then the right tune of musicke toucheth him that is fikk of the Tarantula. There was not one part of his body, that did not feele a sodaine motion, while his hart with panting, seemed to daunce to the sounde of
that word, yet after some pause (lifting vp his eyes a little from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of Musidorus) armed with the verie countenance of the poore prisoner at the barr, whose aunswere is no-
thing but guilty: with much ado he brought forth this question. And alas, saide he, deare cosyn, what if I be not so much the Poet (the freedome of whose penne canne exercise it selfe in any thing) as even that mis-
erable subiect of his conning, whereof you speake? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainely cryed out Musidorus) that euer my care should be poysioned with so euill newes of you. O let me never know that any base affectiō shulde get any Lordship in your thoughts. But as he was speaking more, Kalander came, and brake of their discoure, with inuiting the to the hunteing of a goodly stagge, which beeing harbored in a wood thence, he hoped would make them good sporde, and drue away some part of Daiphantus melancholy. They condiscended, & so going to their lodgings, furnished the selues as liked them Daiphantus writing a few vvordes vvhich he left in a sealed letter against their returne.

CHAP. 10.
Kalander's hunting. * Daiphantus his close departure, * 
and letter * Palladius his care, and, * quest after him, 
* accompanied with Clitophon. * His finding and 
taking on Amphilus his armor * Their encounter 
with Quene Helens attendants. * Her mistaking Pal-
ladius.

Hen went they together abroad, the good 
Kalander entertaining the, with pleasaunt 
discourcings, howe well he loued the sporde 
of hunting vwhene he was a young man,
how much in the comparison thereof he disdained all chamber delights; that the Sunne (how great a iornic focuer he had to make) could never prevent him with earlines, nor the Moone (with her sober countenance) dissuade him from watching till midnight for the deer es feeding. O, saide he, you will never live to my age, if without you kepe your felues in breath with exercise, and in hart with joyfullnes: too much thinking doth confume the spirits: & oft it falles out, that while one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaues to doe the effect of his thinking. Then spared he not to remember how much Arcadia was chaunged since his youth: actiuitie & good fellowship being nothing in the price it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, still worse & worse. The would he tell them stories of such gallyants as he had known: and so with pleasant company beguiled the times haft, and shortned the wayes length, till they came to the side of the wood, where the houndes were in couples staying their coming, but with a whining Accent craving libertie: many of them in colour and marks so resembling, that it showed they were of one kinde. The huntsmen handsonely attired in their greene liqueries, as though they were children of Sommer, with staves in their hands to beat the guiltlesse earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with horses about their neckes to sound an alaran upon a sille fugitieve. The houndes were straight uncoupled, and ere long the Stagge thought it better to trust the nimblenes of his feete, then to the slender fortification of his lodging: but even his feete betrayed him; for how focuer they went, they themselves verted themselues to the sent of their enimies; who one taking it of an other.
other, and sometimes believing the windes advertisements, sometimes the view of (their faithfull counsellors) the huntsmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was alreadie begun. Their crie being composed of so well sorted mouthes, that any man would perceive therein some kind of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did finde a mulick. Then delight and variety of opinion drew the huntsmen sundrie ways, yet cheering their houndes with yoyce and horn, kept still (as it were) together. The wood seemed to conspire with them against his own citizens, dispersing their noife through all his quarters; and even the Nimph Echo left to bewaye the losse of Narcissus, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end so hotly pursuied, that (leaving his flight) he was driuen to make courage of despaire; & so turning his head, made the hounds (with change of speech) to testify that he was at bay: as if from hotte pursuite of their enemie, they were sodainly come to a parley.

But Kalander (by his skill of coasting the Countrey) was among the first that came in to the besiged Deere; whom when some of the younger fort would have killed with their swordes, he woulde not suffer: but with a Croslebowe sent a death to the poore beast, who with teares shewed the unkindnesse he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the whole companie was assembled, and that the Stagge had bestowed himselfe liberally among them that had killed him, Daiphantius was mist, for whom Palladins carefully enquiring, no newes could be giuen him, but by one that sayd, he thought
he was returned home; for that he markt him, in the
chive of the hunting, take a by way, which might lead
to Kalanders house. That answer for the time satisfying,
and they hauing perfourmed all diuties, as well for the
Stagges funeral, as the hounds triumph, they returned:
some talking of the fatnes of the Deeres bodie; some of
the fairenes of his head; some of the hounds cunning;
some of their speed; and some of their cry: til comming
home (about the time that the candle begins to inherit
the Suns office) they found Daiphantus was not to bee
found. Whereat Palladius greatly maruailing, and a day
or two passing, while neither search nor inquirie could
help him to knowledge, at last he lighted upon the let-
ter, which Pyrocles had written before he went a hunt-
ing, and left in his studie among other of his writings.
The letter was directed to Palladius himselfe, and con-
teyned these words.

My onely friend, violence of loue leads me into
such a course, wherof your knowledgemay much more
vexe you, then help me. Therefore pardon my concea-
ling it from you, since: if I wrong you, it is in respect
I beare you. Returne into Theffalia, I pray you, as full
of good fortune, as I am of desire: and if I live, I will in
short time follow you; if I die, loue my memorie.

This was all, and this Palladius read twice or thrice
ouer. Ah (said he) Pyrocles, what meanes this alteratि?
what haue I defereu of thee, to be thus banished of
thy counsels? Heretofore I haue accused the sea, con-
demned the Pyrats, and hated my euill fortune, that
deriuied me of thee. But now thy selfe is the sea, which
drounes my comfort, thy selfe is the Pirat that robbes
thy selfe of me: Thy ouvne yeuill becomes my euill for-
tune
tune. The turned he his thoughts to all forms of ghesles that might light upon the purpose and course of *Pyrocles*: for he was not to sure by his wordes, that it was loue, as he was doubtful where the loue was. One time he thought, some beautie in *Laconia* had layed hold of his eyes; an other time he feared, that it might be *Parthenias* excellencie, which had broken the bands of all former resolution. But the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of objections rising against any accepted opinion.

Then as carefull he was what to doo himselfe: at length determined, never to leave seeking him, till his search should be either by meeting accomlished, or by death ended. Therefore (for all the vnkindnesse bearing tender respect, that hisfriends secreete determination should be kept from any suspicion in others) he went to *Kalander*, and told him, that he had receaued a message from his friend, by which he understood he was gone backe againe into *Laconia*, about some matters greatly importing the poore men, whose protection he had undertaken, and that it was in any sorte fit for him, to follow him, but in such private wise, as not to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell: arming him selfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or prognostication of his mind: and taking onely with him good store of monie, and a fewe choise ieweles, leaving the greatest number of them, & most of his apparell with *Kalander*: which he did partly to give the more cause to *Kalander* to expect their return, & so to be the lesse curiously inquisitieu after the: and partly to leave those honorable thankes vnto him, for his charge & kindnes, which he knew he would no other way receaue. The good old man having nei-
The Cottum of Pembrokes

ther reason to dissuade, nor hope to persuade, recea-
ved the things, with mind of a keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, desired he might have the happi-
nces, fully to know what they were: which he said, he had ever till then delaid, fearing to be any way impor-
tune: but now he could not be so much an enemie to
his desires as any longer to imprison the in silence. Pal-
ladius tolde him that the matter was not so secret, but
that so worthie a friend deferred the knowledge, and
shuld haue it as soone as he might speak with his frie-
d: without whose consent (because their promise bound
him otherwise) he could not reveale it: but bad him
hold for most assured, that if they liued but a while, he
should find that they which bare the names of Daiph-
tus and Palladius, would give him & his cause to thinke
his noble courteous wel imploied. Kalader would presse
him no further: but desiring that he might have leve
ge to go, or at least to sende his sonne and seruants with
him, Palladius brake of all ceremonies, by telling him;
his case stood so, that his greatest favour should be in
making left adoo of his parting. Wherewith Kalander
knowing it to be more cimber then courteous, toftriue,
abstained from further urgeing him, but not from hartie
mourning the losse of so sweet a conversacion.

6 Onely Citophon by vehement importunitie obtained
to go with him, to come againe to Daiphantus, whom he named and accounted his Lord. And in such
private guise departed Palladius, though having a com-
pañiō to talke with all, yet talkeing much more with vn-
kindnesse. And first they went to Mantinea, whereof
because Parthenia was, he suspected there might be
some cause of his abode. But finding there no newes
of him he went to Tegae, Ripa, Enisse, Stiphalus, and
Pheneus,
Phenexus, famous for the poisonous Stygian water, and through all the rest of Arcadia, making their eyes, their ears, and their tongue servel almost for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but that in none of those places he was knewne. And so went they, making one place succeed to another, in like uncertainie to their search, manie times encountering strange aduertures, worthy to be registred in the roules of fame; but this may not be omitted. As they past in a pleasant valley, (of either side of which high hills lifted vp their beetle-browes, as if they would ouer looke the pleasantnes of their vnder-prospect) they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearines of the felues, invited to light from their horses, & pulling of their bits, that they might something refresh their mouths upon the grasse (which plentifully grewe, brought vp vnder the care of those wel shading trees,) they thelfues laid the downe hard by the murmuring musick of certain waters, which spouted out of the side of the hills, and in the bottome of the valley, made of many springs a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many families: but when they had a while harkened to the persuasion of sleepe, they rose, and walked onward in that shadie place, till Clitophon espied a piece of armour, & not far of an other piece: and so the sight of one piece teaching him to looke for more, he at length found all, with headpiece & shield, by the devise whereof, which was he straight knew it to be the armour of his cousin, the noble Amphialus. Wherupon (fearing some incoueniencie hapned vnto him,) he told both his doubte, and his cause of doubte to Palladus, who (considering therof) thought best to make no longer stay, but to follow on; least perchance some violence were
were offered to so worthy a Knight, whom the fame of
the world seemed to set in ballance with any Knight li-
ing. Yet with a sodaine concept, hauing long borne
great honour to the name of Amphialus, Palladins
thought best to take that armoure, thinking thereby to
leare by them that should know that armoure, some
newes of Amphialus, & yet not hinder him in the search
of Daiphantus too. So he by the help of Clitophon quickly
put on that armoure, whereof there was no one piece
wanting, though hacked in some places, bewraying
some fight not long since passed. It was some-thing too
great, but yet serued well enough.

And so getting on their horses, they travailed but a
little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley
into a faire field, they met with a coach drawne with
four milke-white horses, furnished all in blacke, with a
black a more boy vpo every horse, they al apparelled in
white, the coach it self very richly furnished in black &
white. But before they could come so neere as to dis-
verne what was within, there came running vpo them
aboue a dozen horsmen, who cried to the to yeeld the-
selues prisoners, or els they should die. But Palladins
not accustomed to grant ouer the possesiō of him self
vpon so vniust titles, with sword drawne gaue them so
ride an answer, that diuers of the neuer had breath to
reply again: for being wel backt by Clitophon, & hauing
an excellēt horse vnder him, when he was ouerprest by
some, he avoided them, and ere th’other thought of it,
punished in him his fellowes faults: and so, ether with
cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force,
left none of them either liuing, or able to make his life
ferue to others hurt. Which being done, he approched
the coach, assuring the black boies they should haue no
hurt
hurt, who were else readie to have run away, & looking into the coach, he found in the one end a Lady of great beautie, & such a beautie, as shewed forth the beames both of wisdome & good nature, but all as much darkened, as might be, with sorrow. In the other, two Ladies, (who by their demeanour shewed well, they were but her servants) holding before them a picture, in which was a goodly Gentleman (whom he knew not) painted, having in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their eyes being infected with their mistres weeping.

But the chiefe Ladie having not so much as once heard the noise of this conflict, so had sorrow closed vp all the entries of her mind, & looke tied her face to that beloued picture, now the shadow of him falling vp the picture made her cast vp her eie, and seeing the amoure which too wel she knew, thinking him to be Amphialus the Lord of her desires, (bloud coming more freely into her cheekes, as though it would be bold, & yet there growing new againe pale for feare) with a pitiful looke (like one unjustly condemed) My Lord Amphialus (said she) you haue enough punished me: it is time for cruelty to leave you, & euill fortune me; if not I pray you, (& to graunt my prayer sittin time nor place you can haue) accomplish the one cuen now, & finish the other. With that, sorrow impatient to be slowly yttered in her ottre having speeches, poured it selfe so fast in teares, that Palladius could not hold her longer in errour, but pulling of his helmet, Madame (said he) I perceave you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts, let vpon (without any cause giue by me) by some of your servants, whom because I haue in my iust defence euill entreated, I came to make my excuse to you, whom being such as I doo, I find greater cause, why I should crave pardon of you.
When she saw his face, & heard his speech, she looked out of the coach, and seeing her men, some slain, some lying vnder their dead horses, and striving to get from vnder them, without making more account of the matter, Truely (said she) they are well served that durst lift vp their armes against that armour. But Sir Knight, (said she) I pray you tell me, how come you by this armour: for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then haue I more to say vnto you. 

Palladius assured her it was not so, telling her the true manner how he found it. It is like enough (said she) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately vfed. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your prowess hath bereft me of my company: let it yet so farre heale the woundes it selue hath giuen, as to garde me to the next towne. How great soever my business be fayre Ladie (said he) it shall willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first eu'n by the fauour you beare to the Lorde of this noble armour, I coniure you to tell me the storie of your fortune herein, left hereafter when the image of so excellent a Ladie in so strange a plight come before mine eyes, I condemne my selue of want of consideration in not having demanded thus much. Neither aske I it without protestation, that wherein my sworde and faith may auaille you, they shall binde themselves to your service. Your coniuration, fayre Knight (said she) is too strong for my poore spirit to disobey, and that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one vnrelieuable) to grant your wil herein: and to say the truth, a straunge nicenesse were it in me to refraine that from the eares of a person representing so much worthinesse, which I am glad eu'n to rockes and woods to vter.
CHAP. ii.

The story of Queene Helen and her sister Philoxenus her suiter. Amphialus an intercessor for his friends. His praises, birth, and education. Her lone-womme to himselfe. His refusall and departure. Philoxenus wronge-rage against him. Their fight. The death of some of his friends. Amphialus his sorowe and desolation of the Queene. A new onset on Palladius for Amphialus his Armour: whose griefe is ampliied by meeting his dead friends dog. Palladius his parting with Helen and Clitophon.

Now you then that my name is Helen, Queene by birth: and heretofore possession of the faire Citie and territorie of Corinth. I can say no more of myselfe, but beloved of my people: and may justly say, beloved, since they are content to beare with my absence, and folly. But I being left by my father's death, and accepted by my people, in the highest degree, that countrie could receive; albeit one, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickly swarmed full of suitors, some perchance louing my state, others my person, but once I know all of them, howsoever my possessions were in their harts, my beauty (such as it is) was in their mouthes; many strangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne country, to whom either birth or vertue gave courage to avowe so high a desire.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Among the rest, or rather before the rest, was the Lord Philoxenus, sonne and heire to the vertuous noble man Timotheus: which Timotheus was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which pafsed all these) goodnes, and (which followed all these) loue of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countrie. Now this sonne of his I muft say truly, not unworthy of such a father, bending himselfe by all meanes of seruiceablenes to mee, and setting foorth of himselfe to win my fauour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I lefte misliked him then any of the rest: which in some proportion my countenaunce deliuered vnto him. Though I muft protest it was a verie false embassadour, if it deliutred at all any affection, whereof my hart was utterly void, I as then esteeming myselfe borne to rule, & thinking foule score willingly to submit myselfe to be ruled.

But whiles Philoxenus in good sorte pursuéd my fauour, and perchaunce nourished himselfe with ouer much hope, because he found I did in some sorte acknowledge his valew, one time among the rest he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that she looked vpon the picture before her, & straite sighed, & straite teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought to be honoured with such oblations, and the her speach staied the tale, haung brought her to that loke, but that looke haung quite put her out of her tale. But Palladius greatly pitying so sweete a sorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already known, and honoured, besought her for her promise sake, to put silence so longe vnto her moning, til she had recounted the rest of this story.

Why saide she, this is the picture of Amphialus: what neede I say more to you: what care is so barbarous but
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

hath hard of Amphialus: who follows deeds of Armes, but every where findes monument of Amphialus: who is courteous, noble, liberall, but he that hath the example before his eyes of Amphialus: where are all heroicall parts, but in Amphialus: O Amphialus I would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee not so excellent, and yet would I not, that I would so: with that she wept againe, til he againe soliciting the conclusion of her story. Then must you (said she) know the story of Amphialus: for his will is my life, his life my history: and indeed, in what can I better employ my lippes, then in speaking of Amphialus?

This knight then whose figure you see, but whose mind can be painted by nothing, but by the true shape of vertue, is brother sonne to Basilius King of Arcadia, and in his childhood esteemed his heir: till Basilius in his olde yeeres marrying a young and a faire Lady, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beauty: which put by their young cozin from that expectation. Whereupon his mother (a woman of a hauty hart, being daughter to the King of Argos, either disdaining, or fearing, that her sonne should live under the power of Basilius) sent him to that Lorde Timotheus (betwene whom and her dead husband ther had passed freight bands of mutuall hospitality) to be brought vp in company with his sonne Philoxenus.

A happy resolution for Amphialus, whose excellent nature was by this meanes trayned on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could haue, which otherwise it is thought his mother (farre vnworthie of such a sonne) would not haue gien him. The good Timotheus) no leffe louing him then
The Countesse of Pembroke
then his owne sonne: well they grew in yeeres; and shortly occasions fell aptly to tric Amphialus, and all occasions were but steppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was so hard, but his valour overcame: which yet still he so guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts spoken of but he, for his majood, yet as though therein he excelled himselfe, he was commonly called the courteous Amphialus. An endless thing it were for me to tell, how many adventures (terrible to be spoken of) he atchieued: what monsters, what Giants, what conquest of countries: sometimes using policy, some times force, but alwaies vertue, well followed, and but followed by Philoxenus: betweene whom, and him, so fast a friendship by education was knit, that at last Philoxenus having no greater matter to employ his friendship in, then to winne me, therein desiered, and had his uttermost furtherance: to that purpose brought he him to my court, where truly I may justly witnes with him, that what his wit could conceive (and his wit can conceive as far as the limits of reason stretch) was all directed to the setting forward the suite of his friend Philoxenus: my ears could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of Philoxenus, and of the great happines it would be vnto me to haue such a husband: with many arguments, which God knowes, I cannot well remember because I did not much beleue.

For why should I use many circumstances to come to that where alredy I am, and euer while I liue must continue? In fewe wordes, while he pleaded for an other, he wanne me for himselfe: if at least (with that she fighted) he would account it a winning, for his fame had so framed the way to my mind, that his presence so
so full of beauty, sweetness, and noble conversation, had entred there before he vouchsafed to call for the keyes. O Lord, how did my soule hang at his lippes while he spake! O when he in feeling manner would describe the love of his friend, how well (thought I) dooth love betweene those lips! when he would with daintieft eloquence stirre pitie in me toward Philoxenus, why sure (laid I to my selfe) Helen, be not afraid, this hart cannot want pitie: and when he would extol the deeds of Philoxenus, who indeede had but waited of him therin, alas (thought I) good Philoxenus, how euil doth it become thy name to be subscribed to his letter? What should I say: nay, what should I not say (noble knight) who am not ashamed, nay am delighted, thus to express mine owne passions?

Dayes paste, his eagerness for his friendeneue never decreased, my affection to him euer increased. At length, in way of ordinarie courtesie, I obteined of him (who suspected no such matter) this his picture, the only Amphialus, I feare that I shall euer enjoy: and groven bolder, or madder, or bould with madness, I discovered my affection vnto him. But, Lord, I shall neuer forget, how anger and courtesie, at one instant appeared in his eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his blush he taught me shame. In summe, he left nothing vnassayed, which might disgrace himselfe, to grace his frëd; in sweet termes making me receive a most resolute refusal of himselfe. But when he found that his presence did far more perswade for himselfe, then his speche could doo for his friend, he left my court: hoping, that forgetfulness (which commonly wairts vpon absence) woulde make roome for his friende: to whome he woulde not vitter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare
The Countesse of Pembrokes

feare not to grieue him, or perchance (though he cares little for me) of a certaine honorable gratiuelnes, nor yet to discourse so much of my secrets: but as it should seeme, meant to trauell into farre countreyes, vntill his friends affection either ceased, or preuayled.

But within a while, Philoxenus came to see how onward the fruithes were of his friends labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me sitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countenance, but I am sure with a moit affectionate mind. I straight found ielousie and disdain tooke hold of him: and yet the froward paine of mine owne harte made me so delight to punish him, whom I esteemed the chiefeest let in my way; that when he with humble gesture, and vehement speeches, sued for my favor, I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would speake for Amphialus, as well as Amphialus had done for him: he never answered me, but pale and quaking, went straight away; and straight my heart mitigue me some euill successse: and yet though I had authoritie enoughe to haue stayed him (as in these farall things it falles out, that the hie-working powers make second causes vnwittingly accesarie to their determinations) I did no further but sent a foot-man of mine (whose faithfullnes to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings: which (alas) haue brought foorth that which I feare I must euer rewe.

For he had trauailed scarce a dayes iorney out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he over-tooke Amphialus, who (by succouring a distressed Lady) had bene here stayde: and by and by called him to fight
fight with him, protesting that one of the two should die: you may easily judge how strange it was to Amphialus, whose heart could accuse itself of no fault, but too much affection toward him, which he (refusing to fight with him) would faine have made Philoxenus understand, but (as my servant since tolde me) the more Amphialus went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor; and coward, yet neuer telling the cause of this strange alteration. Ah Philoxenus (saide Amphialus) I know I am no Traytor, and thou well knowest I am no coward: but I pray thee content thyselfe with this much, and let this satisfie thee, that I love thee, since I beare thus much of thee, but he leaving words drew his sworde, and gaue Amphialus a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would haue slaine him: and yet so farre did Amphialus containe himselfe, stepping aside, and laying to him, Well Philoxenus, and thus much villany am I content to put vp, not any longer for thy sake (whom I haue no cause to loue, since thou dost injure me, and wilt not tell me the cause) but for thy vertuous fathers sake, to whom I am so much bound. I pray thee goe away, and conquer thy owne passions, and thou shalt make me soone yeeld to be thy servant.

But he would not attend his wordes, but still strake so fiercely at Amphialus, that in the end (nature preuailing aboue determination) he was faine to defend himselfe, and with-all to offend him, that by an vnluckye blow the poore Philoxenus fell dead at his feete, having had time onely to speake some wordes, whereby Amphialus knew it was for my sake: which when Amphialus
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Phialus sawe, he forthwith gave such tokens of true felt sorrow; that as my servant said, no imagination could conceiue greater woe. But that by and by, an unhappie occasion made Amphialus passe himselfe in sorrow: for Philoxenus was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged and vertuous Timotheus, who (hauing heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he fould him dead before he could ouer take him. Though my hart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confesse, it is euene vnable to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing Amphialus and Timotheus as I haue done. Alas what sorrow, what a maleficient, what flame was in Amphialus, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his onely sonne: In my hart I know, he wished mountaines had laine vpon him, to kepe hiin from that meeting. As for Timotheus, sorrow of his sonne and (I thinke principally) vnkindnes of Amphialus so deuoured his vitall spirites that able to say no more but Amphialus, Amphialus, haue I! he sancke to the earth, and presently dyed.

But not my tongue though daily vfed to complaints; no nor if my hart (which is nothing but sorrow) were turned to tongues, durst it vnder-take to shew the vspeakeableness of his griefe. But (because this serues to make you know my fortune,) he threw away his armoure, euin this which you haue now vpon you, which at the first sight I vainely hoped, he had put on againe; and the (as ashamed of the light) he ranne into the thickest of the woods, lamenting, & euin crying out so pittyfully, that my servant, (though of a fortune not
not vied to much tendernes) could not refraine weeping when he tolde it me. He once overtook him, but Amphialus drawing his sword, which was the only part of his armes (God knowes to what purpose) he caried about him, threatened to kill him if he followed him, and withall, bad him deliver this bitter message, that he well enough foud, I was the cause of all this mischiefe: & that if I were a man, he would go over the world to kill me: but bad me assure myself, that of all creatures in the world, he most hated me. Ah Sir knight (whose cares I think by this time are tyred with the rugged wayes of these misfortunes) now way my case, if at least you know what loue is. For this cause haue I left my country, putting in hazard how my people wil in time deale by me, aduenturing what perils or dishonors might ensue, only to folow him, who proclaimeth hate against me, and to bring my neck vnto him, if that may redeem my trespas & alluage his fury. And now sir (said she) you haue your request, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next town, that there I may gather such of my company a-gaine, as your valor hath left me. Palladius willingly co-dicied: but ere they began to go, there cam Clitephon, who hauing bene something hurt by one of them, bad pursuied him a good way: at length overtaking him, & ready to kill him, understood they were servants to the faire Queene Helen, and that the cause of this enterprize was for nothing, but to make Amphialus prisoner, who they knew their mistresse sought: for she concealed her sorrow, nor cause of her sorrow from no body.

But Clitophon (very forie for this accident) came back to comfort the Queene, helping such as were hurt, in the best sort that he could, & framing freedly costructi-
of this rashly undertaken enmity, when in comes another (till that time vnsee) all armed, with his beuer downe, who first looking round about vpom the company, as soone as he spied Palladius, he drew his sword, and making no other prologue, let flie at him. But Palladius (for so much harm as had already happened) sought rather to retire, and warde, thinking he might be some one that belonged to the faire Queene, whose case in his harte he pitied. Which Clitophon seeing, stept betwixt them, asking the new come knight the cause of his quarrell; who answered him, that he would kill that theefe, who had stollen away his masters armour, if he did not restore it. With that Palladius lookt vpon him, and sawe that he of the other side had Palladius owne armour vpon him: truely (said Palladius) if I haue stolne this armour, you did not buy that; but you shall not fight with me vpon such a quarrell, you shall haue this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But Clitophon straight knewe by his words and voyce, that it was Ismenus, the faithfull & diligent Page of Amphialius: and therefore telling him that he was Clitophon, and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who dererued all honour, the yong Gentleman pulled of his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kisse Palladius hands, desiring him to pardon his follie, caused by extreme griefe, which easlie might bring foorth anger. Sweete Gentleman (saide Palladius) you shall onely make me this amends, that you shall caly this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an unknown knight (who admires his worthines) that he cannot cafl a greater miste ouer his glory, the by being vnkind to so excellent a princesse
as this Queene is. Ifmeus promised he would, as soone as he durst find his maister: and with that went to doo his dutie to the Queene, whom in all these encounters astonishment made hardy; but as soone as the saw Ifmeus (looking to her picture) Ifmeus (said she) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me some sentence of death from him? if it be so, welcome be it. I pray you speake; and speake quickly. Alas Madame, said Ifmeus, I haue lost my Lorde, (with that teares came vnto his eyes) for as soone as the vnhappy combate was concluded with the death both of father and sonne, my maister casting of his armour, went his way: forbidding me vpó paine of death to follow him.

Yet divers daies I followed his steppes; till laftly I found him, hauing newly met with an excellent Spanian, belonging to his dead companion Philoxenus. The dog strait fawned on my maister for old knowledge: but never was there thing more pittifull then to heare my maister blame the dog for loving his maisters murderer, renewing a fresh his complaints, with the dumbe counceller, as if they might comfort one another in their miseries. But my Lord hauing spied me, rase vp in such rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he said onely, if I would not displease him, I should not come neere him till he sent for me: too hard a commandement for me to disobey. I yeelded, leaving him onely waited on by his dog, and as I thinke seeking out the most solitarie places, that this or any other country can grant him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found an other in steed thereof, & (disdaining I must confesse that any should beare the armour of the best Knight living) armed my selfe therein to play the

H  foole
The Countesse of Pembroke's
foole, as eué now I did. Faire Ismenes (said the Queen) a fitter messenger could hardly be to vnfold my Tragedie: I see the end, I see my ende.

With that (fobbing) she desired to be conducted to the next towne, where Palladius left her to be waited on by Clisophon, at Palladius earnest entreatie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: & therefore changing armours again with Ismenus (who went withal to a castle belonging to his master) he continued his quest for his friend Daiphantus.

CHAP. 12.

Palladius after long search of Daiphantus, lighteth on an Amazon Ladie. 1 Her habite, 2 song, 3 and who she was. 4 Objections of the one against women, and love of them. 5 The answers of the other for them both. 6 Their passionate conclusion in relenting kindness.

1 directed he his course to Laco
nia, as well among the Helots, as Spartans. There indeed he found his fame flourishing, his monument engraven in Marble, and yet more durable in mens memories; but the universal lamenting his absent presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the Elean prouince, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concourse bleffe his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grewe to him a tedious lonelinesse, efter-
ming no bodie founde, since Daiphantus was lost. Afterward he passed through Achaia and Sicyonia, to the Corinthians, proude of their two Seas, to learne whether by the freight of that Ithmus, it was possible to know of his passage. But finding everie place more dumbe then other to his demands, and remem-bering that it was late-taken love, which had wrought this new course, he returned againe (after two months traumaile in vaine) to make freshe searche in Arcadia; so much the more, as then first he bethought him selfe of the picture of Philoclea (in resembling her he had once loued) might perhaps awake againe that sleeping passion. And having alreadie past ouer the greatest part of Arcadia, one day comming vnder the side of the pleasaunt mountaine Manalus, his horse (nothing guiltie of his inquisitiuenesse) with flat tiring taught him, that discrete stayes make speedie iournes. And therefore lighting downe, and vnbrideling his horse, he him selfe went to repose him selfe in a little wood he sawe thereby. Where lying vnder the protection of a shady tree, with intention to make forgetting sleepe comfort a sorrowfull memorie, he sawe a sight which persuaded, and obtayned of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who because she walked with her side toward him, he could not perfectly see her face, but so much he might see of her, that was a suretie for the rest, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceau the hanging of her haire in fairest quætitie, in locks, some curled, & some as it were forgotten, with such a careless care, & an arte so hiding arte, that she seemed she would lay them for a paternce,
whether nature simply, or nature helped by cunning, be more excellent: the rest whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly set with pearles: and so ioyned all ouer with gold wiers, and couered with feathers of divers colours, that it was not vnlike to an helmet, such a glittering shew it bare, & so brauely it was held vp fro the head. Vpon her bodie she ware a doublet of skie colour fattin, couered with plates of golde, & as it were nailed with precessious stones, that in it she might seeme armed; the nether parts of her garment was so full of stuffe, & cut after such a fashion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might sometimes disce the smal of her leg, which with the foot was dressd in a short paire of crimson velvet buckins, in some places open (as the ancient manner was) to shew the fairenes of the skin. Ouer all this she ware a certaine mantell, made in such manner, that comming vnder the right arme, and couering most of that side, it had no fastning of the left side, but onely vpon the top of the shoulder: where the two endes met, and were closed together with a very riche iewell: the devise whereof (as he after saw) was this: a Hercules made in little foume, but a distaffe set within his hand as he once was by Ompahales commendement with a worde in Grecke, but thus to be interpreted, Neuer more valiant. On the same side, on her thigh shee ware a sword, which as it witnesst her to be an Amazon, or one following that profession, so it seemed but a needless weapon, since her other forces were without withstanding. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might see her enter into a fine close arbour: it was of trees whose branches so louingly interlaced one the other, that
that it could resist the strongest violence of eye-sight, but she went into it by a door she opened; which mowed him as warely as he could to follow her, and by and by he might hear her sing this song, with a voice no lees beautiful to his ears, then her goodlinesse was full of harmonic to his eyes.

Transform'd in shew, but more transform'd in minde,
I cease to strive with double conquest spoil'd:
For (woe is me) my powers all I finde
With outward force, and inward treason spoil'd.

For from without came to mine eyes the blowe,
Wherein mine inward thoughts did faintly yield;
Both these confir'd poore Reasons overthrive,
False in myselfe, thus have I lost the field.

Thus are my eyes still Captive to one sight:
Thus all my thoughts are slaves to one thought still:
Thus Reason to his servants yelds his right:
Thus is my power transformed to your will.

What maruaile then I take a womans hew,
Since what I see, thinke, know is all but you?

The dittie gaue him some suspension, but the voice gaue him almost assurance, who the finger was. And therefore boldly thrusting open the door, and entering into the arbour, he perceau'd in deed that it was Pyrocles thus disguis'd, wherewith not receaung so much ioy to haue found him, as griefe to haue found him, amazedly looking upon him (as Apollo is painted when he saw Daphne soudainly turned into a Laurell) he was not
not able to bring forth a word. So that Pyrocles (who had as much shame, as Musidorus had sorrow) rising to him, would have formed a substantiall excuse; but his infinuation being of blushing, and his division of sighes, his whole oration stood upon a short narration, what was the causer of this Metamorphosis? But by that time Musidorus had gathered his spirites together, and yet casting a gaitfull countenaunce uppon him (as if he would conjure some strange spirits) he thus spake vnto him.

And is it possible, that this is Pyrocles, the onely yong Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exercice of vertue; or is it indeed some Amazon that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this sort to vexe me? for likelier sure I would have thought it, that any outwarde face might have bene disguifed, then that the face of so excellent a mind coulde have bene thus blemished. O sweete Pyrocles, separate your selfe a little (if it be possible) from your selfe, and let your owne minde looke vpon your owne proceedings: so shall my wordes be needless, and you best instructed. See with your selfe, how fit it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne so great a Prince, and of so rare, not onely expectation, but proffe, desired of your olde Father, and wanted of your native countrie, how so neere your home, to diuert your thoughts from the way of goodnesse; to loose, nay to abuse your time. Lastly to overthrow all the excellent things you haue done, which haue filled the world with your fame; as if you should drowne your ship in the long desired hauen, or like a spill player, should marre the last act of his Tragedie.

Remem-
Remember (for I know you know it) that if we will be men, the reasonable parte of our soule, is to haue absolute commandement; against which if any sensual weaknes arise, we are to yelde all our sounde forces to the ouerthrowing of so unnaturall a rebellion, wherein how can we wante courage, since we are to deale against so weake an adversary, that in it selfe is nothing but weakness? Nay we are to resolve, that if reason direct it, we must doe it, and if we must doe it, we will doe it; for to say I cannot, is childish, and I will not, womanish. And see how extremely every waye you endaunger your minde; for to take this womanish habit (without you frame your behaviour accordingly) is wholly vaine: your behaviour can never come kindely from you, but as the minde is proportioned vnto it. So that you must resolve, if you will playe your parte to any purpose, whatsoever peevish affections are in that sexe, often your hart to receive them, the very first downe-steppe to all wickednes; for doo not deceiue your selfe, my deere cosin, there is no man sodainely excellentlie good, or extremely euill, but growes either as hee holdes himselfe vp in vertue, or lets himself slide to vitioues. And let vs see, what power is the author of all these troubles: for tooth loue, loue, a passion, and the basest and fruitlesseft of all passions: feare breedeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: ioy openeth and enhableth the hart: sorrow, as it closeth, so it draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it selfe; and so all generally have power towards some good by the direction of right Reason. But this baisterde Loue (for in deed, the name of Loue is most vnworthylie applied
The Countesse of Pembroke

applie to so hatefull a humour) as it is engendered betwixt luft and idlenes; as the matter it workes vpon is nothing; but a certaine base weakenes, which some gentle fooles call a gentle hart; as his adiyned companions be vnquietnes, longings, fond comforts, paine discomforts, hopes, ieloufies, vngrounded rages,caufle yeeldings; so is the hieft ende it aspires vnto, a little pleasure with much paine before, and great repentance after. But that end how endless it runs to infinite euils, were fit enough for the matter we speake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is so much true disposition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your selfe is to be seen, that (besides your breaking lawes of hospitality with Kalander and of friendship with me) it utterly subuerets the course of nature, in making reason give place to sense, & man to woman. And truely I thinke here-vpon it first gatethe name of Loue: for indeede the true loue hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transform the very essence of the louer into the thing loued, uniting, and as it were incorporating it with a secret & inward working. And herein do these kindes of loue imitate the excellent; for as the loue of heauen makes one heavenly, the loue of vertue, vertuous; so doth the loue of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate loue of a woman, doth so womanifh a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an Amazon, but a launder, a distaff-spinner, or what so euer other vile occupation their idle heads can imagin, & their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but louing words) if either you remember what you are, what you haue bene, or what
what you must be: if you consider what it is, that moved you, or by what kind of creature you are moved, you shall finde the cause so small, the effect so daungersous, your selfe so vnworthie to runne into the one, or to be driue by the other, that I doubt not I shall quickly have occasion rather to praise you for having conquered it, then to give you further counsell, how to doo it.

But in Pyrocles this speach wrought no more, but that he, who before he was espied, was afraid, after being perceiued, was ashamed, now being hardly rub'd vpon, left both feare and shame, and was moved to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to Musidorus striving with it, he thus, partly to satisfy him, but principally to loose the reines to his owne motions, made him answer. Cofin, whatsoever good disposition nature hath bestowed vpon me, or howsoever that disposition hath bene by bringing vp confirmed, this must I confess, that I am not yet come to that degree of wil-
dome, to thinke light of the sexe, of whom I have my life; since if I be anything (which your friendship rather finds, the I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a woma, & nursed of a woma. And certeiny (for this point of your speach doth nearest touch me) it is straige to see the vnman-like cruelty of mankind, who not content with their tyrannous abition, to have brought the others vertuous patience under them (like to childish masters) thinke their masterhood nothing, without doing injury to them, who (if we will argue by reason) are framed of nature with the same parts of the minde for the exercise of vertue, as we are. And for example, even this estate of Amazons, (which I now for my greatest honor do seek to counterfaite) doth well witness, that if generally the swetnes of their dispositions did not make them
The Countesse of Pembroke

them see the vainness of these things, which we accept glorous, they nether want valor of mind, nor yet doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and praines of men, should remember, that if we have such excellencies, it is reason to thinke them excellent creatures, of whom we are: since a Kite neuer brought forth a good flying Hauke. But to tel you true, as I thinke it superfluous to vs any wordes of such a subject which is so praised in it selfe, as it needes no praiyes; so withall I feare left my concate (not able to reach vnto them) bring forth wordes, which for their vuworthines may be a disgrace vnto the I so inwardsly honor. Let this suffice, that they are capable of vertue: & vertue (ye your felues say) is to be loued, & I too truely: but this I willingly confess, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to seeke it in an ill fauoured creature, like a pearle in a dounghill. As for my fault of being an vn-ciuill guest to Kalander, if you could seele what an inward guest my selfe am host vnto: ye would thinke it very excusable, in that I rather performe the duties of an host, then the ceremonies of a guest. And for my breaking the lawes of friendshipp with you, (which I would rather dye, then effectually doo) truely, I could finde in my hart to aske you pardon for it, but that your handling of me giues me reason to my former dealing. And here Pyrocles stayed, as to breath himselfe, having bene transported with a litle vehemency, because it seemed him Mufidorus had ouer-bitterly glaunsed against the reputation of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (as well as out of an vnquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore Loue
Loue (said he) deare costoin, is little beholding vnto you, since you are not contented to spoile it of the honor of the highest power of the mind, which notable me haue attributed vnto it; but ye deie& it below all other passions, in trueth somewhat strangely, since, if loue receiue any disgrace, it is by the company of these passions you preferre before it. For those kinds of bitter obiections (as, that lust, idlenes, and a weak harte, shoulde be, as it were, the matter and forme of loue) rather touch me, deare Musidorus, then loue: But I am good witnesse of mine own imperfections, & therefore will not define my selfe; but herein I must say, you deale contrary to your self: for if I be so weak, then can you not with reason stirs mee vp as ye did, by remembrance of my own vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, the must ye confesse, that loue hath his working in a vertuous hart; & so no dout hath it, whatsoeuer I be: for if we loue vertue, in whom shal we loue it but in a vertuous creature: without your meaning be, I shoulde loue this word vertue, where I see it written in a book. Those troublesome effects you say it breedes, be not the faults of loue, but of him that loues, as an vnable vessell to beare such a licour: like euell eyes, not able to look on the Sun, or like an ill braine, soonest overthrowe with best wine. Euen that heavenly loue you speake of, is accompanied in some harts with hopes, griefs, longings, & dispares. And in that heavenly loue, since ther are two parts, the one the loue it self, the other the excellency of the thing loued; I, not able at the first leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe instrument, and first part of that great worke, which is loue it self, which wher I have a while practised in this sort, then you shall see me turn it
The Countesse of Pembroke

it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it please you) think of me. Neither doubt ye, because I weare a woman's apparell, I will be the more womanish, since, I assure you, (for all my apparell) there is nothing I desire more, then fully to prove my selfe a man in this enterprise. Much might be said in my defence, much more for loue, and most of all for that divine creature, which hath joyned me and lorne together. But these disputations are fitter for quiet schooles, then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in wordes to defende the noble desire which possesseth me. O Lord (said Musidorus) how sharp-witted you are to hurt your selfe! No (answered he) but it is the hurt you speake of, which makes me so shamp-witted. Euen so (said Musidorus) as every base occupation makes one sharp in that practice, and foolish in all the rest. Nay rather (answered Pyrocles) as each excellent thing once well learned, serues for a measure of all other knowledges. And is that become (said Musidorus) a measure for other things, which never receiued measure in it selfe? It is counted without measure (answered Pyrocles,) because the workings of it are without measure: but otherwise, in nature it hath measure, since it hath an end allotted unto it. The beginning being so excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enjoying, answered Pyrocles, with a great sigh. O (said Musidorus) now let ye foorth the baleines of it: since if it ende in enjoying, it shewes all the rest was nothing. Ye mistake me (answered Pyrocles) I spake of the end to which it is directed, which end ends not, no sooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine disenchant you (said Musidorus.) My hart is too farre possesed (said Pyrocles.)
But the head giues you direction. And the hart giues me life, aanswered Pyrocles.

But Mufidarus was so greeued to see his welbeloued friend obstinat, as he thought, to his owne destruction, that it forced him with more then accustomed vehemency, to speake these words; Well, well, (saide he) you lift to abuse your selfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a painterly gloss of a visage: Confeffe the truth; and ye shall finde, the utmost was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your selfe as may be in any, yet I am sure you make no further reckning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature bestowed vpon you. And yet such is your want of a true grounded vertue, which must be like it selfe in all points, that what you wisely account a trifle in your selfe, you fondly become a flaue vnto in another. For my part I now protest I haue left nothing unsaid, which my wit could make me know, or my most entier friendship to you requires of me; I do now beseech you euen for the loue betwixt vs (if this other loue haue left any in you towards me) and for the remembrance of your olde careful father (if you can remembre him that forget your self) lastly for Pyrocles owne sake (who is now vpon the point of falling or rising) to purge your selfe of this vile infection; other wise giue me leaue, to leaue of this name of friendship, as an idle title of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is abolifhed. The length of these speaches before had not so much cloied Pyrocles, though he were very unpatient of long deliberations, as the last farewell of him he loued as his owne life, did wound his soule, thinking him selfe afflicted, he was the apter to con-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

cerne vnkindnesse deeply: insomuch, that shaking his head, and deliveringe some shewe of teares, he thus uttered his griefes. Alas (said he) prince Musidorus, how cruelly you deale with me; if you seeke the victory, take it; and if ye list, triumph. Have you all the reason of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet such as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perswaded by the Swanne to cast of all his black fethers. But truely you deale with me like a Philistion, that seeing his patient in a pestilent feuer, shoulde chide him, in stead of ministring helpe, and bid him be sick no more; or rather like such a friend, that visitinge his friend condemnde to perpetuall prifon; and loaden with greuous fetters, shoulde will him to shake of his fetters, or he wulde leaue him. I am sicke, & sicke to the death; I am a prifoner, neither is any redresse, but by her to whom I am slawe. Now if you list to leaue him that loues you in the hieft degree: But remember ever to cary this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greatest extremity.

And herewith the deepe wound of his loun being rubbed afresh with this new vnkindnes, began (as it were) to bleed again, in such sort that he was not hable to bære it any longer, but gushing out abundance of teares, and crossing his armes ouer his woefull hart, as if his teares had beene out-flowing blood, his armes an ouer-pressing burthen, he funcke downe to the ground, which sodaine traunce went fo to the hart of Musidorus, that falling down by him & kising the weeping eyes of his friend, he besought him not to make account of his speach; which if it had bene ouer vehem
ment, yet was it to be borne withall, because it came out of a love much more vehement; that he had not thought fancy could have received so deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, he would no further contrary it; but employ all his service to medicine it, in such sort, as the nature of it required. But even this kindness made Pyrocles the more melte in the former unkindness, which his manlike tears well shewed, with a silent look vpon Musidorus, as who should say, And is it possible that Musidorus should threaten to leave me? And this stroke Musidorus minde and senses so dumbe too, that for griefe being not able to say any thing, they rested, with their eyes placed one vpon another, in such sort, as might well paint out the true passion of unkindnes to be neuer aright, but betwixt them that most dearely love.

And thus remayned they a time, till at length, Musidorus embracing him, said, And will you thus shake of your friend? It is you that shake me of (saide Pyrocles) being for my unperfectnes vnworthie of your friend shippes. But this (saide Musidorus) shewes you more unperfect, to be cruel to him, that submits himselfe vnto you, but since you are unperfect (saide he smiling) it is reason you be governed by vs wife and perfect men. And that authoritie will I beginne to take vpon me, with three absolute commandements: The first, that you increase not your cuill with further griefes: the second, that you loue her with all the powers of your mind: & the last comandement shalbe, ye comand me to do what service I can, towards the attaining of your desires. Pyrocles hart was not so oppressed with the mighty passion of
of love and unkindness, but that it yeelded to some
mirth at this commandement of Musidorus, that he
should love: so that something clearing his face from
his former shewes of griefe, We(faid he) deare cousin,
I se by the well chooing of your commandementes,
that you are fitter to be a Prince, then a Counseller: and
therefore I am resolued to impoy all my endeuour to o-
bye you, with this condition, that the comandemenes
ye command me to lay vpon you, shall onely be, that
you continue to love me, and looke vpon my imperfe-
tions, with more affection then judgemet. Love you?
(faid he) alas, how can my hart be seperated from the
true imbrasing of it, without it burst, by being too full
of it? But (faid he) let vs leaue of these flowers of newly
begun frendship: and now I pray you againe tel me, but
tell it me fully, omitting no circumstance, the storie of
your affections both beginning, and proceeding: assu-
ing your selfe, that there is nothing so great, which I
will feare to doo for you: nor nothing so small which I
will disdain to doo for you. Let me therefore receive a
clere vnderstanding, which many times we misse, while
those things we account small, as a speech, or a look are
omitted, like as a whole sentence may faile of his con-
gruitie, by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene
frendes, all must be layd open, nothing being superflu-
ous, nor tedious. You shalbe obeyed (faid Pyrocles) and
here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be, for this ar-
bor no body ofter to come into but my selfe; I vsing it
as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that
respect is born vnto it; yet if by chace any shoule should come,
say that you are a servuant sent from the Q. of the Ama-
sions to seeke me; and then let me alone for the rest. So
fate they downe, and Pyrocles thus faid.

CHAP.
CHAP. 13.

How Pyrocles fell in love with Philoclea. His counsell and course therein. His disguising into Zelmane. Her meeting with Damætas, Batilius, the Queen and her daughters, & their speeches. Her abode there over entreated, and the place thereof described.

Ousin (saide hee) then began the fatall overthrowe of all my libertie, when walking among the pictures in Kalanders house, you your selfe delivered vnto mee what you had vsnderstood of Philoclea, who muche resembling (though I must say much surpasing) the Ladie Zelmane, whom too well I loued: there were mine eyes infecte, & at your mouth did I drinke my poision. Yet alas so sweete was it vnto me, that I could not be contented, til Kalander had made it more and more strong with his declaratiō. Which the more I questioned, the more pittie I conceaued of her vnworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptnesse of the humour, it receaued quickly a cruell impression of that wonderful passiō which to be definē is impossible, because no wordes reach to the strange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called loue. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at first know my disease, thinking it onely such a woonted kind of desire, to see rare sights, & my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle
gentle nature.But cué this arguing with my selfe came of further thoughts; & the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreased. Desirous I was to see the place where she remained, as though the Architecture of the lodges would haue bene much for my learning; but more desirous to see her selfe, to be in age, forsooth, of the painters cunning. For thus at the first did I flatter my selfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within short time I came to the degree of uncertain wishes, and that the wishes grew to vnquiet longings, when I could fix my thoughts vpó nothing, but that within little varying, they should end with Philoctelas: when each thing I saw, seemed to figure out some parts of my passions: whë even Parthenias faire face became a lecture to me of Philoctelas imagined beautie; when I heard no word spoken, but that I thought it carried the sum of Philoctelas name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my selfe prisoner, before I had leasure to arme my selfe; & that I might well, like the spaniel, gnaw vpó the chaine that ties him, but I should sooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty.

Yet I take to wittnesse the eternall spring of vertue, that I had never read, heard, nor seene any thing, I had never any tast of Philosophy, nor inward feeling in my selfe, which for a while I did not call for my succour. But (alas) what resistance was there, when ere long my very reason was (you will say corrupted) I must needs confesse, conquered; and that I thought even reason did assurne me, that all cies did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour such beautie? Nothing in trueth could holde any plea with it, but the reuerent friendship I bare vnto you. For as it went against
againſt my harte to breake any way from you, so did I feare more then anie affault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed) that to a hart fully resolute,counfaile is tedious, but reprehenſion is lothſome: & that there is nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a respected fried. This made me determine with my self, (thinking it a leffe fault in friedhip to do a thing without your knowledge, then against your wil) to take this secret course: Which conceit was most builded vp in me, the laſt day of my parting and speaking wrth you; whē vpõ your speach with me,& my but naming loue, (when els perchaunce I would haue gone further) I saw your voice & counſenaſe so chaung, as it aſſured me, my revealing it should but purchase your grievhe with my cumber: & therfore (deere Musidorus) eué ran away from thy well knowne chiding; for hauing writte a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, & taking my chiefe jewels with me, while you were in the mid-dest of your spord, I got a time (as I think) vnmarked, to sleeale away, I cared not whether fo I mighe scape you: & so came I to Ithonia in the province of Mefſenia; wher lying secret I put this in praſte which before I had de-uíed. For remebruſg by Philanax his letter, & Kaladers speech, how obstinately Basilious was determined not to mary his daughters, & therfore fearing, left any publike dealing should rather incrēse her captiuitie, then fur-ther my loue, Loue (the refiner of inuentio) had put in my head thus to disguife my self,that vnnder that maske I might (if it were poſſible,) get acceſſe, and what acceſſe could bring forth, commit to fortune & industrey; determining to beare the counſenaſe of an Amazon. Therfore in the cloſeſt manes I could, naming my felſe
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Zelmo, for that deere Ladies sake, to whose memorie I am so much bound, I caused this apparell to be made, and bringing it neere the lodges, which are harde at hand, by night, thus dressed my selfe, resting till occasion might make me found by them, whom I sough: which the next morning hapned as well, as my owne plot could have laide it. For after I had runne over the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gaue my selfe to sing a little, which as you know I ever delighted in, so now especially, whether it be the nature of this clime to stir vp Poetical fancies, or rather as I thinke, of loue: whose scope being pleasure, will not so much as utter his griefes, but in some forme of pleasure.

But I had song very little, when (as I thinke displeased with my bad musike) comes master Dametas with a hedging bill in his hand, chafing, and swearing by the patable of Pallæas, & such other othes as his rustical brauery could imagine; & whè he saw me, I assure you my beauty was no more beholding to him the my harmony; for leaning his hands vpon his bil, & his chin vpon his hâds, with the voice of one that plaith Hercules in a play, but never had his fancie in his head, the first word he spake to me, was, am not I Dametas? why am not I Dametas? he needed not name him selfe: for Kalanders description had set such a note vpò him, as made him very notable vnto me, and therefore the height of my thoughts would not descend so much as to make him any answer, but continued on my inward discourses: which (he perchaunce witnes of his owne vnworthines, & therefore the apter to thinke him selfe contented) tooke in so hainous manner, that standing vpò his tip-toes, and staring as though he would have a mote pulled
pulled out of his eie, Why (said he) thou woman, or boy, or both, what foucer thou be, I tell thee here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Prince's pleasure, I tell thee it is Dametas pleasure. I could not choose, but smile at him, seeing him looke so like an Ape that had newly taken a purgation; yet taking my selfe with the maner, spake these wordes to my selfe:

O spirite (saide I) of mine, how canst thou receave any mirth in the midst of thine agonies, and thou mirth how daresst thou enter into a minde so growne of late thy proffessed enemie? Thy spirite (saide Dametas) dooft thou thinke me a spirite? I tell thee I am Basilius officer, and have charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (said I sobbing) that so vile an oyster should keepe thee? By the combe-case of Diana (ware Dametas) this woman is mad: oysters, and pearles dooft thou thinke I will buie oysters? I tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted vp his bill to hit me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put me quite out of my lesion, for that I forgot al Zelrameship, and drawing out my sword, the baseness of the villain yet made me stay my hande, and he (who, as Kalander tolde me, from his childhood cuer feared the blade of a sword) ran backe, backward (with his hands aboue his head) at lest twentie paces, gaping and staring, with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by Latonas prayers were turned into Frogs. At length slaying, finding himselfe without the compasse of blowes, he fell to a fresh scolding, in such mannerlie manner, as might well shewe he had pass'd through the discipline of a Tauerne. But seeing me walke vp and downe, without 

I 3 marking
The Countesse of Pembroke's

marking what he saide, he went his way (as I perceived after) to Basilius: for within a while he came vnto mee, bearing in deed shewes in his countenaunce of an honest and well-minded gentleman, and with as much courtesie, as Dametas with rudenesse saluting me, Faire Lady (saide he) it is nothing strange, that such a solitary place as this should receive solitary persons; but much do I maruaile, how such a beauty as yours is, should be suffered to be thus alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a grave majestic vpon him, as if I found in my selfe cause to be reverenced. They are never alone (saide I) that are accompanied with noble thoughts. But those thoughts (replied Basilius) canot in this your lonelines neither warrant you from suspicion in others, nor defend you from melancholy in your selfe. I then shewing a mislike that he pressed me so farre, I seeke no better warrant (saide I) then my owne conscience, nor no greater pleasures, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue seeke to satisfie others, (saide Basilius,) Those that be good (saide I,) and they will be satisfied as long as they see no euill. Yet will the best in this country, (saide Basilius) suspect so excellent a beauty being so weakely garded. Then arc the best but starke nought, (answerwed I,) for open suspecting others, comes of secrete condemning themselves. But in my countrie (whose manners I am in all places to maintaine and reverence) the generall goodnes (which is nourished in our harts) makes every one thinke the strength of vertue in an other, whereof they finde the assured foundation in themselves. Excellent Ladie (saide he) you praiseth so greatly, and yet so wisely your country, that I must needes desire to know what the nest is, out of which such Byrds doo flye. You
You must first descrye it (said I) before you may obtaine it. And by what means (saide Basilius) shall I descrye to know your estate? By letting me first knowe yours (answered I.) To obey you (said he) I will doe it, although it were so much more reason, yours should be knowne first, as you doo descrye in all points to be prefered. Know you (faire Lady) that my name is Basilius, vnworthily Lord of this coutry; the rest, either same hath brought to your eares, or (if it please you to make this place happie by your presence) at more leasure you shall understand of me. I that from the beginning affirred my selffe it was he, but would not seeme I did so, to keepe my grauitie the better, making a piece of recreence vnto him, Mighty Prince (said I) let my not knowing you serve for the excuse of my boldnes, and the little recreence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my coutry, which is the invincible Lande of the Amazons; My selffe neece to Senicia, Queene thereof, lineallly descended of the famous Penehesles, flaine by the bloody hand of Pyrrhus. I hauing in this my youth determined to make the world see the Amazons excellencies, as well in priuate, as in publicke vertue, haue passed some daungerous adventures in divers countreies: till the vnmercifull Sea depruied me of my company; so that shipwreck casting me not far hence, vnceertaine wandring brought me to this place. But Basilius (who now began to taste that, which since he hath swallowed vp, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy host would vie to well paying passingers. I thought nothing could shoot righter at the mark of my desires, yet had I learned alredy somuch, that it was against my womanhood
manhoode to be forward in my owne wishes. And therefore he (to proue whither interceflions in fitter mouths might better preuaile) commanded Dametas to bring forth with his wife and daughters thether; three Ladies, although of diuers, yet all of excellent beauty.

His wife in graue Matronlike attire, with countenaunce and gesture suitable and of such fairnes (being in the strengh of her age) as if her daughters had not bene by, might with iust price haue purchased admiration, but they being there, it was enough that the moft dainty eye would thinke her a worthy mother of such children. The faire Pamela, whose noble hart I finde doth greatly disdain, that the trust of her vertue is repofed in such a louts hands as Dametas had yet to shew an obedience, taken on a shepeardish apparell, which was but of Russel cloth cut after their fashion, with a straight body, open breasted, the nether parte ful of pleights, with long and wide fleuces: but beleue me she did apparell her apparell, and with the pretioufnes of her body made it moft sumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the comparison to fee how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breasts (which sweetly rase vp like two faire Mountainets in the pleasaeunt valley of Tempe) there honge a very riche Diamond set but in a blacke horne the worde I haue since read is this: yet stil my selfe. And thus particularly haue I described them, because you may know that mine eyes are not so parti-all, but that I marked them too. But when the ornament of the Earth, the modell of heauen, the Triumph of Nature, the light of beauty, Queene of Loue
Loue,young Philocles appeared in her Nimphe-like apparel, so near nakednes, as one might well discern part of her perfections, & yet so appareled, as did shew she kept best store of her beauty to her self: her haire (alas too poore a word, why should I not rather call the her beames) drawē vp into a net, able to take Jupiter when he was in the forme of an Eagle; her body (O sweet body) couered with a light taffeta garment, so cut, as the wrought smocke came through it in many places, inough to haue made your restraine imaginatio haue thought what was vnder it: with the cast of her blakke eyes; blakke indeed, whether nature so made them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wōderfull shinning, or that she, (goddefle like) would work this miracle in her selfe, in givng blacknes the price aboue all beauty. Then (I say) indeede me thought the Lillies grew pale for enuie; the roses me thought blush- ed to see sweeter roses in her cheekes, & the apples me thought, fell downe frō the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breast. Then the cloudes gaue place, that the heauēs might more freshely smile vpō her; at the left the cloudes of my thoughts quite vanished: and my sight (then more cleere and forcible then euer) was so fixed there, that (I imagine) I stood like a well wrought image, with some life in shew, but none in practise. And so had I beene like inough to haue stayed long time, but that Gynedia stepping betwene my sight and the onely Philocles, the chaunge of obiect made me recover my senses: so that I coulde with reasonable good manner receive the salutation of her, and of the the Princessc Pamela, doing the yet no further reverence then
The Countesse of Pembroke

then one Prince vieth to another. But when I came
to the neuer-inough praised Philocles, I could not but
fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand,
and kissing it (I must confesse) with more than woman-
ly ardency, Divine Lady, (saide I) let not the worlde,
nor the great princes maruaile, to se me (contrary to
my manner) do this especiall honor vnto you, since all
both men and women, do owe this to the perfection
of your beauty. But the blushing (like a faire morning
in Maye) at this my singularity, and causing me to rise,
Noble Lady, (saide she) it is no maruaile to see your
judgement mistaken in my beauty, since you beginne
with so great an errour, as to do more honour vnto me
then to them, whom I my selfe owe all service. Rather
(answered I with a bowed downe countenaunce) that
shews the power of your beauty, which forced me to
do such an errour, if it were an errour. You are so well
acquainted (saide she sweetely, most sweetely smiling,) with your owne beautie, that it makes you caflifie fall
into the discourse of beauty. Beauty in me! (saide I true-
ly fighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which
your blessed presence hath imparted vnto them.

But then (as I thinke) Basilins willing her so do, Well
(saide she) I must needs confesse I haue heard that it is
a great happines to be praised of them that are most
praise worthie; And well I finde that you are an invinc-
cible Amazon, since you will overcome, though in a
wrong matter. But if my beauty be any thing, then let
it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine
some while in this compagnie, to case your owne travaile,
and our solitarines. First let me dy (saide I) before any
word spoken by such a mouth, should come in vaine.

And
And thus with some other wordes of entertaining, was my staying concluded, and I led among them to the lodge, truely a place for pleasantnes, not unsitle to flatter solitariness; for it being set uppon such an insensible rising of the ground, as you are come to a prey height before almost you perceiue that you ascend, it giues the eye lordship over a good large circuit, which according to the nature of the coûtry, being diuersified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, and the other more darksome, it seemes a pleasant picture of nature, with louely lightsomnes and artificiall shadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow stone, built in the forme of a starre; having round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings cut out, each answering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the other smaller Lodge, but of like fashion; where the gratious Pamela liueth: so that the Lodge seemeth not vnlike a faire Comete, whose taile stretcheth it selfe to a starre of lesse greatnes.

CHAP. 14.

*The duties of the first banquet to Zelmane.* Her crosses in love, by the love of Basilius & and Gynecia. *The conclusion between Musidorus and Zelmane.*

O Gynecia her selfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was inuited and brought downe to suppe with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inuentions: wherein is
The Countesse of Pembroke's

is a banqueting house among certaine pleasent trees, whose heads seemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine branches. The table was set neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the casting of the water in most cunning maner, it makes (with the shining of the Sunne vpon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleasent to the eye then to the mind, so sensibly to see the proof of the heauenly Iris. There were birds also made so finely, that they did not onely deceiue the sight with their figure, but the hearing with their songs; which the water-trie instruments did make their gorge deliuer. The table at which we eate, was round, which being fast to the floore whereon we eate, and that deuided from the rest of the buildings (with turning a vice, which Basilus at first did to make me sport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne rounde, by meanes of water which ranne vnder, and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleasure did it to mee, to make diuers times the full circle round about, since Philoclea (being also set) was carried still in equall distance from me, and that onely my eyes did ouertake her; which when the table was stayed, and wee beganne to eede, dranke much more eagerlie of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other licour. And so was my common sense deceiued (being chiefly bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall stale a looke on her, me seemed I tast’d her deliciouinesse. But alas, the one thriste was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themselues open to receiue all the dartes she did throwe, somtimes close vp with admiration, as if with a contrary fancie, they woulde preferue the riches of that sight they had gotten,
gotten, or cast my lidde as curtaine over the image of beautie, her presence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reason (now grown a servant to passion) did yet often tell his master, that he should more moderately vse his delight. But he, that of a rebell was become a Prince, did dayned almoft to allow him the place of a Counsellor: so that my senses delights being too strong for any other resolution, I did even lose the raines vnto them. hoping, that (going for a woman) my looks would passe, either unmarked, or unsuspected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well played my first acte, assuring my selfe, that vnder that disguisement, I should find opportunitie to reveal my self to the owner of my harte. But who would think it possible (though I feele it true) that in almost eight weekes space, I haue liued here (hauing no more companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchfull, as being a louer) yet could never finde opportunitie to haue one minutes leasure of priuie conference: the caufe whereof is as strange, as the effects are to me miserable. And (alas) this it is.

At the first sight that Basilus had of me (I think Cupid having headed his arrows with my misfortune) he was striken (taking me to be such as I professe) with great affectio towards me, which since is growen to such a doting loue, that (till I was faine to gette this place, sometimes to retire vnto freely) I was even choaked with his tediousnes. You never saw fourscore yeares daunce vp and downe more liuely in a young Louer: now, as fine in his apparrell, as if he would make me in loue with a cloake, and verse for verse with the sharpest-witted Louer in Arcadia. Doo you not think that this is a fallat of worm.
woormwood, while mine eyes vede upon the Ambrosia of Philocleas beauty.

But this is not all; no this is not the worst; for he (good man) were ealy enough to be dealt with: but (as I thinke) Love and mischeefe hauing made a wager, which should hauue most power in me, hauue set Gyncia also on such a fire towards me, as will never (I feare) be quenched but with my destruction. For she (being a woman of excellent witte, and of strong working thoughts) whether she suspected me by my ouer-vehement shoues of affection to Philoclea (which love forced me vunwisely to utter, while hope of my maske foolishly encouraged me) or that she hath take some other marke of me, that I am not a woman: or what deuil it is hath reveale it unto her, I know not: but so it is, that all her countenances, words and gestures, are miserable portraiture of a desperate affection. Whereby a man may learne, that these annoyings of companie, doo but make the passions more violent, when they meete with fitte subjects. Truely it were a notable dumb shew of Cupids kingdom, to see my eyes (languishing with ouer-vehement longing) direct themselves to Philoclea: & Basilius as busie about me as a Bee, & indeed as cumbersome, making such suyts to me, who nether could if I would, nor would if I could, helpe him: while the terrible witte of Gyncia, carried with the beere of violent loue, runnes thorow vs all. And soe liellous is she of my loue to her daughter, that I could neuer yet beginne to open my mouth to the vnuitable Philoclea, but that her vnwisshed presence gauue my tale a conclusion, before it had a beginning.

And soe liellous is she of my loue to her daughter, that I could neuer yet beginne to open my mouth to the vnuitable Philoclea, but that her vnwisshed presence gauue my tale a conclusion, before it had a beginning.
liking, and (if I bee acquainted with passions) of almoft a passionate liking in the heauenly Philocele, towards me, that I may hope her eares would not abhorre my discoure. And for good Basilus, he thought it best to have lodged vs together, but that the eternall hatefulnes of my deftinie, made Gynecias icelousie stoppe that, and all other my blessings. Yet must I confesse, that one way her loue doth me pleasure: for since it was my foolish fortune, or vnfortunate follie, to be known by her, that keeps her from bewraying me to Basilus. And thus (my Musidorus) you haue my Tragedie played vnto you by my selfe, which I prey the gods may not in deede prooue a Tragedie. And there he ended, making a full point of a hartie sigh.

Musidorus recomended to his best discource, all which Pyrocles had told him. But therein he found such intricatenes, that he could see no way to lead him out of the maze, yet perceiuing his affection fo groud, that struing against it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendshipe in question, then giue place to any friendly counsill. Well (said he) deare co-fin, since it hath pleased the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of loue, yet happie it is, that your loue is imployed vpon fo rare a woman: for certainly, a noble caufe dooth eafe much a grievous case. But as it stands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I canot see wherein I can be seruiable vnto you. I desire no greater service of you (aswered Pyrocles) the that you remayn secretly in this country, & some-times come to this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you shall haue my key to terrible, because as my for-
The Countesse of Pembroke

fortune, either amendes or empaires. I may declare it vnto you, and haue your counsell and furtheraunce: & hereby I will of purpose lead her, that is the prayse, and yet the staine of all womankinde, that you may haue so good a view, as to allowe my judgement: and as I can get the most convenient time, I wil come vnto you; for though by reason of yonder wood you cannot see the Lodge, it is harde at hande. But now, (said she) it is time for me to leaue you, and towards euening wee will walke out of purpose hetherward, therefore keepe your selfe close in that time. But Musidorus bethinking him selfe that his horse might happen to bewray them, thought it best to returne for that day, to a village not farre of, and dispatching his horse in some forte, the next day early to come a foote thither, and so to keepe that course afterward, which Pyrocles very well liked of. Now farewell deere cousin (saiid he) from me, no more Pyrocles, nor Daiphantus now, but Zelmane: Zelmane is my name, Zelmane is my title, Zelmane is the onely hope of my aduancement. And with that word going out, and seeing that the coast was cleare, Zelmane dismissed Musidorus, who departed as full of care to helpe his friend, as before he was to dissuade him.

C H A P. 15.

The Labyrinth of Zelmanes love. The Ladies exercises. The challenge of Phalantus in paragon of Ar- texias beautie. The description of their persons and affections: and occasion of this challenge. The suc-
cesse thereof abroad.

Zelmane
Eirmane returned to the Lodge, where (inflamed by Philoclea, watched by Gynceia, and tired by Baslius) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserable spurred, but so short rainde, as he cannot stirre forward: Zelmane fought occasion to speake with Philoclea; Baslius with Zelmane; and Gynceia hindered them all. If Philoclea hapned to sigh (and shhe did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, Zelmane sighed also, whereto Baslius and Gynceia soone made vp suche parts of sorrow. Their affection increased their conversation; and their conversation increased their affection. The respect borne bredde due ceremonies, but the affection shined so through them, that the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. Zelmane's eyes were (like children afore sweet meate) eager, but fearfull of their ill-pleasing governors. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long vnto them: short, in the pleasingnes of such presence; long, in the stay of their desires.

But Zelmane fayled not to intice them all many times abroad, because she was desirous her friend Musidorus (neere whom of purpose she ledde them) might haue full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a little Riuere neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed vpon rootes of some flourishing trees, was rewarded with their shadowe. There would they sitte downe, & pretie wagers be made betweene Pamela and Philoclea, which could soonest beguile silly fishes; while Zelmane protested, that the sitte pray for them was hartes of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so taken,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

taken, that she had forgotten taking. Basilius in the meantime would be the cooke him selfe of what was so caught, & Gynelia still, but with no stil pensifness. Now she brought them to see a seened Doue, who the blinder she was, the higher she straue. Another time a Kite, which hauing a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and so let fly, called all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the worlde is decreaued) thinking her prosperous when indeed she was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may wel be dangerous.

But these recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant shew; for one euening as Basilius returned from hauing forced his thoughts to please themselves in such small conquests, there came a shepheard, who brought him word that a Gentleman desired leave to do a message from his Lord vnto him. Basilius granted, wherupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies obserued, in his maisters name tolde him, that he was sent from Phalantes of Corinth, to craue licence, that as he had done in many other courts, so he might in his presence define all Arcadian Knights in the behalfe of his mistres beautie, who would besides, her selfe in person be present, to giue euident prove what his launce should affirme. The conditions of his chalenge were, that the defendant should bring his mistresse picture, which being set by the image of Artesia (so was the mistresse of Phalantes named) who in six courses should have better of the other, in the judgement of Basilius, with him both the honors and the pictures should remaine. Basilius (though he had retired him selfe into that solitarie dwelling, with intention
to avoid, rather than to accept any matters of drawing company; yet because he would entertaine Zelamane, (that she might not think the time so gainesfull to him, losse to her) granted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what Arcadian Knight (for none els but upon his perill was licensed to come) woulde defende what he honored against Phalantus, should haue the like freedome of accesse and returne.

This obtayned and published, Zelamane being desirous to learne what this Phalantus was, hauing neuer knowne him further then by report of his owne good, in somuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, Basilius told her that he had had occasion by one very inward with him, to knowe in parte the discourse of his life, which was, that he was bastard-brother to the faire Helen Queene of Corinth, and deedly esteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorablie courteous, and wronglesly valiant, considerately pleasant in conversation, & an excellent courtier without vnfaithfulnes; who (finding his sisters unperswadeable melancholy, thorow the loue of Amphialus) had for a time left her court, and gone into Laconia: where in the warre against the Helots, he had gotté the reputatió of one, that both durft & knew. But as it was rather choise the nature, that led him to matters of armes, so as soon as the spur of honor ceased, he willingly rested in peaceable delightes, being beloved in all compagnies for his louely qualities, & (as a man may terme it) cunning cherefulnes, wherby to the Prince & Court of Laconia, none was more agreable the Phalantus: and he not giuen greatly to strugge with his owne
The Countesse of Pembroke's

owne disposition, followed the gentle currant of it, having a fortune sufficient to content, & he content with a sufficient fortune. But in that court he sawe, and was acquainted with this Artesia, whose beautie he now defendes, became her servaunt, said him selfe, and perchaunce thought him felte her louer. But certainly, (said Basilius) many times it fallles out, that these young companioes make themselues beleue they loue at the first liking of a likely beautie; louing, because they will loue for want of other businesse, not because they feel indeed that divine power, which makes the heart finde a reason in passion: and so (God knowes) as inconstantly leane vpon the next chaunce that beautie castes before them. So therefore taking loue vpon him like a fashion, he courted this Ladie Artesia, who was as fit to pate him in his owne monte as might be. For she thinking she did wrong to her beautie if she were not prowde of it, called her disdaine of him chaistine, and placed her honour in little setting by his honouring her: determining neuer to marrie, but him, whome she thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whome all worthinesse were harboured. And to this conceit not onely nature had bent her, but the bringing vp she receaued at my sister in lawe Cecropia, had confirmed her: who hauing in her widowhood taken this young Artesia into her charge, because her Father had bene a deare friend of her dead husbandes, and taught her to thinke that there is no widsome but in including heavne & earth in ones self: and that loue, courtesie, gratefulnesse, friendship, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones selfe: And so good discpline she found of her,
that liking the fruits of her owne planting, she was content (if so her sonne could haue liked of it) to haue wished her in marriage to my Nephew Amphialus. But I thynke that desire hath lost some of his beate, since she hath knowne, that such a Queene as Helen is, doth offer so great a price as a kingdome, to buie his fauour; for if I be not deceived in my good sister Cecropia, shee thinks no face so beautifull, as that which lookes vnder a crowne. But Artesia indeede liked well of my Nephew Amphialus; for I can never deeme that loue, which in hauy harts proceeds of a desire onely to pleafe, and as it were, peacock themselfes, but yet shee shewed vehemenie of desire that way, I thynke, because all her desires be vehemeth, in so much that she hath both placed her onely brother (a fine youth called Isemenus) to be his squire, and her selue is content to waite vpon my sister, till she may see the uttermost what she may worke in Amphialus: who being of a melancholie (though I must needes saye courteous and noble) mind, seems to loue nothing lesse then Loue: & of late hauing through some aduenture, or inwarde miscontentment, withdrawne him selue from any bodies knowledge, where he is: Artesia the easier condescended to goe to the court of Laconia, whether she was sent for by the Kingses wife, to whom she is somewhat allied.

And there after the war of the Helots, this Knight Phalantis, (at least for tongue-delight) made him selue her servaunt, and she so little caring, as not to shewe mislike thereof, was content onely to be noted to haue a notable servaunt. For truely one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within these few dayes made me
A pleasant description of their love, while he with cheerefull lookes would speake forowfull words, using the phrase of his affection in so high a fstile, that Mercurie would not haue wooed Venus with more magnificent Eloquence: but els neyther in behauiour, nor action,accusing in himselfe anie great trouble in minde, whether he sped or no. And the of the other side, well finding howe little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a foolish wittnesse, to speake more then one thinkes.

For he made earnest benefite of his iest, forcing him in respect of his promise, to doo her suche service, as were both cumbersome and costly vnto him, while he stil thought he went beyond her, because his harte did not commit the idolatrie. So that lastlie, she (I thinke) hauing in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to Amphialus, (perswading her selfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it dothe in some that haue delightfull meate before them, and haue no stomacke to it, before other folkes prayle it) she tooke the aduauntage one daye vpon Phalantus vnconcionable prayfinges of her, and certaine cast-awaie vowes, howe much he would doo for her fake, to arrest his woord asfoone as it was out of his mouth, and by the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the courts of Greece, & with the chalenge now made, to giue her beauty the principality over all other. Phalantus was entrapped, and saw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedinglie perplexed he was (as he confesst to him that tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him selfe (for indeed
indeed he had little cause, being accounted with his Launce especially (whereupon the challenge is to be tried) as perfect as any that Greece knoweth: but because he feared to offend his sister Helen, and with all (as he said) he could not so much believe his loue, but that he might thinke in his hart (whatsoever his mouth affirmed) that both she, my daughters, and the faire Parthe-nia (wife to a most noble Gentleman, my wifes nearest kinsman) might far better put in their clayme for that prerogatiue. But his promise had bound him prentice, and therfore it was now better with willingnes to purchase thankes, then with a discontented doing to haue the paine, and not the reward: and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then loue, did lead him.

And now hath he already passed the courts of Laconia, Elis, Argos and Corinth: and (as many times it hap-pes) that a good pleader makes a bad cause to preuaile; so hath his Lawnce brought captuies to the triumph of Artesias beauty, such, as though Artesia be among the fairest, yet in that company were to haue the prehemi-nence: for in those courts many knights (that had bene in other far countries) defended such as they had scene, and liked in their trauaille: but their defence had bene such; as they had forfayed the picture of their Ladies, to giue a forced false testimonie to Artesias excellencie.

And now lastly is he come hether, where he hath leaue to trye his fortune. But I assure you, if I thought it not in dew & true cõsideratiõ an injurious service & churlishe curtesie, to put the danger of so noble a title in the deciding of such a dangerles cobat, I would make yong master Phalantus know, that your eyes can sharpe a blut.
The Countesse of Pembroke's
Launce, and that age, which my graye haires (onely gotten by the louing care of others) make seeme more then it is, hath not diminished in me the power to protect an undeniable verity. With that he buffled vp himselfe, as though his harte would saine haue walked a-broad. Zelmaue with an inwarde smiling gaue him outward thanks, desiring him to refereue his force for wortlier causes.

CHAP. 16.


O passing their time according to their woont, they wayted for the coming of Phalantus, who the next morning having alredy caused his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had vppon the tree made a shield to bee hanged vp, which the defendant should strike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challendge. The Impresa in the shield, was a heauen full of starres, with a speech signifying, that it was the beauty which gave it the praise.

Himselfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnatió veluet inriched with purle & pearle, wherein Artesia sat, drawne by foure winged horses with artificiall flaming mouthes, and fiery winges, as if she had newly borrowed them of thebus. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footeme pleasanctly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another
other of them that by Phalantus well running had lost the prize in the race of beauty, and at every pace they stayed, turning the pictures to each side, so leisurely, that with perfect judgement they might be discerned.

The first that came in (following the order of the time wherein they had been wonne) was the picture of Andromana, Queene of Iberia; whom a Laconian Knight having sometime (and with speciall favour) serued, (though some yeares since retourned home) with more gratefulnes then good fortune defended. But therein Fortune had borrowed witte; for indeede she was not comparable to Artesia; not because she was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impoverish her store thereof) but an exceeding red haire with small eyes, did (like ill companions) disgrace the other assembly of most commendable beauties.

Next after her was borne the counterfeit of the princesse of Elis, a Lady that taught the beholders no other point of beauty, but this, that as liking is, not alwaies the child of beauty, so whatsoeuer liketh, is beautifull; for in that village there was neither Maiestie, grace, favour, nor fairenesse; yet she wanted not a servant that would have made her fairer then the faire Artesia. But he wrote her praises with his helmet in the dust, and left her picture to be as true a witness of his overthrow, as his running was of her beauty.

After her was the goodly Artaia, great Queene of Armenia, a Lady vpon whom nature bestowed, & well placed her delightful colours, & withall, had proportioned her without any fault, quickly to be discovered by the senses, yet altogether seemed not to make vp that harmony, that Cupid delights in; the real whereof might seem a manish countenance, which overthrow that louluy sweetness;
The Countesse of Pembroke's

sweetnes, the noblest power of womankinde, farre fitter to prevail by parley, then by battell.

4 Of a farre contrary consideration was the representation of her that next followed, which was Erona Queen of Licia, who though of so browne a haire, as no man should have injured it to have called it blacke, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did so much overcome the redde (though what was, was very pure) that it came neare to paleness, and that her face was a thought longer then the exacte Symmetriam perhaps would allow; yet loue plaid his part so well, in euerie part, that it caught holde of the judgement, before it could judge, making it first loue, & after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeelding, conquered, & with a pitiful looke made one find caufe to craue helpe himselfe.

5 After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royal all birth: the former was named Baccha, who though very faire, and of a fatnes rather to allure, then to mislike; yet her breasts over-familiarly laide open, with a mad countenaunce about her mouth, betwenee simpering & simyling, her head bowed somewhat down, seemed to languish with over-much idlenes, with an inviting look cast vpward, disswading with too much perswading, while hope might seem to overcome desire.

6 The other (whose name was written Leucippe) was of a fine dainties of beauty, her face carrying in it a sober simplicitie, like one that could do much good, & m'ent no hurt, her eyes hauing in them such a cheerfulnes, as nature seemed to smile in them: though her mouth and cheeks owayed that pretie demurenes which the more one markes, the more one would judge the poore soule apt to beleue; & thersfore the more pitie to
Next came the Queene of Laconia, one that seemed borne in the confines of beauties kingdom: for all her lineaments were neither perfect possessions thereof, nor absent strangers thereto: but she was a Queene, and therefore beautyfull.

But she that followed, conquered indeed with being conquered, & might well have made all the beholders waite vpo her triumph, while her selfe were led captiue. It was the excellently-faire Queene Helen, whose Lacinth haire curled by nature, & intercurled by arte (like a fine brooke through goldé lads) had a rope of faire pearles, which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at fast or loose, each with other, mutually giving & receiving riches. In her face so much beautie & favour expressed, as if Helen had not bene knowe, some would rather haue judged it the painters exercise, to shew what he could do, the counterfaiting of any living patterne: for no fault the most fault finding wit could haue fou’d, if it were not, that to the rest of the body the face was somewhat too little: but that little was such a sparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of loue. For every thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it wated any thing in maiestie, it supplied it with increase of pleasure; & if at the first it strake not admiration, it ruished with delight. And no indifferent soule there was, which if it could resiit fro subjeting it self to make it his princesse, that would not log to haue such a playfelow. As for her attire, it was costly and curious, though the look (fixt with more sadnes the it seemed nature had bestowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as she used those ornamets, not for her self, but to preuaile with another, so she feared, that all would not ferue.

Of
The Countesse of Pembroke

Of a farre differing (though esteem'd equal) beautie, was the faire Parthenia, who next wayted on Artesius triumph, though farre better she might haue sittte in the throne. For in her every thing was goodly, and stately; yet so, that it might seeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might seem full of her owne beauties, a large, and exceedingly faire forhead, with all the rest of her face and body; cast in the mould of Noblenes; was yet so attired, as might shew, the mistres thought it either not to deserve, or not to need any exquisite decking; hauing no adorning but cleanlines; and so farre from all arte, that it was full of carelesnesse: vnlesse that carelesnesse it selfe (in spite of it selfe) grew artificiall. But Basilius could not abstaine from praising Parthenia, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wiuely faithfulness: telling withall Zelma, how he had vnderstoode, that when in the court of Laconia, her picture (maintained by a certaine Sycionian Knight) was lost, thorow want, rather of valour, then iustice: her husband (the famous Argalus) would in a chase haue gone and redeemeid it with a new triall. But she (more sporting then sorrowing for her undeserved champion) tolde her husband, she desired to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that she would rather marre her face as euill as euill it was, then that it should be a cause to make Argalus put on armour. Then would Basilius haue tolde Zelma, that which she alredie knew, of the rare triall of their coupled affection: but the next picture made the mouth giue place to their eyes.

It was of a young mayd, which fate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambs foote, with her looke so intent
Artadia. Lib. 1.

true vppon it, as if that little foote could have bene the circle of her thoughts; her apparell so poore, as it had nothing but the inside to adorne it, a shepbooke lying by her with a bottle vppon it. But with al that po-
uertie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as ma-
y harts as the greatest Queene there did. Her beautie
and her estate made her quicklie to be knowne to be
the faire shepheardesse, Vrania, whom a rich knight called Lacemon, farre in love with her, had unluckely de-
fended.

The last of all in place, because last in the time of
her being captiue, was Zelmane, daughter to the King
Plexvirtus: who at the first sight seemed to have some re-
sembling of Philoclea, but with more marking (comparing
it to the present Philoclea, who indeed had no paragon
but her sister) they might see, it was but such a likenessth,
as an vnperfect glasse doth gine; unanswerable enough
in some feitures, & colors, but erring in others. But Zel-
mane sighing, turning to Basilius, Alas sir (said she) here
be some pictures which might better become the tobes
of their Mistressles, then the triumphe of Artesia. It is
tue sweetest Lady (saide Basilius) some of them be
dead, and some other captiue: But that hath happened
so late, as it may be the Knightes that defended their
beauty, knew not so much: without we will say (as in
some harts I know it would fall out) that death it selfe
could not blot out the image which love hath engrauc
in the. But diuers besides these (saide Basilius) hath Pha-
lantus woon, but he leaues the rest, carrying onely such,
who either for greatnes of estate, or of beauty, may iust-
ly glorifie the glory of Artesias triumph.

CHAP.

Hus talked Basilius with Zelmane, glad to make any matter subject to speake of, with his mistresse, while Phalantus in this pompous manner, brought Artesia with her gentlewomé, into one Tent, by which he had another : where they both wayted who would first strike upon the shilde, while Basilius the Judge appointed sticklers, and trumpets, to whom the other should obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till already it had consumed halfe his allowance of light, but then there came in a knight, protesting himselfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For Phalantus was all in white, hauing in his bales, and caparišon embroidered a wauing water : at each side whereof he had nettings cast ouer, in which were divers fishes naturally made, & so pretily, that as the horse stirred, the fishes seemed to strike, and leape in the nette.

But the other knight, by name Nestor, by birth an Arcadian,
Arcadia. Lib. I.

cadian, &c in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdesse, was all in black, with fire burning both vpö his armour, and horse. His impress in his shield, was a fire made of Juniper, with this word, More easie, and more sweete. But this hot knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third course he receiued of Phalantis, leaving his picture to keepe companie with the other of the same stampe; he going away remedilessly chafing at his rebuke. The next was Polycetes, greatly esteemed in Arcadia, for deeds he had done in armes: and much spoken of for the honourable loue he had long borne to Gynecia, which Basilius himselfe was content, not onely to suffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in so honorable and open plainnes, setting to his loue no other marke, then to do her faithfull service. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from ouerthrow, and her from becomming as then the last of Artesias victories: a thing Gynecias vertues would little haue recked at another time, nor then, if Zelmeane had not seene it. But her champion went away as much discomforted, as discomfited. Then Telamon for Polixena, & Eurimelo for Elpime, and Leon for Zoana; all braue Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going down, lifted vp the ballance of his praisé for actitiuitie, and hers for fairenes.

Vpon whose losse as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a shepheard stripling (for his height made him more than a boy, & his face would not allow him a male) brown of complexiò (whether by nature, or by the Sun's familiaritie) but very louely withall, for the rest so perfectly proportioned, that Nature shewed, she dooth not like men who
who flubber vp matters of meane account. And well
might his proportion be judged; for he had nothing
upon him but a paire of floppes, and upon his bodie a
Gote-skinne, which he cast ouer his shoulder, doing
all things with so pretie grace, that it seemed ignorance
could not make him do amisse, because he had a hart to
do well, holding in his right hand a long staffe, & so co-
ming with a looke ful of amiable fiercenes, as in whom
choller could not take away the sweetnes, he came to-
wards the king, and making a reuerence (which in him
was comely because it was kindly) My liege Lord (laid
he) I pray you heare a few words, for my hart will break
if I say not my minde to you. I see here the picture of
Vrania, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) these men
when they fall downe, they say is not so faire as yonder
gay woman. But pray God, I may never see my olde
mother aliue, if I think she be any more match to Vran-
ia, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog
that keepes our flock at home, is like your white Grey-
hounde, that pulled down the Stagge last day.
And therefore I pray you let me be drest as they be,
and my hart gives me, I shall tumble him on the earth:
for indeede he might aswell say, that a Couslip is as
white as a Lillie: or els I care not let him come with his
great staffe, and I with this in my hand, and you shall
see what I can doo to him. Basilius sawe it was the fine
shepheard Lalus, whom once he had afore him in Pas-
torall sportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full
of pretie simplicitie, and therefore laughing at his car-
cnestesse, he had him be content, since he sawe the pic-
tures of so great Queenes, were faine to follow their
champions fortune. But Lalus (euen weeping ripe)
Arcadia. Lib. I.

went among the rest, longing to see some bodie that would reuenge Dromas wronge; and praying hartely for every bodie that ran against Phalanx, then began to feele pouerty, that he could not set him selfe to that triall. But by and by, euen when the Sunne (like a noble harte) began to shew his greatest countenaunce in his loweest estate, there came in a Knight, called Phebi-tus, a Gentleman of that countrey, for whom hatefull fortune had borrowed the dart of Loue, to make him miserable by the sight of Philoclea. For he had euen from her infancie loued her, and was striken by her, before she was able to knowe what quier of arrowes her eyes caried; but he loued and dispaireth, and the more he dispaireth, the more he loued. He fawe his owne vnworthines, and thereby made her excellencie have more terrible aspect upon him: he was so secreete therein, as not daring to be open, that to no creature he euer spake of it; but his hart made such silent complaints within it selfe, that while all his senses were attentive thereto, cunning judges might perceave his minde, so that he was knowne to loue though he denied, or rather was the better knowne, because he denied it. His armour and his attire was of a Sea couler, his Impresa, the fishe called Sepia, which being in the nette castes a blacke inke about it selfe, that in the darke-nesse thereof it may escape: his worde was, Not so. Philocleas picture with almost an idolatrous magni- cence was borne in by him. But freightieloufie was a harbinger for disdain in Zelmanes harte, when she fawe any (but her selfe) should be auowed a champion for Philoclea: in somuch that she wisht his shame, till she fawe him shamed: for at the second course he was
The Countesse of Pembrokes

was striking quite from out of the saddle, so full of grief, and rage withall, that he would faine with the word he have renewed it: but that being contrary to the order set downe, Basilius would not suffer; so that wishing him selfe in the bottome of the earth, he went his way, leaving Zelma no lesse angry with his los, the she would have beene with his victory. For if she thought before a rivals praysie woulde haue angered her, her Ladies disgrace did make her much more forget what she then thought, while that passion raigned so much the more, as she saw a pretie blush in Philocleas cheekes bewray a modest discontentment. But the night commended truce for those sportes, & Phalanton (though intreated) would not leave Artesia, who in no case would come into the house, hauing (as it were) suckte of Cecropias breath a mortall mislike against Basilius.

But the night measured by the shortell of sleepe, was soone past ouer, and the next morning had giuen the watchful stars leaue to take their rest, when a num per summoned Basilius to play his judges parte: which he did, taking his wife & daughters with him; Zelma hauing lockt her doore, so as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the fielde, readie to proue Helen of Corinth had receaued great injury, both by the erring judgement of the challenger, and the unlucky weakenesse of her former defender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be Clitophon (Kaladers sonne of Basilius, his sister) by his armour, which al guilt, was so well haddled, that it shewed like a glittering fande and grauell, interlaced with fluer riuers: his device he had put in the picture of Helen which hee defended. It was the Ermion, with a
(peach that signified, Rather dead then spottet. But in
that armur since he had parted frō Helen (who would
no longer his companie, finding him to enter into
termes of affection,) he had performed so honourable
actīs, (still seeking for his two friends by the names of
Palladius and Daiphatus,) that though his face were co-
vered, his being was discovered, which yet Basilius
(which had brought him vp in his court) would not
seeme to do; but glad to see triall of him, of whom he
had heard very well, he commaunded the trumpets to
sound; to which the two braue Knights obeying, they
performed their courses, breaking their six statuæ, with
so good, both skill in the hitting, & grace in the maner,
that it bred some difficulty in the judgement. But Bas-
lius in the ende gaue sentence against Clitophon, because
Phalantus had broken more statuæ vpō the head, & that
once Clitophon had receiued such a blowe, that he had
lost the raines of his horse, with his head well nie tou-
ching the crooper of the horse. But Clitophon was so an-
gry with the judgemet, (wherin he thought he had re-
cieved wrōg) that he omitted his duty to his Prince, &
vncl; and sodainly went his way, still in the quest of
them, whom as then he had left by seeking: & so yeel-
ded the field to the next commer.

Who comming in about two houres after, was no
lesse marked then al the rest before, because he had no-
thing worth the marking. For he had neither picture,
nor devise, his armour of as old a fashion (besides the
rustie poorenesse,) that it might better seeme a monu-
ment of his grandfathers courage: about his middle
he had in steede of bases, a long cloake of silke, which
as vnhandsomely, as it needes must, became the wea-
rer: so that all that lookt on, measured his length on the earth alreadie, since he had to meete one who had bene victorious of so many gallants. But he went on towaderes the shielde, and with a sober grace strake it; but as he let his sworde fall upon it, another Knight, all in blacke came rustling in, who strake the shielde almost assoone as he, and so strongly, that he brake the shielde in two: the ill appointed Knight (for to the beholders called him) angrie with that, (as he accounted,) insolent injurie to himselfe, hit him such a sound blowe, that they that looked on faide, it well became a rude anne. The other answered him againe in the same cace, so that Launces were put to silence, the swordes were so busie.

But Phalantus angry of this defacing his shielde, came vpon the blacke Knight, and with the pommdoll of his swordes set fire to his eyes, which presently was reueneged, not onely by the Blacke, but the ill appareled Knight, who disdained another should enter into his quarrell, so as, who cuer sawe a matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought, euere one had adueraries, strikings him, who strooke the third, and reuenging perhaps that of him, which he had receaued of the other. But Basilius rising himselfe to parte them, the sticklers autoritie feardlie able to perwade chaletike hearers; and parte them he did.

But before he could determine, comes in a fourth, halting on foote, who complained to Basilius, demaunding justice on the blacke Knight, for having by force taken away the picture of Pamela from him, which in little forme he ware in a Tablet, and couered with filke
filke had fastened it to his Helmet, purposing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with Artesius length, not doubting but in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would shine thorow the weake

nesse of the other: as the smallest starre dothe thorow
the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had
met with this blacke Knight, who had (as he said) rob-
bed him of it. The inuirie seemed grievous, but when
it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the hal-
ting Knight meeting the other, asking the cause of his
going thetherward, and finding it was to defend Pame-
las divine beautie against Artesias, with a prowde iol-
itie commanded him to leave that quarrell onely for
him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the
blacke Knight obeying no such commandements, they
fell to such a bickering, that he gat a halting, & lost his
picture. This vnderstood by Basilius, he told him he
was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then ano-
thers picture: & so (uncomforted therein) sent him a-
way to learn of Aesclapius that he was not fit for Venus.

But then the question arisinge who should be the for-
mer against Phalantus, of the blacke, or the ill apparel-
led Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of
some sturdy loute, he had so well defended himselfe)
of the one side, was alleged the having a picture
which the other wanted: of the other side, the first stric-
kings the Shield; but the conclusion was, that the ill ap-
parelled Knight should haue the precedence, if he de-
liuered the figure of his mistresse to Phalantus; who af-
king him for it, Certainely (said he) her liuelieest picture,
(if you could see it) is in my hart, & the best comparison
I could make of her, is of the Sunne & of all other the
heavenly
The Countesse of Pembroke's

heavenly beauties. But because perchance all eyes cannot taste the Divinitie of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not clouded by some meaner thing; know you then, that I defend that same Ladie, whose image Phebilus so feebly lost yesternight, and in stead of an other (if you overcome mee) you shall haue me your slaue to carrie that image in your mistresse triumpe. Phalanus easilie agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne.

But when it came to the triall, the ill apparelled Knight choosing out the greatest staues in all the store, at the first course gave his head such a remembrance, that he lost almost his remembrance, he him selfe receyuing the encounter of Phalantus without any extraordinarie motion. And at the seconde gave him such a counterbuffe, that because Phalantus was so perfite a horfeman, as not to be driuen from the saddle, the saddle with broken girthes was driuen from the horse: Phalantus remaining angrie and amazed, because now being come almost to the last of his promised enterprife, that disgrace befell him, which he had neuer before knowne.

But the victorie being by the judges giuen, and the trumpets witnessed to the ill apparelled Knight; Phalanus disgrace was ingriued in lieu of comforte by Artesia, who telling him he neuer lookt for other, bad him seeke some other mistresse. He excusing him selfe, and turning ouer the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (saide she) that you haue lost me.

Nay truely Madam (saide Phalanus) it shall not be
be so: for I thinke the losse of such a Mistresse will
prooue a great gaine: and so concluded: to the sporte
of Basilius, to see young folkes loue, that came in
maskt with so great pompe, goe out with so little con-
stancie. But Phalanus first professing great service to
Basilius for his curteous intermitting his solitaire course
for his sake, would yet conduct Artesia to the castele
of Cecropia, whether she desired to goe: vowing in him-
selue, that neither hart, nor mouth-loue, should ever a-
ny more intangle him. And with that resolution he left
the company.

Whence all being dismissed (among whom the black
knight wet away repyning at his luck, that had kept him
from winning the honor, as he knew he should haue don,
to the picture of Pamela) the ill apparelled knight (who
was only desired to stay, because Basilius meant to shew
him to Zelman) puld of his Helmet; & then was knowe
himselfe to be Zelman who that morning (as she told)
while the others were busie, had stolen out to the Prin-
ces stable, which was a mile of from the Lodge, had got-
ten a horse (they knowing it was Basilius pleasure she
should be obeyed) & borrowing that homely armor
for want of a better, had come upon the spur to redeem
Philoceas picture, which she said, she could not beare,
(being one of that little wildernesse-company) should
be in captivitie, if the cunning she had learned in her
coutrye of the noble Amazons, could withstand it: & un-
der that pretext faine she would haue giuen a secret pa-
port to her affection. But this act painted at one instant
redness in Philoceas face, and paleness in Gynecias, but
brought forth no other countenances but of admiratio,
no speches but of comedatiois: at these few (besides loue)

thinking
thinking they honoured them selues, in honouring so accomplished a person as Zelmane; whom dayly they fought with some or other sports to delight, for which purpose Basilius had in a house not farre of, servants, who though they came not uncalled, yet at call were ready.

CHAP. 18.


And so many daies were spent, and many waies vled, while Zelmane was like one that stoode in a tree waiting a good occasio to shoot, & Gynedia a blauncher, which kept the dearest deere from her. But the day being come, which according to an appointed course, the sheapheards were to assembled, & make their pastoral sports afore Basilius: Zelmane (fearing, left many eyes, and comming divers waies, might hap to spye Musidorus) went out to warne him thereof.

But before she could come to the Arbour, she sawe walking from her-ward, a man in sheapperdishe apparel who being in the sight of the Lodge it might seeme he was allowed there. A log cloke he had on, but that cast under his right arme, wherein he held a shephooke, so finely wrought, that it gau a brauery to poverty, & his rayments, though they were meane, yet receiued they handsomnes by the grace of the wearer, though he him-
selfe went but a kinde of languishing pace, with his eies somewhat cast vp to heauen, as though his fancyes strange to mount higher, sometimes throwne downe to the ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthens of his sorrowes; at length, with a lamentable tune, he songe these fewe verses.

Come shepheards weedes, become your masters minde:
Teld outwarde show, what inward chance he tryes:
Nor be abash'd, since such a guest you finde,
Whose strongest hope in your weake comfort lies.

Come shepheards weedes, attend my woefull cryes:
Disse your selues from sweete Menalcas voice:
For other be those tunes which sorrow yses,
From those cleere notes which freely may reioyce.

Then power out plaint, and in one word say this:
Helples his plaint, who spoyleth himselfe of blisse.

And hauing ended, he strake himselfe on the breaste, saying, O miserable wretch, whether do thy destenies guide thee? The voice made Zelemane hasten her pace to ouertake him: which hauing done, she plainly perceaued that it was her deare friend Musidorus, whereat manuailing not a little, she demaunded of him, whether the Goddesse of those woods had such a powre to transforme every body, or whether, as in all enterprizes else he had done, he meant thus to match her in this newe alteration.

Alas, (saide Musidorus) what shall I say, who am loth to say, and yet faine would have said? I find indeed, that all is but lip-wisdom, which wants experience. I now woe
The Countesse of Pembroke

(woe is me) do try what love can do. O Zelmane, who will resist it, must either have no witte, or put out his eyes: can any man resist his creation? certainly by love we are made, and to love we are made. Beasts one-
ly cannot discerne beauty, and let them be in the role of Beasts that do not honor it. The perfect friend-
ship Zelmane bare him, and the great pitie she (by good triall) had of such cases, could not keepe her from smiling at him, remembering how vehemently he had cryed out against the folly of louers. And therefore a little to punish him, Why how now deere cousin (said she) you that were last day so hie in Pulpit against lou-
ers, are you now become so meane an auditor? Re-
member that love is a passion, and that a woorthie mans reason must ever haue the masterhood. I recant,
I recant (cryed Masidorus) and withall falling downe prostrate, O thou celestial, or infernal spirit of Loue, or what other heauely or hellish title thou lift to haue (for effects of both I finde in my selfe) haue compassion of me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be submitted to thee, as in conquering those that were rebellious. No, no saide Zelmane, I see you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my mishaps, and doe but counterfeit thus, to make me see the de-
formitie of my passions: but take heede, that this ieft do not one day turne to earnest. Now I beseech thee (saide Masidorus taking her fast by the hand) even for the truth of our friendship, of which (if I be not altogether an vnhappy man) thou haft some remem-
rance, & by those sacred flames which (I know) haue likewise neerely touched thee; make no ieft of that, which hath so eminently pearced me thorow, nor let that
be light to thee, which is to me so burdensome, that I am not able to beare it. Musidorus both in words & behauiour, did so liuely deliuer out his inward grief, that Zelmane found indecde, he was thorowly wouded: but there rose a new icelous in her minde, left it might be with Philoclea, by whom, as Zelmane thought, in right all hartes and eyes should be inherited. And therefore desirous to be elecrd of that doubt, Musidorus shortly (as in hast and full of passionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his case vnto her.

The day (said he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horse being before tired, would scarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle ( I saw a good way of ) guided me to a young shepheards house, by name Menalca, who seing me to be a straying stranger, with the right honest hospitallity which seemes to be harbourd in the Arcadian brents, & though not with curious costlines, yet with cleanly sufficiencie, entertained me: and haung by talke with him, found the manner of the countrie, something more in particular, then I had by Kalanders report, I agreed to sojourn with him in secret, which he faithfully promised to obserue. And so hether to your arbour divers times repaired: & here by your meanes had the sight (O that it had never bene so, nay, O that it might ever be so) of a Goddesse, who in a definite compasse can set forth infinite beauty. All this while Zelmane was racked with icelousie. But he went on, for (said he) I lying close, and in truth thinking of you, and sayyng thus to my selfe, O sweet Pyrocles, how art thou bewitched: where is thy vertue? where is the vse of thy reason? how much am
am I inferior to thee in the state of the mind? And yet I know I, that all the heavens cannot bring me to such thralldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I spoken this word, when the Ladies came forth; at which sight, I thinke the very words returned back again to strike my soule, at least, an unmeasurable sting I felt in my selfe, that I had spoken such words. At which sight! said Zelmane, not able to beare him any longer. O (sayd Musidorus) I know your suspicion, No, no, banish all such feare, it was, it is, and must be Pamela Then all is safe (sayd Zelmane) proceede, deare Musidorus. I will not (laid he) impute it to my late solitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to the much thinking of you (though that cald the considerati of loue into my mind, which before I ever neglected) nor to the exaltation of Venus nor revenge of Cupid; but even to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddesse, against which, the onely shielde must be my Sepulchre. When I first saw her, I was presently striken, and I (like a foolish child, that when any thing hits him, will strike himselfe againe upon it) would needs looke againe, as though I would perswade mine eyes, that they were deceived. But alas, well haue I found, that Loue to a yeelding hart is a king; but to a resisting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I shaked the stake, which he had planted in the grounde of my hart, the deeper still it sanke into it. But what meane I to speake of the causes of my loue, which is as imposible to describe, as to measure the backside of heauen? Let this word suffice, I loue.

And that you may know I doo so, it was I that came in black armour to defende her picture, where I was both prevented, and beaten by you. And so, I that waite
ted here to do you service, have now myself most need of succor. But wherupon got you your self this apparel? said Zelmaie. I had forgotten to tell you (said Musidorus) though that were one principal matter of my speech; so much am I now master of my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to Menalcas house, full of tormenting desire, after a while fainting under the weight, my courage stir'd vp my wit to seek for some releefe, before I yeelded to perish. At last this came into my head; that very euening, that I had to no purpose last vp'd my horse and armour. I tolde Menalcas, that I was a Thessalian Gentle-man, who by mischaunce having killed a great favorit of the Prince of that coutry, was pursu'd so cruelly, that in no place, but either by favour, or corruption, they would obtain my destruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my persecutions might be asswaged) to disguise myself among the Shephad's of Arcadia, & (if it were possible) to be one of them that were allowed the Prince's presence. Because if the worst should fall, that I were discover'd, yet having gotten the acquittance of the Prince, it might happen to move his hart to protect me. Menalcas (being of an honest disposition) pitied my case, which my face through my inward torment made credible; and so (I giving him largely for it) let me have this rayment, instructing me in all the particularities, touching myselfe, or my selfe, which I desired to know: yet not trusting so much to his constancie, as that I would lay my life, and life of my life, upon it, I hired him to goe into Thessalia to a friend of mine, & to deliver him a letter from me, conjuring him to bring me as speedy an answer as he could, because it imported me
me greatly to know, whether certaine of my friendes did yet possesse any favoure, whose intercessions I might vs for my restitution. He willingly tooke my letter, which being well sealed, indeed conteyned other matter. For I wrote to my trustie servaunt Calodoulus (whom you know) that assoone as he had deliuered the letter, he should keep him prisoner in his house, not sufferinge him to haue conference with any body, till he knewe my further pleasure: in all other respects that he should vs him as my brother. And thus is Menalcas gone, and I here a poore shepheard, more proud of this estate, the of any kingdom: so manifest it is, that the highest point outward things can bring one vs to, is the contentmet of the mind: with which, no estate, without which, all estates be miserable. Now haue I chosen this day, because (as Menalcas tode me) the other shepheards are called to make their sports, and hope that you wil with your credite, finde meane to get me allowed among them. You neede not doubt (answered Zelmane) but that I will be your good mistresse: marrie the best way of dealing must be by Dametas, who since his blunt braine hath perceiued some favoure the Prince dooth beare vs to me (as without doubt the most servile flatterie is lodged most easilie in the grossest capacitie; for their ordinarie conceite draweth a yeelding to their greaters, and then haue they not witte to learne the right degrees of dutie) is much more serviceable vs to me, then I can finde any cause to wish him. And therefore dispaire not to winne him: for every present occasion will catch his senses, and his senses are masters of his sillie mind, onely reverence him, and reward him, and with that bridle and saddle you shall well ride him.
O heauen and earth (said Musidorus) to what a passe are our mindes brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to these crooked shifts: But O Loue, it is thou that doost it: thou changest name vpō name; thou disguisest our bodies, and disfigurest our mindes. But in deed thou haft reason, for though the wayes be foule, the journeys end is most faire and honourable.

**CHAP. 19.**

1. The meanes of Musidorus his apprentice vnto Dametas.
2. The preparation and place of the Pastorals.
3. The Lyons assault on Philoclea, and death by Zelmane.
4. The shee beares on Pamela, and death by Dorus.
5. The Io Pæan of Dametas, and his scape from the beare.
6. Whence those beasts were sent.

O more sweete Musidorus (said Zelmane) of these philosophies; for here comes the very perfon of Dametas. And so he did in deed, with a sword by his side, a forest-bill on his neck, and a chopping-knife under his girdle: in which provided force he had euer gone, since the feare Zelmane had put him in. But he no sooner sawe her, but with head and armes he laid his reverence afore her; inowght to haue made any man forswear all courtesie. And then in Basilius name, he did invite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to haue the Pastoralles.

But
But when he spied Musidorus to be none of the shepherds allowed in that place, he would faine have persuaded himselfe to utter some anger, but that he durste not, yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him, he gave occasion to Musidorus to come nearer him, and feine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard Menaleas, by name Dorus, sent by his father in his tender age to Athens, there to learn some cunning more then ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother Menaleas (latele gone thither to fetch him home) was also deceased: whereupon his death he had charged him to seek the service of Dametas, and to be wholly, and ever gyed by him; as one in whose judgement and integritie, the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gave to Dametas a good summe of golde in redy coine, which Menelcas had bequeathed vnto him, vpon condition he should receive this poore Dorus into his service, that his mind and manner might the better by his dayly example. Dametas, that of all manners of title could best conceie of golden eloquence, being withall tickled by Musidorus prayses, had his brayne so turned, that he became slave to that, which he, that shewed to be his servuant, offered to giue him: yet for countenance luke, he seemed very squiemish, in respect of the charge he had of the Princesse Pamela. But such was the secreete operation of the golde, helped with the perstvasion of the Amazon Zelmane, (who sayde it was pittie so handesome a young man should be any where els, then with so good a master) that in the ende he agreed (if that day he behaued himselfe so to the lyking
of Basilius, as he might be contented) that then he would receive him into his service.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they found Gyneca and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themselves there a while, until the shepherds coming: whether also taking Zelmana with them, as they went, Dametas told them of Dorus, and desired he might be accepted there that day, in stead of his brother Menalca. As for Basilius, he staid behind to bring the shepherds, with whom he meant to cofer, to breed the better Zelmanes liking (which he only regarded) while the other beautiful band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepherdisht pastimes. It was indeed a place of delight; for thorow the midst of it, there ran a sweete brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure streams, & yet seke to close the eie with the purling noise it made upon the pibble stones it ran ouer: the field itself being set in some places with roses, & in al the rest constantly preferring a flourishing greene; the Roses added such a ruddy shew unto it, as though the field were bathfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to inclose a Theater) grew such a sort of trees, as eyther excellency of fruit, statelines of growth, continuall greenenes, or poeticall fancies have made at any time famous. In most part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant arbors, that (one tree to tree, answering another) they became a gallery aloft from almost round about, which below gaue a perfect shadow, a pleasaunt refuge then from the cholerick looke of Phoebus.

In this place while Gyneca walked hard by them, carrying many vnquiet contentions about her, the Ladies
The Countesse of Pembrokes

fate them downe, inquiring many questions of the shepheard Dorus; who (keeping his eie still vpon Pamela) answered with such a trembling voice, & abashed couente
nance, & oftentimes so far from the matter, that it was some sport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him so discountenanced with unwoonted presence. But Zelmann that saw in him the glasse of her owne miserie, taking the hande of Philoclea, and with burning kisses setting it close to her lips (as if it should stande there like a hand in the margine of a Booke, to note some saying worthy to be marked) began to speake these wordes. O Loue, since thou art so changeable in mens estates, how art thou so constant in their tormentes? when sodainly there came out of a wood a monstrous Lion, with a the Beare not far from him, of little lest ferckenese, which (as they gheft) hauing bene huted in Forests far off, were by chaunc come thether, where before such beastes had never bene seene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themselues, altered some thing the couentes of the two Louers, but so, as any man might perceiue, was rather an assemblinge of powers, then dismaiednes of courage. Philoclea no sooner espied the Lio, but that obeying the commaundement of feare, she leapt vp, & ran to the lodge-ward, as fast as her delicate legs could carry her, while Dorus drew Pamela behind a tree, where she stood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is eué ready to feaze. But the Lion (feing Philoclea run away) bent his race to her-ward, & was ready to feaze him selfe on the pray, when Zelmane (to whomte daunger then was a cause of dreadlesnes, all the contpositions of her elemetts being nothing but fierie) with swiftnesse of desire crost him,
him, and with force of affection stroke him such a blow upon his chine, that she opened all his body: wherewith the valiant beast turning vp the with open iawes, she gave him such a thrust thorow his breast, that all the Lion could do, was with his paw to tear of the mantle and fleue of Zelmane, with a little scratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow having take away the effect of his force. But therewithall he fell downe, & gave Zelmane leisure to take of his head, to carry it for a present to her Ladie Philoclea: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her course, like Arethusa when she ran from Alpheus; her light apparell being carried vp with the winde, that much of those beauties she would at another time have willingly hidden, was present to the sight of the twice wounded Zelmane. Which made Zelmane not follow her over hastily, lest she should too soone depriue herself of that pleasure: But carrying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully overtake her, till they came to the presence of Basilius. Nether were they long there, but that Gynecia came thither also: who had bene in such a trance of musing, that Zelmane was fighting with the Lion, before she knew of any Lion coming: but then affection resisting, and the soone ending of the fight preventing all extremitie of feare, she marked Zelmanes fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as Zelmane ran after Philoclea, so she could not find in her hart but run after Zelmane: so that it was a new fight, Fortune had prepared to those woods, to see these great personages thus runne one after the other: each carried forward with an inwarde violence: Philoclea with such feare, that she thought she was still in the Lions mouth:
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Zelmane with an eager and impatient delight, Gynecia with wings of Love, flying they neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before Basilius amazed with this sight, and fearing having such possession in the faire Philoclea, that her blood durst not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of paleness from her most pure whiteness, Zelmane kneeled down, and presented the Lions head unto her. Only Ladie (said she) here see you the punishment of that unnatural beast, which contrary to her owne kind wold have wronged Princes bloud, guided with such traitorous eies, as durst rebell against your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (answered the sweete Philoclea then blushing, for feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinsman bashfulnes) that you excellent Amazon, were there to teach him good manners. And even thankes to that beautie (answered Zelmane) which can give an edge to the bluntest swordes. There Philoclea told her father, how it had hapned: but as she had turned her eyes in her tale to Zelmane, she perceived some blood vpo Zelmanes shoulder, so that starting with the louely grace of pitty, she shewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurse sometimes with overmuch kissing may forget to giue the babe sucke, so had they with too much delighting, in beholding and praying Zelmane, left of to marke whether she needed succour. But then they ran both vnto her, like a father and mother to an onely childe, and (though Zelmane assured them, it was nothing) would needes see it; Gynecia having skill in surgery, an arte in those daies much esteemed, because it serued to vertuous courage, which euë Ladies would (euë with the contept of courage) seeme to
to cherish. But looking upon it (which gave more in-
ward bleeding wounds to Zelmane, for she might some-
times feel Philocleas touch, while she helped hermo-
ther) she found it was indeed of no great importance:
yet applied she a precious balm unto it, of power to
heal a greater griefe.

But even then, & not before, they remembred Pamela,
& therefore Zelmane (thinking of her friend Dorus) was
running back to be satisfied, whe they might all see Pa-
melas coming between Dorus & Dametas, hauing in her
had the paw of a Beare, which the shepheard Dorus had
newly presented vnto her, desiring her to accept it, as
of such a beast, which though she deserued death for
her presumtion, yet was her will to be esteemed, since
she could make so sweet a choice. Dametas for his part
came piping and dauncing, the meriest man in a parish.
But whe he came so neere, as he might be heard of Ba-
silius, he would needs breake thorow his cares with this
joyfull song of their good successe.

Now thanked be the great God Pan,
which thus preserves my loved life:
Thanked be I that kepe a man,
who ended hath this fearefull strife:
For if my man must praifes have,
what then must I that kepe the knaue?

For as the Moone the eies doth please,
with gentle beames not hurting sight:
Yet hath for Sunne the greatest praife,
because from him doth come her light:
So if my man must praifes have,
what then must I that kepe the knaue?

Now having been dispose to the great God Pan,
The Countesse of Pembroke

Being all now come together, & all desirous to know each others aduentures, Pamela's noble hart would needs gratefully make knowne the valiant mean of her safety: which (directing her speach to her mother) she did in this manner. As soone (sai'd she) as ye were all run away, and that I hoped to be in safetie, there came out of the same woods a foule horrible Beare, which (fearing alike to deale while the Lion was present, as soone as he was gone) came furiously towards the place where I was, and this young shepheard left alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wisedome, which since they lay to my charge, because they say, it is the best refuge against that beast, but cue pure fear bringing forth that effect of wisedome) fell downe flat of my face, needing not counterfait being dead, for indeed I was little better. But this shepheard having no other weapon, but that knife you fee, standing before the place where I lay, so behaued him selfe, that the first fight I had (when I thought my selfe nearer Charons ferry,) was the shepheard shewing me his bloody knife in token of victory. I pray you (saide Zelmame, speaking to Dorus, whose valour she was carefull to haue manifested) in what sorte, so ill weaponed, could you atchiue this enterprize? Noble Lady (saide Dorus) the manner of these beasts fighting with any man, is to stande vp vpon their hinder feete: and so this did, & being ready to giue me a shrewd embracement, I thinke, the God Pan, (ever careful of the chiefe blessings of Arcadia) guided my hand so iust to the hart of the beast, that neither she could once touch me, nor (which is the only matter in this worthy remembrance) breed any danger to the Princeesse. For my part, I am rather (withall subjected humblenes) to thanke her excellencies, since the duety thereunto gaue me harte to
to saue my selfe, then to receive thankes for a deede, which was her onely inspiring. And this Dorus spake, keeping affection as much as he could, backe from coming into his eyes and gestures. But Zelmae (that had the same Character in her heart) could easily discern it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in speech, desir'd to understand the conclusion of the matter; and how the honest Dametas was escaped.

Nay (said Pamela) none shall take that office from my selfe, being so much bound to him as I am, for my education. And with that word (scorne borrowing the countenance of myrth) somewhat she smiled, and thus spake on: When (said she) Dorus made me assuredly perceive, that all cause of feare was past (the truth is) I was ashamed to finde my selfe alone with this shepheard: and therefore looking about me, if I could see any bodie; at length we both perceived the gentle Dametas, lying with his breast and head as farre as he could thrust himselfe into a bush: drawing vp his legges as close vnto him as hee coulde: for, like a man of a very kind nature, soone to take pittie of himselfe, he was full resolved not to see his owne death. And when this shepheard pushed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a good while, ere we could perswade him, that Dorus was not the beare: so that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, & shew him the beaft, as deade as he could wish it: which you may beleue me, was a very joyfull sight vnto him. But then he forgat all curtesie, for he fell vpon the beaft, swearing it many a manfull wound: swearing by much, it was not wel such beasts shuld be suffered in a cõmõ welth. And then my governour, as full of ioy, as before of feare, came
The Countesse of Pembroke's
came dauncing and singeing before vs as even now you saw him. Well well (said Basilius) I haue not chosen Dametas for his fighting, nor for his discoursing, but for his plainenesse and honestie, and therein I know he will not deceaue me.

But then he told Pamela (not so much because she should know it, as because he would tell it) the wonderfull act Zelanne had perfoured, which Gyncia likewise spake off, both in such extremite of praising as was easie to be seene; the constructions of their speach might best be made by the Grammer rules of affection. Basilius told with what a gallant grace shee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another Pallas with the spoiles of Gorgon. Gyncia swore, shee saw the face of the young Hercules killing the Nemean Lion, & all with a grateful affent confirmed the same praises: onely poore Dorus (though of equall defert, yet not proceeding of equall estate) should haue bene left forgotten, had not Zelanne againe with great admiration, begun to speake of him, asking, whether it were the fashion or no, in Arcadia, that shepherds should performe such valorous enterprises. This Basilius (hauling the quicker sense of a loyer) tooke, as though his Mi-
sters had given a secret reprehension, that he had not shewed more gratefulnesse to Dorus; and therefore (as nymblie as he could) enquired of his estate; adding promise of great rewards: among the rest, offering to him, if he would exercise his courage in soldierie, he would commit some charge vnto him under his Lieutenant Philipax. But Dorus (whose ambition clymed by another stayer) hauing first answered touching his estate, that he was brother to the shepheard Menaleas, who
who among other, was wont to resort to the Princes presence, & excused his going to soulderie, by the unaptness he found in himselfe that way: he told Basilius, that his brother in his last testament had willed him to serve Dametas; and therefore (for due obedience thereunto) he would think his service greatly rewarded, if he might obtaine by that mean to live in the fight of his Prince, and yet practice his owne chosen vocation. Basilius (liking well his goodly shape and handsome manner) charged Dametas to receive him like a sonne into his house: saying, that his valour, and Dametas truth would be good bulwarkes against such mischieves, as (he sticked not to say) were threatned to his daughter Pamela.

Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that had bene said (because he had no worse to fall into then his owne) accepted Dorus: and with all, telling Basilius, that some of the shepheardes were come; demaunded in what place he would see their sports: who first curious to know whether it were not more requisite for Zelmanes hunte to rest, then sit vp at those pastimes; and she (that felt no wound but one) earnestly desiring to haue Pastorals, Basilius commanded it should be at the gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince being (according to the auncient manner) he made Zelmane sit beTwene him & his wife therein, who thought her selfe betwene drowning and burning: and the two young Ladies of either side the throne, and so prepared their eyes and eares to bee delighted by the shepheardes.

But before al of them were assembled to begin their sports, there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or seeming
The Countesse of Pembroke

seeming so to be for haste) with humble hastines told Basilius, that his Mistres, the Lady Cecropia, had sent him to excuse the mischance of her beastes ranging in that dangerous fort, being happened by the folly of the keeper, who thinking himself able to rule them, had carried them abroad, & so was deceived: whom yet (if Basilius would punish for it) she was ready to deliver. Basilius made no other answere, but that his Mistres if shee had any more such beastes, should cause them to be killed: and then he told his wife & Zelmae of it, because they should not feare those woods; as though they harbored such beastes, where the like had never bene seene. But Gynecia tooke a further conceit of it, mistrusting Cecropia, because shee had heard much of the diuellish wickednesse of her heart, and that particularly she did her bent to bring vp her sonne Amphialus (being brothers sonne to Basilius) to aspire to the crowne, as next heire male after Basilius; and therefore saw no reason, but that she might conjecture, it proceeded rather of some mischievous pradise, than of misfortune. Yet did she onely vttter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, since the worst was past, shee would attend a further occasion, least over much haste might seeme to proceede of the ordinarie mislike betwene sisters in Lawe: onely they maruelled, that Basilius looked no further into it; who (good man) thought so much of his late conceiued common wealth, that all other matters were but digressions vnto him. But the shepheards were ready, and with wel handling themselves, called their sensese to attend their pastimes.

The
ASILIVS, because Zelma ne so would have it, vsed the artificiall day of torches, to lighten the sports their inuention could minister. And yet because many more shepheards were newly come, then at the first; he did in a gentle manner chastife the cowardise of the fugitive shepheards: with making them (for that night) the Torch-bearers, and the others later come, he willed with all freedome of speeche and behauiour, to keepe their accustomed method. Which while they prepared to do, Dametas, who much disdained (since his late authority) all his old companions, brought his servuant Dorus in good acquaintance and allowance of the; & himselfe stood like a direceter over the, with nodding, gaping, winking, or stamping shewing how he did like, or mislike those things he did not understand. The first sports the shepheards shewed, were full of such leapes & gambols, as being accorded to the Pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, euen as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe god Pan, and his companions the Satyres. Then would they cast away their Pipes; and holding hand in hand, daunce as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voices, which they would vfe in singinge some short coplets, whereto the one halfe beginning, the other halfe should answere. As the one halfe saying,

We loue, and have our loues rewarded.

The others would answere.

We loue, and are no whit regarded.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

The first againe.

We finde most sweete affections spare,
With like tune it should be as in quire s ent back againe.
That sweete, but sover despairfull care.
A third time likewise thus;

Who can despaire, whom hope doth beare?
The aunswe:ere.

And who can hope, that feeses despaire?
Then all ioyning their voyces, and dauncing a faster measure, they would conclude with some such words:

As without breath, no pipe doth move,
No musike kindly without loue.

Having thus varied both their songs and daunces into diuers sorts of inuentions; their last sport was one of them to prouoke another to a more large expressing of his passions: which Lalus (accounted one of the best singers amongst them) haing marked in Dorus dauncing, no leffe good grace & honsome behauior, then extreame tokens of a travellerd minde; began first with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus to chalenge Dorus, and was by him answered in the vnderwritten sort,
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

Nightingales seldome sing, the Pie still chattereth:
The wood cries most, before it thoroughly kindled be,
Deadly wounds inward bleed, each sleight sore mattereth.
Hardly they heard, which by good hunters singled be.
Shallow brookes murmur most, deep silent slide away,
Nor true love loves those loves with others mingled be.

If thou wilt not be scene, thy face goe hide away,
Be none of us, or els maintaine our fashion:
Who frownes at others feastes, dooth better hide away.
But if thou hast a Loue, in that Loues passion,
I challenge thee by show of her perfection,
Which of us two deserveth most compassion.

Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:
Sing then, and see (for now thou hast inflamed me)
Thy health too meane a match for my infection.
No, though the heau'ns for high attempts haue blamed me,
Yet high is my attempt. O Muse historifie
Her praise, whose praise to learne your skill hath framed me.

Muse hold your peace: but thou, my God Pan glorifie
My Kalas giftes; who with all good giftes filled is.
Thy pipe, O Pan, shall helpe, though I sing foritie.
A heape of sweetes she is, where nothing spilled is;
Who though she be no Bee, yet full of honie is:
A Lillie field, with plowe of Roele which tilled is.
Milde as a Lambe, more daintie than a Conie is:
Her eyes my eyesight is, her converazation
More glade to me, then to a miser monie is.
What cope account she makes of estimation?
How nice to touch, how all her speeches peized be?
The Countesse of Pembroke's
A Nymph thus turned, but mended in translation.

Dorus. Such Kala is: but ah, my fancies rayfed be
In one, whose name to name were high presumption,
Since vertues all, to make her title, pleased be.
   O happie Gods, which by inward assumption
Enjoy her soule, in bodies faire possession,
And keep it yoynde, saving your fates consumption.
   How oft with raine of teares skies make confession,
Their dwellers rapt with sight of her perfection
From heav'nly throne to her heau'n use digression?
   Of best things then what world can yeild confession
To liken her? Decke yours with your comparifion:
She is her selfe, of best things the collection.

Lalus. How oft my dolefull Sire cried to me, tarrie sonne
When first he spied my loue? how oft he said to me,
Thou art no fouldier fitte for Cupids garrifon?
   My sonne, kepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:
Louv well thine owne: me thinkes, woolles whiteenes passeth all:
I neuer found long loue such wealth hath paide to me.
   This winde he pent: but when my Kala glaseth all
My sight in her faire limmes, I then assure my selfe,
Not rotten sheepe, but high crownes she surpasseth all.
   Can I be poore, that her golde hair procure my selfe?
Want I white woull, whose eyes her white skinne garnished?
Till I get her, shall I to kepe enure my selfe?

Dorus. How oft when reason saw, love of her harnished
With armour of my hart, he cried, O vanitie,
'To set a pearle in steele so meanely varnished?
Looke to thy selfe: reach not beyond humanitie:

Her
Her minde, beames, stait farre from thy weake wings banished:
And Loue, which louter hurtis is inhumanitie.

Thus Reason said: but she came, Reason vanished;
Her eyes so masting me, that such obficion
Seemed but to spoyle the foode of thoughts long famished.

Her peerles height my minde to high erection
Drawes vp, and if hope-hayling ende lines pleasure,
Offsayrer death how can I make election?

Once my well-waiting eyes espied my treasure,
With Sleeues turnde up, loose haire, and brest enlarged,
Her fathers corne (moving her faire limmes meause.
O cried I, of so meane worke be discharged:
Measure my case, how by thy beauties filling
With seede of woes my hart brimme-full is charged.

Thy father bids thee saue, and chides for spilling.
Saue then my soule, still not my thoughts well heaped,
No louely praise was ever got by killing.

These bolde words she did heare, this fruite I reaped,
That she, whose looke alone might make me blessed,
Did smile on me, and then away she leaped.

Once,ō sweete once, I saw with dread oppressed
Her whom I dread, so that with prostrate lying
Her length the earth in Loues chiefe clothing dresed.
I saw that riches fell, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enjoy so deare a couer,
But deck therewith my soule for your sake dying.

Lay all your feare upon your fearefull louter:
Shine eyes on me, that both our lines be guarded;
So I your sight, you shall your selves recover.

I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:

Lalus.

Dorus.

But.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

But straight they fledde, summoned by cruel honor,
Honor, she cause, desart is not regarded.

Lalus.  This mayde, thus made for joyes, o' Pan become her,
That without love she spendes her yeares of love:
So faire a fielde would well become an owner.
And if enchantment can a harde hart move,
I teach me what circle may acquaint her sprite,
Affections charmes in my behalfe to prove.
The circle is my (round about her) sight:
The powre I will invoke dwelles in her eyes:
My charmse should be, she haunt me day and night.

Dorus.  Fare other care, O Muse, my sorrow tries,
Bent to such one, in whom, myself must say,
Nothing can mend that point that in her lies.
What circle then in so rare force beares stone?
Whose sprite all sprites can spoile, raise, damn, or save:
No charmse holdes her, but well possessse she may;
Possesse she doth, and makes my soule her slave:
My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot.
No thralles like them that inward bondage haue.

Lalus.  Kala at length conclude my longing lotte:
Disdaine me not, although I be not faire:
Who is an heire of many hundred sheep
Doth beauties keep, which never Sunne can burne,
Nor storms doe turne, fairenes serues oft to wealth.
Yet all my health I place in your good-will.
Which if you will (o doo) bestow on me,
Such as you see, such still you shall me finde.
Constant and kind: my sheep your foode shall breed,
Their woolly your weede, I will you Musique yeeld
In flowrie fielde; and as the day begins
With twenty ginnes we will the small birds take,
And pastimes make, as Nature things hath made.
But when in shade we meet of mirtle bowes,
Then Louve allowes, our pleasures to enrich,
The thought of which doth passe all worldly pelfe.

Lady your selfe, whom neither name I dare,
And titles are but spots to such a worthye,
Heare plaints come forth from dungeon of my minde.
The noblest kinde relieft not others woes.
I have no sheves of wealth: my wealth is you,
My beauties hewe your beames, my health your deeds;
My minde for weeds your vertues liverie weares.
My goode is teares; my tunes waymenting yeeld:
Depeare my fielde, the flowers spirits warrs;
My day newe cares: my ginnes my daily sight,
In which do light small birds of thoughts orectrowne:
My pastimes none: time passeth on my fall:
Nature made all, but me of dolours made:
I finde no shade, but where my Sunne doth burnt:
No placce to turne, without, within it fryes:
Nor helpe by life or death who living dies.

But if my Kala this my suitte denies,
Which so much reason beares,
Let crows peike out mine eyes, which saw too much:
If still her minde be such,
My earthy mouldie will melde in matrie teares.

My earthy mouldie doth melde in matrie teares,

N

And
The Countesse of Pembroke's

And they againe resolue
To aire of sighes, sighes to the hartes fire, turne,
Which doth to ashes burne:
So doth my life within its selfe dissolve.

Lalus. So doth my life within it selfe dissolve,
That I am like a flower
New plucked from the place where it did breed,
Life showing, dead indeed:
Such force hath Love above poore Natures power.

Dorus. Such force hath Love above poore Natures power,
That I growe like a shade,
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyne,
While that one body shine.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.

Lalus. Oh he is mard that is for others made.
Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it hath mard my shepheardes trade.
Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loves condition:
Of singing take to thee the reputation.

Dorus. Of singing take to thee the reputation
New friend of mine, I yeeld to thy habilitie:
My soule doth seeke another estimation.
But ah my Mule I would thou hadst agilitie,
To worke my Goddesse so by thy invention,
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.
Seen, and unknowne, heard, but without attention.

This
This Eclogue betwixt Lalus & Dorus, of every one of the beholders received great commendations. When Basilius called to a yong shepheard, who nether had daunced nor song with the, but layne all this while vpó the ground at the foot of a cypresse tree, in so deep a melancholy, as though his mind were banished from the place he loued, to be in prifon in his body: & desired him he would begin some Eclogue, with some other of the shepheards, according to the accustomed guise: or els declare the discourse of his owne fortune, vnknowne to him; as being a straunger in that coutry. But he prayed the King to pardon him, the time being far too joyoul to suffer the rcherfall of his miseries. Yet, to satisfy Basilius some way, he fange this songe, he had learned before he had subiected his thoughts to acknowledge no maister, but a mistresse.

As I my little flocke on Ister banke
(A little flocke, but well my pipe they couthe)
Did piping leade the Sunne already sanke
Beyond our worlde, and er I got my boote
Each thing with mantle black the night doth scothe,
Saving the glowe worme, which would curteous be.
Of that small light oft watching shepheards see.

The welkin had full niggardly enclosed
In coper of dimme cloudes his silver groates,
Icleped starres; each thing to rest disposed:
The caues were full, the mountaines voide of goates:
The birds eyes closed closed their chirping notes.
As for the Nightingale woodmusiques King,
It August was, he daynde not then to sing.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Amid my shepe, though I sawe nought to feare
Yet (for I nothing sawe) I feared soere;
Then fonde I which thing is a charge to beare
As for my shepe I dreaded mickle more
Then euer for myselfe since I was borne:

I sate me downe: for see to goe ne could,
And sange unto my shepe lest stray they should.

The sone I sange, old Lanquet had me taught,
Lanquet, the shepheard best swifte Ister knewe,
For clerkly reed, and hating what is naught,
For faithfull hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his sweet skill my skille se youth he drewe,
To haue a feeling tast of him that sitts
Beyond the heauen, far more beyond your witts.

He said, the Musique best thilke powers pleas'd
Was sumpe concorde betwene our wit and wills:
Where higest notes to godlines are rais'd,
And lowest sinke not downe to iote of ill:
With old true tales he woont mine eares to fill,

How shepheards did of yore; how now they thrive,
Spoiling their flock, or while twixt the they strive.

He liked me, but pitied lustfull youth:
His good strong staffe my slippery yeares upbore:
He still hop'd well, because he loued truth:
Till forste to parte, with harte and eyes euensore,
To worthy Coriden he gave me ore.

But thus in okes true shade recounted he
Which now in nights deep shade sheep heard of me.

Such
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

Such maner time there was (what time I n’ot)
When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
Was onely wor’d with such as beasts begot:
Unknowne as then were they that builded towers:
The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers
 Might freely rome, or rest, as seemed them:
 Man was not man their dwellings in to hem.

The beasts had sure some beastly policie:
For nothing can endure where order n’is.
For once the Lion by the Lambe did lie;
The fearfull Hinde the Leopard did kisse:
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hisse.
This thinke I well, the beasts with courage clad
Like Senators a harmeles empire had.

At which whether the others did repine,
(For enuie harbreth most in feebest hertes)
Or that they all to chaunging did enclime,
(As even in beasts their dames leaue chaunging parts)
The multitude to Ioue a suite empartes,
With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
Roring, and howling for to have a King.

A King, in language theirs they said they would:
(For then their language was a perfect speech)
The birdes likewise with chirpes, and puing could
Cackling, and chattering, that of Ioue beseech,
Onely the owle still warned them not to seech
So hastily that which they would repent:
But sawe they would, and he to deserts went.

N 3

Ioue
The Countesse of Pembroke's
Ouic wisely said (for wisdome wisely saines)
O beasts, take heed what you of me desier.
Rulers will thinke all things made them to please;
And soone forget the swineke due to their hire.
But since you will, part of my heauenly fixe
I will you lende, the rest your selues must gave.
That it both see and felt may with you live.

Full glad they were and tooke the naked sprite;
Which strike the Earth clothed in his claye.
The Lion, harte, the Ounce gave active might;
The Horse, good shape, the Sparrow, lust to play;
Nightingale, voice, entising songes to saye.
Elephant gave a perfect memorie:
And Parot, ready tongue, that to applie.

The Foxe gave crafte, the Dog gave slatterie;
Ass, patience, the Mole, a working thought;
Eagle, high looke, Wolfe secrete crueltie;
Monkie, sweet breath, the Cow, her faire eyes brought;
the Ernion, whitest skinne, spotted with nought;
The sheep, mild seeming face, sliming, the Beare;
The Stagge did give the harme eschewing feare.

The Hare, her sleights, the Cat, his melanchole;
Aite, industrié, and Conyne, skill to builde;
Cranes, order, Storkes, to be appearing holie;
Camyleon, ease to change, Ducke, ease to yelde;
Crowdile, care, which might be falsely dilde:
Ape great thing gas, though he did moving stand,
The instrument of instruments, the hand.
Ech other beast likewise his present brings:
And (but they draid their Prince they ought should want)
They all consented were to give him wings:
And aye more ane towards him for to plant,
To their owne worke this priviledge they grant,
That from thenceforth to all eternitie,
No beast should freely speake, but onely he.

Thus Man was made, thus Man their Lord became:
Who at the first, wanting, or hiding pride,
He did to beastes best use his cunning frame;
With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,
And fellow-like let his dominion slide;
Not in his sayings saying I, but we:
As if he meant his lordship common be.

But when his scate so rooted he had found,
That they now skilft not, how from him to wend;
Then gan in guistlesse earth full many a wound,
Iron to seeke, which gainst it selfe should bend,
To teare the bowels, that good corre should send.
But yet the common Damme none did bemoone;
Because (though hurt) they neuer heard her groane.

Then gan the factions in the beastes to breed;
Where helping weaker sort, the nobler beastes,
(As Tygers, leopards, beares, and Lions feed)
Disdained with this, in deserts fought their restes;
Where famine ranine taught their hungric chestes,
That craftily he forst them to do ill,
Which being done he afterwards would kill.

For
The Countesse of Pembroke's

For murtherers done, which never erst was scene,
By those great beastses, as for the weakers good,
He chose themselves his guarders for to bene,
Gains from those of might, of whom in fear they stood.
As horse and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
Blith were the commons castell of the fielde,
I bo when they saw their foc of greatness kilde.

But they or spet, or made of slender might,
Then quickly did the meaner castell finde,
The great bemes gone, the house on shoulders light:
For by and by the horse faire bitts did binte.
The dogge was in a collar taught his kinde.
As for the gentle birds like cace might reve
When falcon they, and goschauke saw in meve.

Worst fell to smallest birds, and meanest heard,
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he used.
Yet first but wooll, or fethers off he teard:
And when they were well vs'd to be abused,
For hungrie teeth their flesh with teeth he brused:
At length for glutton taste he did them kill:
At last for sport their fillie lines did spill.

But yet a man, rage not beyond thy neede:
Doome it no gloire to swell in tyrannie.
Thou art of blood, joy not to see things bleede:
Thou searest death, thinke they are loth to die.
A plaint of guiltlesse hurt doth pierce the skie.
And you poor beastes, in patience bide your hell,
Or know your strengths, and then you shall do well.

Thus
Thus did I sing, and pipe eight sullen hours
To sheepe, whom loue, not knowledge, made to heare,
Now fancies fits, now fortunes balefull flowers:
But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare:
For to my dimmed eyes beganne t'appeare
The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
Sure shepherds signe, that morn should soon fetch day.

According to the nature of diuerfe eares, diuerse
judgements streight followed: some praising his
voice, others his words fit to frame a pastorall stile, oth-
ers the strangenes of the tale, and scanning what he
shuld meane by it. But old Geron (who had borne him a
grudge euer since in one of their Eclogues he had taken
him vp ouer-bitterly) tooke hold of this occasion to
make his revenges, and said, He never saw thing worse
proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not
what beastes at such a sport-meeting, when rather some
song of loue, or matter for joyfull melody was to be
brought forth. But, said he, This is the right conceipt
of young men, who thinke, then they speake wiselieft,
when they cannot vnderstand themselves. But little did
the melancholike shepherd regard either his dispraifes,
or the others praises, who had set the foundation of
his honour there; where he was most despised. And
therefore he returning againe to the traine of his debo-
late pensiuenesse, Geron inuited Hiflor to answere him
in Eclogue-wife, who indeed hauing bene long in loue
with the faire Kala, and now by Lalus ouergone; was
growne into a detestation of marriage. But thus it was.

Geron
The Countesse of Pembroke.

Geron.  Hiistor.

In faith, good Hiistor, long is your delay,
   From holy marriage sweete and surest meanes:
Our foolish lust in honest rules to stay.
   I pray thee seeke to Lalus ample leane:
   Thou seest, how frieke, and jolly now he is,
That last day seem'd, he could not chew a beane.
   Believe me man, there is no greater bliss,
Then is the quiet joy of loving wife;
Which who so wants, halfe of himself doth lose.
   Friend without change, playfellow without strife,
   Food without fulnes, counsale without pride,
Is this sweet doubling of our single life.

Hiistor.  No doubt to whom so good chance did betide,
   As for to finde a pasture framed with golde,
He were a fool, if there he did not abide.
   Who would not have a Phoenix if he could?
The humming Waspe, if it had not a stinge,
   Before all flies the Waspe accept I would.
   But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,
Phoenix but one, of Crowes we millions have:
The Waspe seemes gay, but is a combrous thing.
   If many Kalaes our Arcadia gane,
Lalus example I would soone enue,
   And thinke, I did myself from sorrow sune.
   But of such winces we finde a slender crow;
Shrewdnes so stirs, pride so pusses up the hart,
They seldome ponder what to them is due.
   With meager looks, as if they still did smart;
   Pating
Puiling, and whimpering, or else scolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.
Ether dull silence, or eternall chat;
Still contrarie to what her husband sayes;
If he do praiſe the dog, she likes the cat.
Austere she is, when he would honest playes;
And gamesome then, when he thinkes on his sheepe;
She bids him goe, and yet from iorney sayes.
She warre doth euery with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them tremb'ld, who friends by nature are,
Envyng shallow toyes with malice deepe.
And if forsooth there come some new found ware,
The little coine his sweating broves haue got,
Must goe for that, if for her loures he care:
Or els, Nay faith, mine is the luckleſt lot,
That euery fell to honest woman yet:
No wife but I haue such a man, God wot.
Such is their speech, who be of sober wit,
But who doe let their tongues shew well their rage.
Lord, what bywords they speake, what spit they spit?
The house is made a very lothsome cage,
Wherein the birde doth never sing but cry;
With such a will as nothing can affwage.
Dearly the servants doe their wages buy,
Reuiled for ech small fault, sometimes for none:
They better liue that in a gaile doe lie.
Let other fowler spots away be blowne;
For I seeke not their shame, but still me thinke,
A better life it is to lye alone.

Who for ech fickle fcare from virtue shrinkes,
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:

Geron

No
The Countesse of Pembroke's
No mortall man the cuppe of suretie drinkes.
The heau'nys doo not good haps in handfuls bring.
But let vs pike our good from out much bad:
That still our little world may know his king.
But certainly so long we may be glad,
While that we doo what nature doth require,
And for th'event we neuer ought be sad.
Man oft is plag'de with aire,is burnt with fire,
In water drown'd, in earth his burial is;
And shall we not therefore their use desire?
Nature above all things requireth this,
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;
Which drawne-out line doth hold all humane blisse.
Thy father iustly may of thee complaine,
If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,
In granting unto him a grandfress gaine.
Thy common-wealth may rightly grieued be,
Which must by this immortall be preserved,
If thys thou murther thy posteritie.
His very being he hath not deserued,
Who for a selfe-conceit will that forbeare,
Whereby that being aye must be conserv'd.
And God forbid, women such cattell were,
As you paint them : but well in you I finde,
No man doth speake aright, who speakes in scare.
Who onely sees the ill is worse then blind.
These fiftie winters maried haue I beene;
And yet finde no such faults in womankind.
I haue a wife worthie to be a Queene,
So well she can command, and yet obey;
In ruling of a house so well she's scene.
And yet in all this time, betwixt us tway,
Arcadia. Lib. i.

We beare our double yoke with such consent,
That never past soule word, I dare well say.

But these be your love-toyes, which still are spent
In lawlesse games, and love not as you should,
But with much studie learne late to repent.

How well last day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder telisie?
Yet now the roote of him abase you would.

Goe to, goe to, and Cupid now applie
To that where thou thy Cupid maist abowe,
And thou shalt finde in women vertues lie.

Sweete supple mindes which soone to wisdome bowe
Where they by wisdomes rule directed are,
And are not forst fonde thralldome to allow.

As we to get are fram'd, so they to spare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cherish:
We care abroad, and they of home haue care.

O Histor, seeke within thy selfe to flourish:
Thy house by thee must live, or els be gone:
And then who shall the name of Histor nourish?

Riches of children passe a Princes throne,
Which touch the fathers hart with secret joy,
When without shame he faith these be mine owne.

Marrie therefore, for marriage will destroy
Those passions which to youthfull head doo clime
Mothers and Nurses of all vaine annoy.

All the assemblie laught at the lustines of the old fe-
lowe, and easilie perceiued in Histor, he liked Latin's
fortune better, then he loued his person. But Basilius
was eager to entermixe with these light notes of libertie, some
sadder tune, set to the key of his own passion, not seeing
there
The Countesse of Pembroke.

there Strephon or Klaius, (who called thence by Vranias letter, were both gone to continue their suite, like two true runners, both employing their best speed, but not one hindring the other) he called to one Lamd of their acquaintance, and willed him to sing some one of their songs, which he redily performed in this doble Seftine.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. You Gote-heard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines, You Nymphes that haunt the springs in pleasant vallies, You Satyrs joyde with free and quiet forrests, Vouchsafe your silent cares to playning musique, Which to my woes givens still an early morning:
And draws the dolor on till very evening.

Klaius. O Mercurie, foregoer to the evening, O heauenlie huntresse of the sausage mountaines, O lonelie starre, entitled of the morning, While that my voice doth fill these wofull vallies, Vouchsafe your silent cares to playing musique, Which oft hath Echo tie'd in secrete forrests.

Strephon. That was once free-burges of the forrests, Where shade from Sunne, and sports I sought at evening, That was once esteem'd for pleasant musique, Am banisht now among the monstrous mountaines Of huge despaire, and sole afflictions vallies, Am growne a shriek-owle to my selfe each morning.

Klaius. That was once delighted every morning, Hunting the wilde inhabiteres of forrests,
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

I that was once the musique of these vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is evening,
Hart-broken so, that molehills seeme high mountaines.
And fill the vales with cries in flede of musique.

Long since alas, my deadly Swannish musique
Hath made it selfe a cryer of the morning,
And hath with wailing strength clim'd highest mountaines:
Long since my thoughts more detest be then forrests:
Long since I see my joyes come to their evening,
And state thrown downe to over-troden vallies.

Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,
Have praide me leave my strange exclaiming musique,
Which troubles their dayes worke, and joyes of evening:
Long since I hate the night, more hate the morning:
Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,
And make me wish my selfe layd under mountaines.

Me seemes I see the high and stately mountaines,
Transforme themselfes to love deiected vallies:
Me seemes I heare in those ill changed forrests,
The Nightingales doo learne of Owles their musique:
Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning
Turnde to the mortall serene of an evening.

Me seemes I see a filthie cloudie eveninge,
As soon as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning
When I doo smell the flowres of these vallies:
Me seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musique,
The dreadfull cries of murdered men in forrests.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Strephon. 
I wish to see the trees of all these forrests;
I give the Sunne a last farewell each evening;
I curse the spilling of th' best of Musick:
With spite I doe hate the loftie mountaines;
And with despite despite the humble vallies:
I do dease night, evening, day, and morning.

Klaus. 
Curse to my selfe my prayer is, the morning.
My fire is more, then can be made with forrests;
My state more base, then are the basest vallies:
I wish no evenings more to see, each evening;
Shamed I have my selfe in sight of mountaines,
And stoppe mine cares, lest I grove mad with Musick.

Strephon. 
For she, whose parts maintaine a perfect musique,
Whose beautey shin'd more then the blushing morning,
Who much did passe in state she statly mountaines,
In straightnes past the Cedars of the forrests,
Hath cast me wretch into eternall evening,
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.

Klaus. 
For she, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are vallies,
She, whose last word brings from the sheares their musique,
At whose approach the Sunne rose in the evening,
Who, where she went, bare in her forhead morning,
Is gone, is gone from these our spoyle forrests,
Turning to desarts our best passyur'd mountaines.

Strephon. 
These mountaines witnesse shall, so shall these vallies,
These forrests eke, made wretched by our musique,
Our morning hymne is this, and song at evening.
Ellman seeing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrained conceits had new burst out of prison, she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing but Philocles cares, laying fast holde on her face with her eyes, she sang these Sapphiques, speaking as it were to her owne Hope.

If mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to judge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaved,
Hope we do live yet.

But if eyes faile then, when I most doo need them,
Or if eyes language be not unto her knowne,
So that eyes message doo returne rejected,
Hope we doo both dye.

Yet dying and dead, doo we sing her honour;
So become our tombes monuments of her praisie;
So becomes our losse the triumph of her gayne,
Hers be the glory.

If the sphaeres senselesse doo yet hold a musique,
If the Swannes sweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber when it hath the life lost,
Teldeth a lutes tune.

Are then humane mindes priviledg'd so meanly,
As that hatefull death can abridge them of powre,
With the vowe of truth to recorde to all worldes,
That we be her spoiles?

O

Thus
Thus not ending, andes the due praise of her praise;
Fleshly vaile consumes; but a soule hath his life,
Which is helds in loue, loue it is, that hath ioynde
Life to this our soule.

But if eyes can speake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language sbe doo hap to judge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaude,
Hope we doo line yet.

What exclaiming praises Basilius gaue to Zelmanes
sone, any man may gheffe, that knowes loue is
better then a paire of spectacles to make every thing
seeme greater, which is seene through it: and then is it
neuer tongue-tied, where fit commendation (whereof
womankind is so licorous) is offered vnto it. Yea, he fel
prostrate on the ground, and thanked the Gods, they
had preferred his life so long, as to heare the very mu-
lique they themselves vfed, in an earthly body. But the
wafting of the torches servued as a watch vnto them, to
make them see the time waiste; and therefore the King
(though vnwilling) rose from the seate, which he
thought excellently setted on the one side; and consi-
dering Zelmanes late hurte, perswaded her to take that
farre-spent nights rest. And so of all sides they went to
recommend themselves to the elder brother of death.

The end of the first Booke.
THE SECOND BOOKE  
OF THE COUNTESE OF  
PEMBEROKES ARCADIA.  

CHAP. I.  

The love-complaintes of Gynecia, Zelmane, and Basilius. Her, and his wooing of Zelmane, and her  
shifting of both, to bemoone her selfe  

In these pastorall pastimes a great number of dayes were sent to follow their flying predecessours, while the  
cup of poison (which wasdeepely tasted of this noble companie) had left no finewe of theirs without mortally  
searching into it; yet never manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that the night (parting away angrily, that she could  
distill no more sleepe into the eies of lovers) had no sooner giuen place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne bestowed his beames upon the  
tops of the mountaines, but that the wofull Gynecia (to whom rest was no eafe) had left her loathed lodging,  
and gotten her selfe into the solitary places thole de-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

...ferts were full of, going vp and downe with such vnquiet motions, as a grieved & hopeles mind is wont to bring forth. There appeared vn to the eies of her judgement the euils she was like to run into, with ougly infamie waiting vpon them: she felt the terrous of her owne conscience: she was guilty of a long exercised vertue, which made this vice the fuller of deformatie. The uttermost of the good she could aspire vn to, was a mortall wound to her vexed spirits: and lastly no small part of her euils was, that she was wife to see her euils. In so much, that having a great while throwne her countenaunce ghaftly about her (as if she had called all the powers of the worlde to witnesse of her wretched estate) at length castinge vp her watrie eyes to heauen, O Sunne (said she) whose vnspotted light directeth the steps of mortall mankind, art thou not ashamed to impart the clearnesse of thy presence to such a dult-creeping worne as I am? O you heauens (which continually keepe the course allotted vnto you) can none of your influences preuaile so much vpon the miserable Cynecidia, as to make her preferue a course so long embraced by her? O deserts, deserts, how fit a guest am I for you, since my hart can people you with wild rauenous beastes, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where doost thou hide thy selfe? or what hideous thing is this which doth eclips thee? or is it true that thou weart neuer but a vaine name, and no essentiaall thing, which haft thus left thy professed seruant, when she had most need of thy louely presence? O imperfect proportio of reason, which ca too much forsee, & too little preuent. Alas, alas (said she) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuse for all my faultinesse. But wretch
wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all succour, &
my euill deruing doth exceed my euill fortune. For
nothing els did my husband take this straunge resolu-
tiō to live so solitarily: for nothing els haue the winds
delivered this straunge guest to my country: for no-
thing els haue the deßinies refuered my life to this
time, but that only I (most wretched I) should become
a plague to myself, and a shame to womankind. Yet if
my desire (how vninft so euer it be) might take effect,
though a thousand deaths followed it, and every death
were followed with a thousand shames; yet should not
my sepulcher receive me without some contentment.
But alas, though sure I am, that Zelmarie is such as can
answer my loue; yet as sure I am, that this disguising
must needs come for some foretakē conceipt. And then,
wretched Gyfiecia, where calt thou find any small ground-
plot for hope to dwell upon? No, no, it is Philoclea his
hart is set upon: it is my daughter I have borne to sup-
plant me. But if it be so, the life I have giuen thee (vn-
gratelfull Philoclea) I will sooner with these handes be-
cause thee of, then my birth shall glory, she hath bereau-
ed me of my desires. In shame there is no comfort, but 

Having spokē thus, she began to make a piteous war
with her faire haire, when she might heare (not far fro
her) an extremely doleful voice, but so suppressed with
a kind of whispering note, that she could not concean
the wordes distinctly. But (as a lamentable tune is the 

sweetest musicke to a wofull mind) she drew thether
neere-away, in hope to find some compagniē of her mis-
ery. And as she passed on, she was stopped with a nuber
of trees, so thickly placed together, that she was afraid
she should (with rushing thorow) stop the speach of

O 3
The Countesse of Pembroke's

the lamentable partie, which she was so desirous to understand. And therefore setting her downe as softly as she could (for she was now in distaunce to heare) she might first perceave a Lute excellently well played upon, and then the same dolefull voice accompanying it with these verses.

IN vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende
   With flowing teares your fault of hasty sight:
Since to my hart her shape you so did send;
   That her I see, though you did lose your light.

In vaine, my Hart, now you with sight are burnd,
   With sighes you seeke to coole your hotte desire:
Since sighes (into mine inward fornace turnd)
   For bellowes serve to kindle more the fire.

Reason, in vaine (now you haue lost my hart)
   My head you seeke, as to your strongest forte:
Since there mine eyes haue played so false a parte,
   That to your strength your foes haue sure resorte.
Then since in vaine I find were all my strive,
   To this strange death I vaineely yeeld my life.

The ending of the song servied but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (oppressed with too heavy a burthen of cares) was faine to discharge it self of all sides, & as it were, paint out the hideousnes of the paine in all fortess of coulours. For the wofull person (as if the lute had euill joined with the voice) threw it to the ground with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiued to think, that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to please.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

please my fancies: The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my ioyfull minde then receive every thing to a ioyful consideration, then my carefull mind now makes ecb thing taff like the bitter iuyce of care. The euill is inward, my Lute, the euill is inward, which all thou doost doth ferue but to make me thinke more freely off, and the more I thinke, the more cause I finde of thinking, but leffe of hoping. And alas, what is then thy harmony, but the sweete meats of sorrow? The discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not ashamed to leaue thy master, since he is not atraide to forfake himselfe.

And thus much spokè (in stead of a conclusion) was closed vp with so harty agroning, that Gynedia could not reframe to shew her selfe, thinking such griefes could ferue fidy for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as she came into the little Arbour of this sorrowfull musicke, her eyes met with the eyes of Zelmane, which was the party that thus had indited her selfe of miserie: so that either of them remained confused with a sodaine astonishment. Zelmane fearing, least shee had heard some part of those complaints, which shee had risen vp that morning of purpose, to breath out in secret to her selfe. But Gynedia a great while stooode still, with a kind of dull amazement, looking stedfastly upon her: at length returning to some vse of her selfe, shee began to aske Zelmane, what cause carried her so early abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to Zelmane, had opened some great flood-gate of sorrow (whereof her heart could not abide the violet issue) she fanke to the ground, with her hands ouer her face, crying vehemently, Zelmane helpe me.
me, O Zelmane haue pittie on me. Zelmane ranne to her, maruellling what sodaine sickness had thus possesed her: and beginning to ask her the cause of her paine, and offering her service to be imployed by her. Gynecia opening her eyes wildly upon her, pricked with the flames of loue, and the torments of her owne conscience; O Zelmane, Zelmane, (said she) doost thou offer me phisicke, which art my onely poyson? Or wilt thou doo me service, which haft alredie brought me into eternall slauerie? Zelmane then knowing well at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it; Most excellent Ladie (said she) you were best retire your selue into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fitte. Retire my selue; (said Gynecia) If I had returred my selue into my selue, when thou to me (unfortuneate guest) camest to draw me from my selue, blessed had I beene, and no neede had I had of this counsaile. But now alas, I am forced to fle to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; and make thee judge of my cause, who art the onely author of my mischiefe. Zelmane the more astonisht, the more she understood her, Madam (said she) whereof do you accuse me, that I will not cleere my selue? Or wherein may I steed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered Gynecia, what shall I say more? Take pitty of me, O Zelmane, but not as Zelmane, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doost in apparell.

Zelmane was much troubled with that word, finding her selue brought to this streight. But as she was thinking what to answere her; they might see olde Basilius passe harde by them, without ever seeing them: complaing likewise of loue verie freshly; and ending his com-
complaint with this song, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

Let not old age disgrace my high desire,
O heavenly soule, in humaine shape conteind:
Old wood inflamde, doth yeeld the brauest fire,
When yonger dooth in smoke his vertue spend.

Ne let white haires, which on my face doo grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull bewe:
Since whitenesse doth present the sweetest bhow,
Which makes alle eyes doo honour unto you.

Old age is wise and full of constant truth;
Old age well stayed from raunging humor lives:
Old age hath knowne what ever was in youth:
Old age orecome, the greater honour gines.
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.

Which being done, he looked verie curiously vpon himselfe, sometimes fetching a little skippe,as if he had said, his strengtih had not yet forfaken him. But Zelma-ne hauing in this time gotten leasure to thinke for an answere,looking vpon Gynecia,as if she thought she did her some wrong : Madam ( said she) I am not acquainted with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an Amazon, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be vsed. If my seruice may please you, impoy it,so long as you do me no wrong in misjudging of me. Alas Zelmarie ( said Gynecia) I perceiue you know ful little;how percing the eyes are of a true louer.

There
The Countesse of Pembroke's

There is no one-beame of those thoughts you have planted in me, but is able discern a greater cloud then you doo goe in. Seek not to conceal your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of loue into violent extremities. Nowe was Zelmate brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that way thorow the trees, perceived his wife and mistres together: so that framing the most louely countenance he could, he came straightway towards them; and at the first word ( thanking his wife for hauning entreated Zelmate,) desired her she would now returne into the lodge, because hee had certaine matters of estate to impart to the Lady Zelmate. The Queene ( being nothing troubled with ielousie in that point) obeyed the kings commandement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all louing meanes to winne Zelmate, so she would stirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her entent. And so went she from them to the lodge-ward, with such a battaile in her thoughts, and so deadly an overthrow giuen to her best resolutions, that euen her bodie ( where the fielde was fought ) was oppressd withall: making a languishing sickness waite vpon the triumph of passion; which the more it prevailed in her, the more it made her ielousie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and Zelmate; hauing euer one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

Buras soone as Basillus was ridde of his wiuers presence, falling downe on his knees, O Lady (said he) which haft onely had the power to stirre vp againe those flames which had so long layn deade in me; see in me the power of your beautie, which can make old
old age come to ask counsaille of youth; and a Prince
uncouered, to become a slave to a stranger. And whe
you see that power of yours, loue that at left in me,
since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be
loued. Worthy Prince (answered Zelmane, taking him
up from his kneeling) both your manner, and your
speech are so strange unto me, as I know not how to
anwere it better then with silence. If silence please you
(said the king) it shall never displease me, since my heart
is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwise if you would
vouchsafe mine eares such happiness, as to heare you,
they shall convey your words to such a mind, which is
with the humblest degree of reverence to receive them.
I disdaine not to speake to you (mightie Prince said
Zelmane,) but I disdaine to speake to any matter which
may bring my honor into question. And therewith,
with a brave counterfeited scorn, he departed from
the king, leaving him not so sore for his short anwure,
as proud in himself that he had broken the matter. And
thus did the king (feeding his minde with those
thoughts) passe great time in writing verses, & making
more of himself, then he was wont to doo: that with
a little helpe, he would have growne into a prettie kind
of dotage.

But Zelmane being ridde of this loving, but little-lo
ued company, Alas (said the) poore Pyrocles, was there
ever one, but I, that had receiued wrong, and could
blame no body: that hauing more then I desire, am still
in want of that I woulde: Truly Loue, I must needs
say thus much on thy behalfe; thou haft imployed
my loue there, where all loue is deferred; and for re-
compence haft sent me more loue then euer I desired.

But
The Countesse of Pembrokes

But what wilt thou doo Pyrocles? which way canst thou finde to ridde thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I live in darkenesse: and to her am revealed, from whom I would be most secret. What shift shall I finde against the diligent loue of Basilius? what shield against the violent passions of Gymecia? And if that be done, yet how am I the nearer to quench the fire that consumes me? Wel, wel, sweete Philoclea, my whole confidence must be builded in thy diuine spirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I haue receiued by you.

CHAP. 2.

* Dametas his enstrueting of Dorus. * Zelmanes discourse to Dorus of her difficulties, & his to her of his successe in love. * His loue-suits made to Mopla, meant to Pamela: with their answers.

But as sicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieue them, & yet hauing company do find it noyseome; changing willingly outward objects, when indeed the euill is inward: So poore Zelmane was no more weery of Basilus, then she was of her selfe, when Basilus was gone: and euer the more, the more she turned her eyes to become her owne judges. Tyred wherewith, she longed to meete her friende Dorus; that vpon the shoulders of friendship she might lay the burthen of sorrow: and therefore went toward the other lodge: where among certaine Beeches she found Dorus, appareled in flanen, with a goat's skin cast vpon him, & a garland of Laurell mixt
mixt with Cypres leaues on his head, wayting on his master Dametas, who at that time was teaching him how with his sheephooke to catch a wanton Lambe, & with the same to cast a little clod at any one that strayed out of company. And while Dorus was practising, one might see Dametas hold his hand under his girdle behind him, nodding from the waist upwards, & iewing he never knew man go more awkawardly to worke: & that they might talk of booke-learning what they would, but for his part, he never saw more vnseatie fellowes, then great clearks were.

But Zelmanes comming saued Dorus from further chiding. And so she beginning to speake with him of the number of his masters sheepe, and which Province of Arcadia bare the finest wooll, drewe him on to follow her in such countrie discourses, till (being out of Dametas hearing) with such vehemencie of passion, as though her harte would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, she declared vnto him, vpon what briers the roses of her affections grew: how time still seemed to forget her, bestowing no one houre of comfort vpon her; she remaining stil in one plight of ill fortune, sauing so much worse, as continuance of euill dooth in it selfe increase euill. Alas my Dorus (said she) thou feest how long and languishingly the wekees are passe ouer vs since our laste talking. And yet am I the same, miserable I, that I was: onely stronger in longing, and weaker in hoping. Then fell she to so pitifull a declaration of the insupportablenes of her desires, that Dorus eares (not able to shew what woundes that discourse gauc vnto them) procured his eyes with teares to giue testimonie, how much they suffered for her
her suffering; till passion (a most cumber some guest to it selfe) made Zelmane (the sooner to shake it off) earnestly intreate Dorus, that he also (with like freedome of discourse) would bestow a Mappe of his little worlde, vpon her; that she might see, whether it were troubled with such vnhabitabile climes of colde despaires, and hotte rages, as hers was. And so walking vnder a fewe Palme trees, (which being louing in their own nature, seemed to giue their shadow the willinglier, because they held discourse of loue) Dorus thus entred to the description of his fortune.

Alas (said he) deare Cosin, that it hath pleased the high powers to throwe vs to such an estate, as the one ly entercourse of our true friendshipe, must be a bar tring of miseries. For my parte, I must confesse indeede, that from a huge darkenes of sorrowes, I am crept (I cannot say to a lightsomnes, but) to a certain dawning, or rather, peeping out of some possibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, so farre from the marke of my desires, that I rather thinke it such a light, as comes through a small hole to a dungeon, that the miserable caitife may the better remember the light, of which he is depriued: or like a scholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde him selue utterly ignorant.

But thus stands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to serue in yonder blessed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreshing; that (because of the servuce I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleased the Princesse (in whom indeede statelines shines throughcourtesie) to let fall some gratious looke vpon me. Sometimes to see my
exercise, sometimes to heare my sones. For my parte, my harte woulde not suffer me to omitte any occasion, whereby I might make the incomparable Pamela, see how much extraordinarie deuotion I bare to her service: and withall, straue to appeare more worthy in her sight; that small desert, joined to so great affection, might preuaile something in the wifes Ladie. But too well (alas) I founde, that a shepheards service was but considered of as from a shepheard, and the acceptation limitted to no further proportion, then of a good servant. And when my countenance had once giuen notice, that there lay affection vnder it, I sawe straight, Maiefty (sitting in the throne of Beautie) draw foorth such a sword of just disdain, that I remayned as a man thunder-striken; not daring, no not able, to beholde that power. Now, to make my estate knowne, seemed againe impossible, by reason of the suspition of Dametas, Mifo, and my young Mistresse, Mopfa. For, Dametas (according to the constitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to shewe him selfe wife, then by suspecting every thing in his way. Which suspition Mifo (for the hoggish shrewdnesse of her braine) and Mopfa (for a very unlikely enuie she hath stumbled vpon, against the Princesses unspeakable beautie) were very gladde to execute. So that I (finding my service by this meanes lightlie regarded, my affection despised, and my selfe vnknowen) remayned no fuller of desire, then voyde of comfort how to come to my desire. Which (alas) if these trees could speak, they might well witnesse. For, many times haue I stonde here, bewailing my selfe vnto them; many
many times haue I, leaning to yonder Palmc, admired the blessednes of it, that could beare Loue without fince of paine. Many times, when my matters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this fresh place, I might see the young Bull testifie his loue. But how? with proud looke, and joyfulnes. O wretched mankind (said I then to my selfe) in whom witte (which should be the gouernor of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his blessednes. These beasts, like children to nature, inhere her blessings quietly: we, likebastards, are layd abroad, even as foundlinges to be trayned vp by griefe and sorrow. Their mindes grudge not their bodies comfort, nor their fences are letted from enjoying their obiects: we haue the impediments of honor, and the torments of conscience. Truely in such cogitatiōs haue I sometimse so long stood, that I thought my feete began to grow into the ground, with such a darkenes and heauines of minde, that I might easilie haue bene perswaded to haue resigned ouer my very essence. But Loue, (which one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the lowest of my downward thoughts, pulled vp my heart to remeber, that nothing is achieved before it be throughlie attempted, and that lying still doth never goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or neuer, to sharpen my inuention, to percear thorow the hardnes of this enterprise; neuer ceasing to assemble al my conceites, one after the other, how to manifest both my minde and estate. Till at last, I lighted and resolved on this way, which yet perchance you will think was a way rather to hide it.

I began to counterfeite the extremest loue towards
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Mopsa, that might be: and as for the love, so lively it was indeed within me, (although to another subject) that little I needed to counterfeit any notable demonstrations of it: and so making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fowlnes I beheld Pamela's fairenesse; still looking on Mopsa, but thinking on Pamela; as if I saw my Sunne shine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothing but Mopsa: to Mopsa my attendance was directed: to Mopsa the best fruits I could gather were brought: to Mopsa it seemed still that mine eye conveyed my tongue. So that Mopsa was my saying; Mopsa was my singing; Mopsa, (that is only futeable in laying a foule complexion vpon a filthy fauour, setting foorth both in fluttishnesse) she was the load-starre of my life, she the blessing of mine eyes, she the overthrowe of my desires, and yet the recompence of my overthrowe; she the sweetnesse of my harte, even sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew vpon me. In summe, what soever I thought of Pamela, that I said of Mopsa; whereby as I gate my maisters good-will, who before spited me, fearing left I should winne the Princesse fauour from him, so did the same make the Princesse be better content to allow me her presence: whether indeede it were, that a certaine sparke of noble indignation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanely soever she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being so passionate; and shooting so quite contrarie from the markes of Mopsaes worthinesse, she perceived well enough, whither they were directed: and therefore being so masked, she was contented, as a sporte of witte to attend them. Where-
The Countesse of Pembrokes

Whereupon one day determining to find some means to tel(as of a third person) the tale of mine owne loue, and estate, finding Mopsa (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with Pamela, I came in ynto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of clowdy fancies, tooke a harpe, and sconde this songe.

Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight;
That in your sight they fixed have my braine;
Since so my harte is filled with that light,
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;

Since in sweete you all goods so richly raigne,
That where you are no wished good can want;
Since so your living image lives in me,
That in my selfe your selfe true loue doth plant;
How can you him unworthy then decree,
In whose chiefe parte your worthes implanted be?

The song being ended, which I had often broken of in the middelst with grievous sighes, which ouertooke euery verse I sange, I let fall my harpe frome me, & casting my eie sometime vpon Mopsa, but setting my sight principally vpon Pamela. And is it the onely fortune most bewtifull Mopsa (saiued I) of wretched Dorus, that fortune should be measure of his mind? Am I onely he that because I am in miferie, more miferie must be laid vpon me? must that which should be cause of compassion, become an argument of cruelty against me? Alas excellent Mopsa, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meanest subject, and the heauenly
ly Sunne disdaines not to giue light to the smallest worme. O Mopsa, Mopsa, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is vncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well counteruaile the lownesse of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelld with that sweet vniting of al beauties, which remaineth & dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that all these are but ornaments of that diuine sparke within you, which being descended from heauen could not els-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all these excellencies together, it is a kinde of mercyfulnesse to such a one, as is in his soule devoted to those perfections. Mopsa (who already had had a certaine smackring towards me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most comonly with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in stead of smiling: but all the wordes I could get of her, was, wringing her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you left with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the euer-pleasing Pamela (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not helpe Mopsa to her parte) was content to urge a little further of me. Maister Dorns (saiid the faire Pamela) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your selfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require Mopsa to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers servaunt; since she is not worthy to be loued, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staied a good while after her words,
in hope she would haue continued her speech (so
great a delight I receaued in hearing her) but see
ing her say no further, (with a quaking all ouer my body)
I thus answered her. Ladie, most worthie of all dutie,
how failes it out that you in whom all vertue shines,
will take the patronage of fortune, the onely rebelli-
ous handmaide against vertue? Especially, since before
your eyes, you haue a pittifull spectacle of her wic-
kedneffe, a forlorne creature, which must remaine not
such as I am, but such as she makes me, since the must
be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement. Yet
alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) haue
leau to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus
much consideration; since the perfections are such in
the partie I love, as the feeling of them cannot come
into any vnynoble hart; shall that harte, which doth not
only feel them, but hath all the working of his life
placed in them, shall that hart I faie, lifted vp to such a
height, be counted base? O let not an excellent spirit
doo it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is pla-
ced, imbraced, and loued; there can be any vnworthy-
nesse, since the weakest mist is not easilier driven a-
way by the Sunne, then that is chafed away with so
high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the grati-
uous Pamela) but that the love you beeare to Mopfa, hath
brought you to the consideration of her vertues, and
that consideration may haue made you the more ver-
tuous, and so the more worthie: But euen that then
(you must confesse) you haue receuied of her, and so
are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to press any
further, till you bring something of your owne wher-
by to claime it. And truely Dorn, I must in Mopfaes
behalfe
behalef fay thus much to you, that if her beauties haue so ouertaken you, it becomes a true Loue to haue your harte more set vpon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer respect to her honour, then your satisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (said Mopfa, throwing a great number of sheeps eyes vpon me ) you haue euen touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forsooth. I (finding that the policie that I had vfed, had at left wise procured thus much happinesse vnto me, as that I might euen in my Ladies presence, discover the fore which had deeply festered within me, and that she could better conceaue my reasons applied to Mopfa, then she would haue vouchsafed them, whilest her selfe was a partie) thought good to pursue on my good beginning, v-fing this fit occasion of Pamela's wit, and Mopfaes ignorance. Therfore with an humble pearcing eye, looking vpon Pamela, as if I had rather bene condemned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my selfe to Mopfa, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire Mopfa (laid I) well doo I finde by the wile knitting together of your answere, that any disputatio I can vse is as much too weake, as Ivnworthy. I find my loue shalbe proued no loue, without I leue to loue, being too vnfit a vessell in whō so high thoughts should be engraued. Yet since the Loue I beare you, hath so ioyned it self to the best part of my life, as the one canot depart, but that th'other will follow, before I seeke to obey you in making my last passege, let me know which is my vnwor-thines, either of mind, estate, or both? Mopfa was about to say, in neither; for her hart I thinke tumbled with ouer much kindnesse, when Pamela with a more fauourable counte:
countenance the before (finding how apt I was to fall into dispaire) told me, I might therein have answered my selfe; for besides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of Mopfaes perfectio had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deferred great allowance. But Dorus (sayd she) you must be so farre master of your loue, as to consider, that since the judgement of the world stands upon matter of fortune, and that the sexe of womankind of all other is most bound to have regardfull eie to mens judgements, it is not for vs to play the philosophers, in seeking out your hidden vertues: since that, which in a wise prince would be coued wisdome, in vs wil be taken for a light-grounded affectiō: so is not one thing, one, done by divers persons. There is no man in a burning feuer seales so great content-mét in cold water greedily receiued (which affone as the drinke ceaseth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my soule refreshed with her sweetly pronounced words, & newly, & more violētly againe enflamed, affone as she had closed vp her delightfull speach, with no leffe wel graced silence. But remēbring in my self that as well the Souldier dieth which standeth still, as he that giues the brauest onset: & seeing that to the making vp of my fortune, there wanted nothing so much as the making knowne of mine estate, with a face wel witnessing how deeply my soule was possesed, & with the moost submis-siue behauior, that a thralléd hart could expresse, cuē as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at length spake to this purpose. Alas, most worthy Princeffe (said I) & do not then your owne sweet words sufficiētly te-stifie, that there was neuer ma could haue a iustet actiō against
against filthy fortune, the I, since all other things being
granted me, her blindness is my only let. O heauely
God, I would either she had such eyes as were able to
discerne my deserts, or I were blind not to see the daily
cause of my miscfortune. But yet (said I) most honoured
Lady, if my miserable speeches have not already cloied
you, & that the verie presence of such a wretch be-
come not hateful in your eyes, let me reply thus much
further against my mortall sentence, by telling you a
florie, which happened in this fame country long since
(for woes make the shortest time seeme long ) where-
by you shall see that my estate is not so contemptible,
but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like up-
on him, and by that onely hath aspired to enjoy a
mightie Princesse. Pamela gratiously harkened, and I
told my tale in this fort

CHAP. 3.

Dorus-his tale of his owne education, travaile, ena.moring,
metamorphosing, saling from sea, and being Mufido-
rus. His octave. Pamela and Mopsas answere to his suit.
His present to them, and perplexitie in himselfe.

In the countrie of Thessalia, (alas why name I that accursed coun-
try, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies: but
name it I must) in Thessalia (I say) there was (well may I say, there
was) a Prince (no, no Prince, who bondage wholly posseffed; but
yet
yet accounted a Prince, and named Musidorus. O Musidorus, Musidorus; but to what true exclamations, where there are no eares to receiue the sounde: This Musidorus, being yet in the tenderst age, his worthy father paiied to nature (with a violent death) her last duties, leaving his childe to the faith of his friends, and the profe of time: death gave him not such pangs as the foresight-full care hee had of his silly successour. And yet if in his foresight he could haue seene so much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which baried him from the knowledge of his sonnes miseries, which his knowledge could neither haue prevented, nor relieved. The young Musidorus (being thus, as for the first pledge of the destinies good will, deprived of his principall stay) was yet for some yeares after (as if the starres would breath themselves for a greater mischiefe) lull'd up in as much good luck, as the heedfull love of his dolefull mother, and the flourishing estate of his country could breed vnto him.

2 But when the time now came, that miserie seemed to be ripe for him, because he had age to know misery, I think there was a conspiracy in all heauenly & earthly things, to frame fit occasion to leade him vnto it. His people (to whom all forraine matters in toretime were odious) beganne to wish in their beloved Prince, experience by trauaille: his deare mother (whose eyes were held open, onely with the joy of looking vpon him) did now dispence with the comfort of her widowehead life, desiring the same her subiectes did, for the increafe of her sonnes worthinesse. And here-to did Musidorus owne vertue (fee how vertue can be a minister to mischiefe) sufficiently prouoke him: for indeed
indeed thus much I must say for him, although the likeness of our mishaps makes me foresee to patterne myself unto him;) that well-doing was at that time his scope, from which no faint pleasure could withstand him. But the present occasion which did knit all this together, was his uncle the king of Macedon; who having lately before got such victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time send both for the Prince his sonne (brought together, to avoid the wars, with Musidorus) and for Musidorus himselfe, that his joy might be the more full, having such partakers of it. But alas, to what a sea of miseries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; and thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I said, I stayed my speeche, till Pamela shewing by countenance that such was her pleasure, I thus continued it. These two young Princes to satisfy the king, took their way by sea, towards Thrace, whether they would needs go with a Nauie to succour him: he being at that time before Byzantium with a mighty Army besieging it, where at that time his court was. But when the conspired heavens had gotten this Subject of their wrath upon so fit a place as the sea was, they freight began to breath out in boystrous windes some part of their malice against him; so that with the losse of all his Nauie, he only with the Prince his coffin, were cast a land, farre off from the place whether their desires would have guided them. O cruell winds in your vnconsiderate rages, why either beganne you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was such, as you would spare his life for many deathfull torments. To tel you what pittiful mishaps fell to the young Prince of Macedon his cofen, I should
The Countesse of Pembroke

should too much fill your eares with strange horrors; neither will I stay upon those laborisome aduertures, nor loathisome misaduentures, to which, & through which his fortune and courage conducted him; My speach hathneth it self to come to the ful-point of Mydidorus his infortunes. For as we finde the most pestilēt diseasés do gather into themselues at the infirmitie, with which the body before was annoyed; so did his last misery embrace in the extreme of it self all his former mischieses.

3 Lineage, Arcadia, was the place prepared to be the stage of his endlesse ouerthrow. Arcadia was, (alas well might I say it is) the charmed circle, where all his spirits for euer should be enchaunted. For here (and no where els) did his infected eyes make his minde know, what power heavenny beauty hath to throw it downe to helish agonies. Here, here did he see the Arcadian Kings eldest daughter, in whom he forthwith placed so all his hopes of joy, and joyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himselfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of sorrow. But alas what can saying make them beleue, whom seeing cannot perswade? Those paines must be felt before they can be understood; no outward utterance can command a conceipt. Such was as then the state of the King, as it was no time by direct meanes to seeke her. And such was the state of his captiued wil, as he could delay no time of seeking her.

In this intangled case, he cloathed himselfe in a shepheardes weede, that vnder the basenesse of that forme, he might at last haue free acceso to feed his eyes with that, which should at length eate vp his hart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifiested, that this estate is not always to be reiecte, since un-
der that vaile there may be hidden things to be esteemed. And if he might with taking on a shepherds look cast vp his eyes to the fairest Princesse Nature in that time created; the like, nay the same desire of mine need no more to be disdained, or held for disgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my toong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to help, either with the feeling remembrance I haue, in what heape of miseries the caitife Prince lay at this time buried. Pardon therefore, most excellent Princesse, if I cut off the course of my dolorous tale, since if I be understood, I haue saied enough, for the defence of my baseness; and for that which after might befall to that patterne of ill fortune, (the matters are monstrous for my capacitie) his hatefull destinies must beft declare their owne workmanship.

Thus hauing deliuered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the Princesse might judge that he ment himselfe, who spake so feelingly; her answere was both strange, and in some respect comfortable. For would you thinke it? she hath heard heretofore of vs both, by meanes of the valiant prince Plangus, and particularly of our casting away; which she (following my owne stile) thus delicately brought foorth. You haue told (saide she) Dorus, a prettie tale, but you are much deceiued in the latter end of it. For the prince Musidorus with his cosen Pyracles did both perishe vp on the coast of Laconia; as a noble gentleman, called Plangus (who was well acquainted with the historie) did assure my father. Oh how that speach of hers did poure ioyes in my hart: o blessed name (thought I) of mine, since thou haft bene in that toong, and passed through those lips, though
The Countesse of Pembroke

though I can never hope to approach them. As for j-
 pracles (said I) I will not deny it, but that he is perished:
(which I said, lest sooner suspicion might arise of your
being, then your selfe would have it) and yet affirmed
no lye unto her, since I onely said, I would not deny it.
But for Musidorus (said I) I perceive indeed you have
neither heard or read the story of that unhappy Prince;
for this was the very objection, which that peereleffe
Princesse did make vnto him, whi he sought to appeare
such as he was before her wisdome: and thus as I have
read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge
he might answer her, that indeed the ship wherein he
came, by a treason was perished; and therefore that Plan-
gus might easilly be deceuaded: but that he himselfe was
cast upon the coast of Laconia, where he was taken vp
by a couple of shepheards, who liued in those dayes
famous; for that both loving one faire maide, they yet
remained constant friends; one of whose songs not
long since was sone before you by the shepheard La-
mon, and brought by them to a noble-mans house,
neere Mantinea, whose sonne had a little before his mar-
riage, bene taken prisoner, and by the helpe of this
Prince, Musidorus (though naming himselfe by another
name) was delivered. Now these circumlocutions I
did vse, because of the one side I knewe the Princesse
would knowe well the parties I ment; and of the
other, if I should have named Strephon, Clain, Ka-
lander, and Clitophon, perchappes it would have rubbed
some conjecture into the heauie heade of Mistress
Mopsa.

And therefore (said I) most divine Lady, he instly was
to argue against such suspitions; that the Prince might
callly
easily by those parties be satisfied, that upon that wraek such a one was taken vp: and therefore that Plangus might well err, who knew not of anyies taking vp againe: that he that was so preferred, brought good tokens to be one of the two chiefe of that wracked company: which two since Plangus knew to be Musidorus and Pyrocles, he must needs be one of them, although (as I said) upon a foretaken voyage, he was otherwise at that time called. Besides, the Princesse must needs judge, that no less then a Prince durft undertake such an enterprize, which (though he might gette the favour of the Princesse) he could not defend with less then a Prince’s power, against the force of Arcadia. Lastly, (said he) for a certaine demonstration, he presumed to shew unto the Princesse a marke he had on his face, as I might (said I) shew this of my neck to the rare Mopsa: and withall, shewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde spotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that she may assured her selfe, that I am Menalcas brother. And so did he, beseeching her to send some one she might trust, into Thessalia, secretly to be advertised, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly that notable signe, did not fully agree with this Prince Musidorus. Doo you not know further (said she, with a setled countenance, not accusing any kind of inwarde motion) of that storie. Alas no, (said I) for even here the Historiographer stopped, saying, The rest belonged to Astrologie. And therewith, thinking her silent imaginations began to worke upon somewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Musick is to do) and withal, to shew what kind
The Countesse of Pembroke's

kind of sliepheard I was, I took vp my Harpe, and sang these few verses.

7 My sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serve;
Their pasturie is faire billes of fruitlesse Love:
On barren sweetes they feede, and feeding serve:
I maile their lotte, but will not other prove.
My sheepebooke is wanne hope, which all upholds:
My weedes, Desire, cut out in endlessse foldes.

What wooll my sheepe shall beare, whiles thus they live,
In you it is, you must the judgement give.

And then, partly to bring Mopsa againe to the matter (left she should too much take heed to our discourse) but principally, if it were possible, to gather some comfort out of her answers, I kneeled downe to the Princeesse, and humblie besought her to moue Mopsa in my behalfe, that she would vnarme her hart of that freely resitance against the sweet blowes of Loue: that since all her parts were decked with some particular ornament, her face with beautie, her head with wisdome, her eyes with mauestie, her countenance with gracefulness, her lippes with louclines, her tongue with victorie; that she woulde make her hart the throne of pitie, being the most excellent rayment of the most excellent part.

Pamela, without shew either of fauour or disdain, either of heeding or neglecting what I had said, turned her speech to Mopsa, and with such a voice and action,
as might she we she spake of a matter which little did concern her. Take heede to your selfe (saide she.) Mopsa, for your shepheard can speake well: but truely, if he doo fully prooue himselfe such as he faith, I mean, the honest shepheard Menelchus his brother, and heire, I know no reason why you shoulde thinke scorne of him. Mopsa though (in my conscience) she were euuen then farre spent towards me, yet she answered her, that for all my quaint speeches, she would keepe her honestie close enough: And that as for the highe way of matrimony, she would steppe never a foote further, till my maister her father had spoken the whole word him selue, no she would not. But euer and anon turning her muzzell toward me, she threwe such a prospect vpon me, as might well haue given a surfeet to any weake lourers stomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that drieuel speeches among my noble thoughts? but because she was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geue you a full knowledge, and to leaue nothing (that I can remember) vnrepeated.

Now the Princesse being about to withdrawe her selfe from vs, I tooke a Iewell, made in the figure of a Crab-fish, which, because it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did fitly patterne out my looking to Mopsa, but bending to Pamela: The word about it was, By force, not choice; and still kneeling, besought the Princesse that she would vouchsafe to give it Mopsa, and with the blessednes of her hande to make acceptable vnto her that toye which I had found, followinge of late an acquainctance of mine at the ploue. For (layd I) as the earth was turned vp, the plow-share lighted vpon a great stone: we pul'd that
The Countesse of Pembrokes

vp, & so found both that, and some other pretty things which we had deuided betwixt vs.

Mopla was benummmed with joy when the Princeesse gaue it her: but in the Princeesse I could finde no apprehension of what I either said or did, but with a calmness carelessnesse letting each thing slide, lustly as we doo by their speeches, who neither in matter nor person doo any way belong vnto vs) which kind of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her natural majestie, is of all others most terrible vnto me: for yet if I found she contemned me, I would desperately labour both in fortune and vertue to overcome it; if she onely misdoubted me, I were in heauen; for quickly I woulde bring sufficient assurance: lastly, if she hated me, yet I should know what passion to deale with; and either with infinitenes of deserte I would take away the fewell from that fire; or if nothing would serue, then I would giue her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell quietnes, neither retiring to mislike, nor proceeding to fauour; gracious, but gratious still after one maner; all her courtesies hauing this engraven in them, that what is done, is for vertues sake, not for the partes; ever keeping her course like the Sun, who neither for our prayses, nor curses, will pare or stoppe his horses. This (I say) heauenlines of hers, (for howsoeuer my miserie is I cannot but so entitle it) is so impossible to reach vnto, that I almost begin to submitte my selfe to the tyrannie of despaire, not knowing any way of perfwasiō, where wisdome seemes to be vnsensible. I have appeared to her eyes, like my selfe, by a deuice I vsed with my maister, perfwading him, that we two might put on a certaine rich apparel I had prouided, and so practice some thing
thing on horseback before Pamela, telling him, it was apparel I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at Athens: my horse indeed was it I had left at Menalcas house, and Dametas got one by friendship out of the Princes stable. But how soever I show, I am no base bodie, all I doo is but to beate a rocke and get some.

CHAP. 4.

Basilus his haunking. Gynectas hurte by Dametas overturning her coache. Her icloufie over Zelmane. Philocles  
lowepasions,  vowe of chastitie,  renocation;  lamentation.

Vtas Dorus was about to tell further, Dametas (who came whistling, & counting upon his fingers how many loade of hay his seventeen fat oxen eat vp in a yeare) de-

fired Zelmane from the King that she would come into the lodge, where they stayed for her. Alas (said Dorus, taking his leve) the sum is this, that you may wel find you havee beate your sorrow against such a wall, which with the force of rebound may wel make your sorrow stronger. But Zelmane turning her speach to Dametas, I shall grow (said she) skilfull in country matters, if I havee often conference with your servaunt. In sooth (answered Dametas with a gracelesse skorne) the Lad may proue wel enough, if he ouersoon think not too well of himselfe, and will beare away that he hea-
rath of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the
other lodge, to make Zelmane find she might have spēt.
ers time better with him, he began with a wilde Me-
thode to runne over all the art of husbandrie: espe-
cially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a
fie ade: while poore Zelmane yielded her eares to those
tedious strokes, not warding them so much as with an-
y one answer, till they came to Basilus, and Gyne-
ceia, who atted for her in a coach to carry her abroad
to see some sportes prepared for her. Basilus and Gyne-
ceia sitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with
her left side to Philoclea. Zelmane was moued in her
minde, to haue kist their feete for the favour of so
blessed a seate: for the narrownesse of the coach made
them ioine from the foote to the shoulders very close
together, the truer touch whereof though it were bar-
red by their envious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes,
though put in an iuorie boxe, will thorow the boxe
send forth his imbraced vertue to a beloved needle; so
this imparadised neigbourhood made Zelmanes soule
cleaue vnto her, both thorow the iuorie case of her bo-
dy, and the apparell which did ouer-clowd it. All the
bloud of Zelmanes body stiring in her, as wine will do
when suger is hastely put into it, seeking to sucke the
sweetnes of the beloved guest; her hart, like a lion new
imprisoned, seeing him that restraines his libertie, be-
fore the grate; not panting, but striuing violently (if it
had bene possible) to haue leapt into the lappe of Phi-
loclea. But Dametas, even then proceeding from be-
ing maister of a carte, to be doctor of a coach, not a liti-
tle proud in himselfe, that his whippe at that time gui-
ded the rule of Arcadia, dtraue the coach (the couer
whercof
whereof was made with such joints, that as they might (to avoid the weather) pull it vp close when they lifted, so when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as discovered & open sighted as on horsebacke) till upon the side of the forrest they had both greyhounds, spaniels, and hounds: whereof the first might seeme the Lords, the second the Gentlemen, and the last the Yeomen of dogges, a cast of Merlins there was besides, which flying of a gallant height ouer certaine bushes, would beate the birdes (that rose) downe vnto the bushes, as Faulcons will doo wilde-soule ouer a riuere. But the sporte which for that daie Basilius would principallie shew to Selmane, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting vp on his wagling winges with paine, till he was come to some height, (as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great bodie to sliethorow) was now growen to diminish the sight of himself, & to giue example to great persons, that the higher they be, the lesse they should show: where a Faulcon wascaft of after her, who streight spying where the pray was, fixing her eie with desire, & guiding her wing by her eie, vied no more strengthe then industry. For as a good builde to a hie tower will not make his stayre vpright, but winding almost the ful compass about, that the steepnes be the more vnseensible: so she, seing the towring of her pursuued chasse, went circkling, & compassing about, rising so with the lesse fencce of rising; & yct finding that way scantly seure the greedines of her haft, as an ambitious body wil go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which he desires: so would she (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, & slieth quite out another way,
but all was to returne in a higher pitche; which once gotten, she would either beate with cruel assaults the Heron, who now was driven to the best defence of force, since flight would not serve; or else clasping with him, come downe together, to be parted by the outer partiall beholders.

Divers of which flights Basilius shewing to Zelmane, thus was the richesse of the time spent, and the day deceased before it was thought of, till night like a degenerating successflour made his departure the better remembred. And therefore (so constrained) they willed Dametas to drive homeward, who (half sleeping, halfe musing about the mending of a vine-presse) guided the horses so ill, that the wheele comming over a great stub of a tree, it overturned the coach. Which though it fell violently upon the side where Zelmane & Gynecia sat, yet for Zelmanes part, she would have bene glad of the fall, which made her beare the sweete burthen of Philoclea, but that she feared she might receaue some hurt. But indeede neither she did, nor any of the rest, by reason they kept their armes and legs within the coach, saveing Gynecia, who with the onely bruze of the fall had her shoulder put out of joint; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was set well againe, yet with much paine was she brought to the lodge, and paine (fetching his ordinary companion, a feuer with him) draue her to entertaine them both in her bedde.

But neither was the feuer of such impatient heate, as the inwarde plague-fore of her affection, nor the paine halfe so noysome, as the jealousie she conceaued of her daughter Philoclea, left this time of her sicknesse might
might give apt occasion to Zelmae, whom she misdoubted. Therefore she called Philoclea to her, and though it were late in the night, commanded her in her ear to go to the other lodge, and send Misfo to her, with whom she would speake, and she lie with her sister Pamela. The mean while Gynecia kepe Zelmae with her, because she would be sure she should be out of the lodge, before she licenced Zelmae. Philoclea not skild in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking skorne to be a torche-bearer to such beautie) guided her steppes, whose motions bare a minde, which bare in itselfe farre more stirring motions. And alas (sweete Philoclea) how hath my penne till now forgot thy passions, since to thy memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the slacknes to come to those woes, which having caused in others, thou didst feele in thy selfe.

The sweete minded Philoclea was in their degree of well doing, to whom the not knowing of euill for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an unspotted simplicite, then many, who rather cunningly seeke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themselves the following of it. But as that sweet & simple breath of heavenly goodnesse, is the easier to be altered, because it hath not paffed through the worldlie wickednesse, nor feelingly found the euill, that euill caries with it; so now the Lady Philoclea (whose eyes and senses had receaued nothing, but according as the naturall course of each thing required, which frô the tender youth had obediently liued vnder her parents behets, without framing
out of her own wi the fore-chosing of any thing) whè now she came to appoint, wherein her judgemet was to be practizèd, in knowing faultines by his first tokès, she was like a yong faune, who cóming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to be eschewed; whereof at this time she began to get a costly experience. For after that Zelmane had a while li-ued in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble straunger had bred a kind of heedfull attention; her cóming to that lonely place (where she had no bo- dy but her parents) a willingnes of conversatiò; her wit & behauiour, a liking & silent admiration; at length the excellency of her natural gifts, joined with the extreme shewes she made of most devout honouring Philoclea, (carying thus in one person the only two bads of good will, louelines & louingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a most friendly affecțiò; which when it had gotten fo ful possesion of the keies of her mind, that it would receaue no message fro her sences, without that affection were the interpreter; the straight grew an exeeding delight still to be with her, with an vnmeasura- ble liking of all that Zelmane did: maters being so turned in her; that where at first, liking her manners did breed good-wil, now good-wil became the chiefè cause of liking her manners: so that within a while Zelmane was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized because it was Zelmanes. Thè followed that most natural effect of còforming ones self to that, which she did like, and not onely willing to be herselfe such an other in all thinges, but to ground an imitation up- on so much an esteemed authoritie: so that the next degree was to marke all Zelmanes dooings, speeches,
and fashions; and to take them into her selfe, as a patterne of worthy proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not only by the comminantie of Passions, but agreed vnto by her most noble Thoughts, and that by Reason itself (not yet experienced in the issues of such matters) had granted his royall assent; then Friendship (a diligent officer) tooke care to see the statute thorowly obserued. Then grew on that not only she did imitate the sobernesse of her countenance, the gracefullnesse of her speech, but even their particular gestures: so that as Zelmana did often eye her, she would often eye Zelmana; & as Zelmana's eyes would deliver a submissive, but vehement desire in their looke, she, though as yet she had not the desire in her, yet should her eyes answer in like pearcing kindnesse of a looke. Zelmana as much as Gynecias ieaouifie would suffer, desired to be neere Philoclea; Philoclea, as much as Gynecias ieaouifie would suffer, desired to be neere Zelmana. If Zelmana tooke her hand, and softly strained it, she also (thinking the knots of friendship ought to bee mutuall) would (with a sweete fastness) shew she was loth to part from it. And if Zelmana sighed, she would sigh also; whè Zelmana was sad, she deemed it wisedome, and therefore she would be sad too. Zelmana's languishing countenâce with crost armes, and sometimes cast vp eyes, she thought to haue an excellent grace: and therefore she also willingly put on the same countenâce: til at the last (poore soule, ere she were aware) she accepted not only the band, but the service; not only the signe, but the passion signified. For whether it were, that her wit in continuâce did finde, that Zelmana's friendship was full of impatient desire, having more the ordinarie limits, & therefore...
The Countesse of Pembroke's

She was content to second Zelame, though herself knew not the limits; or that in truth, true-love (well considered) have an infective power. At last she fell in acquaintance with loues harbinger, wishing. First she would wish, that they two might live all their lives together, like two of Diana's Nymphes. But that wish, she thought not sufficient, because she knew, there would be more Nymphes besides them, who also would have their part in Zelame. The would she wish, that she were her sister, that such a natural band might make her more speciall to her. But against that, she considered, that though being her sister, if she happened to be married, she should be robbed of her. Then grown bold, she would wish either her selfe, or Zelame a man, that there might succeed a blessed marriage betwixt them. But when that wish had once displayed his ensigne in her minde, then followed whole squadrons of longings, that so it might be, with a maine battaile of mislikings, and repynings against their creation, that so it was not. Then dreams by night beganne to bring more vnto her, then the dutst with by day, whereout making did make her know her selfe the better by the image of those fancies. But as some diseases when they are easie to be cured, they are hard to be knowne, but when they grow easie to be knowne, they are almost impossible to be cured: so the sweete Philocles, while she might preuent it, she did not seele it, now she felt it, when it was past preuenting, like a riuer, no rammiers being built against it, till alreadie it haue overflowed. For now indeed, Loue pul'd of his mafe, and shewed his face vnto her, and told her plainly, that she was his prisoner. Then needed she no more paint her
her face with passions; for passions shone thorow her face; Then her rosie coulor was often encreased with extraordinarie blushing: and so another time, perfect whitenesse ascended to a degree of paleness; now hot, then cold, desiring she knew not what, nor how, if she knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the smart was brought to thinke of the diseafe, and her owne proofe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error giues so strong assault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent, so) greatly fortified her desires, to see, that her mother had the like desires. And the more zealous her mother was, the more she thought the jewell precious, which was with so many looks garded. But that prevailing so far, as to keepe the two louers from private conference, then began she to feele the sweetness of a louers solitariness, when freely with words and gestures, as if Zelma were present, shee might giue passage to her thoughts, and so as it were ytter out some smoke of those flames, wherewith else she was not only burned, but smothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commandement, with dolefull gestures and vncertaine paces, shee did willingly accept the times offered, to be a while alone: so that going a little aside into the wood, where manie times before she had delighted to walke, her eyes were saluted with a tuft of trees, so close set together, as with the shade the moone gaue thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of devotion to looke upon it. But true thoughts of loue banish all vaine fancie of superstition. Full well shee did both remember and like the place; for there had she often with their shade begui-
The Countesse of Pembroke.

led Phæbus of looking upon her: There had she enjoyed her selfe often, while she was mistresse of her selfe, and had no other thoughts, but such as might arise out of quiet senses.

But the principall cause that inuited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble stone, that should seeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the Silvan gods: which she finding there a fewe dayes before Zel- manes comming, had written these words vpon it, as a testimonie of her mind, against the suspicion her captiuitie made her thinke she liued in. The writing was this.

You living poures enclosed in stately shrine
Of growing trees, you rurall Gods that wield
Your scepters here, if to your cares divine
A voice may come, which troubled soule doth yield:
This vowe receaue, this vowe o Gods maintaine;
My virgin life no spotted thought shall staine.

Thou purest stone, whose purenesse doth present
My purest minde; whose temper hard doth showe
My tempred hart, by thee my promisefull
Vnto myselfe let after-timers know.
No fancy mine, nor others wronge suspect
Make me, o vertuous Shave, thy loaves negleft.

O Chastitie, the chiefe of heavenly lighthes,
Which makst us most immortall shape to weare,
Holde thou my hart, estabhlish thou my strights:
To onely thee my constant course I bcare.

Till
But now that her memorie serv'd as an accuser of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to beare testimony against her fall; she went in among those few trees, so closed in the toppes together, as they might see a little chapell: and there might she by the help of the moone-light perceiue the goodly stone, which serv'd as an altar in that woddie devotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was alreadie foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as she perceaued, Alas (said she) faire Marble, which neuer receiued but by my writing, well do these blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not dissemble then, although she haue chaunged since. Enioy, enjoy the glorie of thy nature, which can so constantly beare the markes of my inconstance. And herewith hiding her eyes with her soft hand, there came into her head certaine verses, which if she had had present commoditie, she would haue adioyned as a retractation to the other. They were to this effect.

My words, in hope to blaze my steadfast minde,
This marble shose, as of like temper knowne:
But loe, my words desaste, my sancies blinde,
Blots to the stone, shame to my selfe I finde:
And witnesse am, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand with constant marble stone.

My words full weake, the marble full of might;
The Countesse of Pembroke

My words in store; the marble all alone,  
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white,  
My words unscene, the marble still in sight,  
May witness beare, how ill agree in one,  
A womans hand, with constant marble stone.

But seeing she could not see means to ioyne as the  
this recantation to the former vow, (laying all her faire  
length under one of the trees) for a while she did no-  
thing but turne vp and downe, as if she had hoped  
to turne away the fancies that maffred her, and hid her  
face, as if she could have hidden her selfe from her  
owne fancies. At length with a whispring note to her  
selfe; O mé vnfortunate wretch (said she) what poysfo-  
nous heates be these, which thus torment me? How  
hath the sight of this strange guest invaede my soule?  
Alas, what entrance found this desire, or what streng-  
had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud passing be-  
tweene her sight and the moone, O Diana (said she) I  
would either the cloud that now hides the light of my  
verue would as easly passe away, as you will quickly  
overcome this let, or els that you were for euer thus  
darkned, to serue for an excuse of my outrageous folly.  
Then looking to the starrs, which had perfitly as then  
beautified the cleere skie: My parëts (said she) have told  
me, that in these faire heavenly bodies, there are great  
hide deities, which haue their working in the ebbing  
& flowing of our estates. If it be so, then (O you Stars)  
judge rightly of me, & if I haue with wicked intet made  
my selfe a pray to fancies; or if by any idle lustes I fra-  
med my harte fit for such an impression, then let this  
plague dayly encrease in me, till my name bee made  
odious.
odious to womankind. But if extramere and unresista-
ble violence have oppressed me, who will euer do any
of you sacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not succour
me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you cannot
helpe me: Sinne must be the mother, and shame the
daughter of my affection. And yet are these but chil-
dish objections (simple Philoclea) it is the impossibilitie
that dooth torment me: for, vnlawfull desires are pu-
nished after the effect of enjoying; but vnpossible de-
sires are punished in the desire it selfe. O then, ô tenne
times vnhappye that I am, since where in all other hope
kindleth loue, in me despare should be the bellowes of
my affection: and of all despaires the most miserable,
which is drawn from impossibilitie. The most coue-
trous man longs not to get riches out of a groud which
never can beare any thing. Why: because it is impos-
sible. The most ambitious wight vexeth not his wittes
to clime into heaven; Why: because it is impossible.
Alas then, ô Loue, why doost thou in thy beautifull
sampler sette such a worke for my Desire to take out,
which is as much impossible: And yet alas, why doo I
thus condemne my Fortune, before I heare what she
can say for her selfe: What doo I, sillie wench, knowe
what Loue hath prepared for me? Doo I not see my
mother, as well, at least as furiouslie as my selfe, loue Zel-
mane? And should I be wiser then my mother? Either
she sees a possibilitie in that which I think impossible,
or els impossible loues neede not misbecome me. And
doo I not see Zelmane (who doth not thinke a thought
which is not first wayed by widsome and vertue) doth
not she vouchsafe to loue me with like ardour? I see it,
her eyes dep ofe it to be true, what then: and if she can
loue
The Countesse of Pembroke's

love poore me, shall I think seorne to love such a woman as Zelme? Away then all vaine examinations of wny and how. Thou loue me, excellent Zelme, and I loue thee: and with that, embracing the very grounde whereon she toy, she said to her selfe (for euen to her self she was ashamed to speake it out in words) O my Zelme, gouerne and direct me: for I am wholly giuen ouer vnto thee.

CHAP. 5.

*The bedfellow communication of Philoclea and Pamela.*

*Pamela's narration of her shepheardes making love,* of Dorus and Dametas horsemanshippe, *of his hote pursuite,* and her colde acceptance. *His letter. Her relenting,* and Philoclea's sole complaint.

In this depth of muzes, and divers sorts of discourses, would she haue raually remained, but that Dametas and Mifs (who were rounde about to secke her, understanding she was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; Dametas saying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters, but for his parte, he did not like that maides should once stirre out of their fathers houses, but if it were to milke a cow, or faue a chichen from a kites foote, or some such other matter of importance. And Mifs swearing that if it were her daughter Mofs, she woulde giue her a lesson for walking so late, that should make her kepe within dores for one fortnight.

But
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

But their iangling made Philoclea rife, and pretending as though she had done it but to sport with them, went with them (after she had willed Mis to waite upon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accustomed by her parents discipline, as well as her sister, to serve her selfe) she went alone vp to Pamela's chamber: where meaning to delight her eyes, and joy her thoughts with the sweet conversation of her beloved sister, she found her though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow sleep most willingly into mortall creatures) sitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almost over the back of it, & looking vp on a wax-candle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchief, which had lately drunk vp the teares of her eyes, leaning in stead of them, crimson circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hottest. Which Philoclea finding (for her eyes had learned to know the hedges of sorowes) she earnestlie intreated to knowe the cause thereof, that either she might comforte, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But Pamela, rather seeming forie that she had perceiued so much, then willing to open any further, O my Pamela (said Philoclea) who are to me a sister in nature a mother in counsell, a Princesse by the law of our crountre, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the dearest, a friend by my choice and your sauour, what meanes this banishing me from your counsels? Do you loue your sorrowe so well, as to grudge me part of it? Or do you thinke I shall not loue a fadde Pamela, so well as a joyfull? Or be my eares vnwoorthie, or my tongue suspected? What is it (my sister) that you should conceale from your sister, yea and servante Philoclea? These
These wordses wanne no further of Pamela, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impouerished their cloathes to inriche their bed, which for that night might well scorne the shrine of Venus: and there cherishing one another with deare, though chaste embracements, with sweet, though cold kisses; it might seeeme that Loue was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreshe himselfe betweene their sweete-breathing lippes. But Philoclea carnestly againe intreated Pamela to open her grieue; who (drawing the curtain, that the candle might not complaine of her blushing) was ready to speake: but the breath almost formed into words, was againe ftopt by her, and turned into sighes. But at last, I pray you (said she) sweete Philoclea, let vs talke of some other thing: & tell me whether you did euere see any thing so ameded as our Pastoral sports be since that Dormus came hether? O Loue, how farte thou seest with blind eyes? Philoclea had straight found her, and therefore to draw out more, in deed (said she) I have often wondered to myselfe how such excellencies could be in so meane a person, but belike Fortune was afraide to lay her treaures, where they should be staind with so many perfections: onely I maruaile how he can frame him selfe to hide so rare gifts vnder such a block as Dametas. Ah (said Pamela) if you knew the cause: but no more doo I neither; and to say the truth: but Lord, how are we falne to talke of this fellow: and yet indeed if you were sometimes with me to marke him, while Dametas reade his rusticke lecture vnto him (how to feede his beastes before noone, where to shade them in the extreame heat, how to make the manger handeome for
for his oxen, when to vfe the goade, & when the voice: giving him rules of a heardma, though he pretended to make him a shepheard) to see all the while with what a grace (which feemes to fet a crowne vpon his bafe eflate) he can desceind to those poore matters, certainly you would: but to what ferves this: no doubt we were better sleepe then talke of these idle matters. Ah my Pamela (faid Philoclea) I haue caught you, the constantnes of your wit was not wont to bring forth such difjoiuuted speecches: you loue, difsemble no further. It is true (faid Pamela) now you haue it; and with leffe adoou should, if my hart could haue thoought those words luteable for my mouth. But indeed (my Philoclea) take heed: for I thinke Vertue itfelf is no armour of prooue against affection. Therfore learne by my example. Alas thought Philoclea to her felfe, your sheeres come to late to cip the birds wings that already is flowne away.

But then Pamela being once fet in the flame of her Loue, went away a maine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towards him; but yet euer waying his meanenes, & fo held continually in due limits; till seeking many meanes to speake with her, & euer kept from it (as el because he shund it, feing and disdaining his mind, as because of her jealous iaylours) he had at length vsed the finest policie that might be in counterfeit ing loue to Mopsa, & slying to Mopsa what focuer he would haue her know: and in how passionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third person, making poore Mopsa beleue, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, becaufe you fhall know my teares come not, neither of repetance nor misery, who thinke you, is my Dorus fallen out
The Countesse of Pembroke's
out to be even the Prince Musidorus, famous over all
Asia, for his heroical enterprises, of whom you remember how much good the stranger Plangus told my father, he not being drowned (as Plangus thought) though his cousin Pyrocles indeed perished. Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or scene his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his love was, you would have matched in your selfe (those two rarely matched together) pittie and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the gods are my witnesse I desire to doo virtuously) can I without the detestable staine of vngratefulnesse absteine from louing him, who (far exceeding the beautifulnesse of his shape with the beautifulnesse of his minde, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his actes) is content so to abase him selfe, as to become Dametas servaunt for my fake? you will say, but how know I him to be Musidorus, since the handmaid of wisdome is now belifed? That consideration did not want in me, for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receive belief, then it is hard to ground belief. For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assurance: and that haue I had of him, not onely by necessary arguments to any of common sense, but by sufficient demonstrations. Lastly he would haue me send to Thessalia: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honorable Loue so much wrong, as so far to suspect him: yet poor soule knowes he no other, but that I doo both suspect, neglect, yea & detest him. For every day he finds one way or other to set forth him selfe vnto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

A few daies since, he & Dametas had furnished the-
Hues very richly to run at the ring before me. O how
mad a sight it was to see Dametas, like rich Tiffew furd
with lambe skins: But o how well it did with Donus to
see with what a grace he presented him selfe before me
on horseback, making majestic wait vpou humblenes.
 how at the first, standing stil with his cies bent vpō me,
as though his motiōs were chained to my looke, he so
staide till I caused Mopsa bid him doo something vpou
his horse: which no looner said, but (with a kinde ra-
ther of quick gefture, then shew of violéce) you might
see him come towards me, beating the ground in so due
time, as no daunce can obserue better measure. If you
remember the ship we saw once, whè the Sea went hie
vpon the coast of Argos, so went the beast: But he (as if
Cētaurlike he had bene one peece with the horse) was
no more moued, then one is with the going of his
owne legges: and in effect so did he command him, as
his owne limmes, for though he had both spurre and
wande, they seemed rather markes of soueraintie, then
instruments of punishment; his hand and legge (with
most pleasing grace) commanding without threatning,
& rather remebring, then chastising, at left if sometimes
he did, it was so stolen, as nyether our eyes could di-
cerne it, nor the horse with any chaunce did complain
of it, he euer going so inst with the horse, either forth
right, or turning, that it seemed as he borrowed the
horses body, so he lent the horse his minde: in the
turning one might perceue the bridle-hand somthing
gently stir, but indeed so gently, as it did rather distill
vertue, then viewiolence. Him selfe (which I thinke is
strange) shewing at one instant both steadines & nim-
blenes; somtimes making him turne close to the ground,

R 2 like
like a cat, when scratchingly she wheeles about after a mouse: sometimes with a little more rising before, now like a Rauen leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of Dametas kiddles bound over the hillocks: and all so done, as neither the lustie kinde shewed any roughnesse, nor the easier any idlenesse: but still like a well obeyed Maister, whose becke is enough for a discipline, euer concluding each thing he did with his face to me-wards, as if thence came not onely the beginning, but ending of his motions. The sporte was to see Dametas, how he was tost from the saddle to the mane of the horse, and thence to the ground, giuing his gay apparell almost as foule an outside, as it had an inside. But as before he had euer said, he wanted but horse & apparell to be as braue a courtier as the best, so now bruised with prooffe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wisedome, to put himselfe vnder the tuition of a beast; so as Dorus was sayne alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at left my womanish eyes could not discerne, but that taking his staffe from his thigh, the descending it a little downe, the getting of it vp into the rest, the letting of the point fall, and taking the ring was but all one motion, at left (if they were divers motions) they did so steallyng slippe one into another, as the latter parte was euer in hande, before the eye could discerne the former was ended. Indeed Dametas found fault that he shewed no more strength in shaking of his staffe: but to my conceite the fine cleernes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull. But how delightfull soeuer it was, my delight might well be in my soule, but it never went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort. But how much more
more I found reason to like him, the more I set all the strength of mind to suppress it, or at least to conceal it. Indeed I must confess, as some Physitions have tolde me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not inwardly; so truly the cold ashes layed upon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my breast swollen with keeping my sighes imprisoned; full often haue the tears, I drave backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drown my harte. But alas what did that helpe poore Dorus? whose eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) coulde carrye vnto him no other newes, but discomfortable. I thinke no day past, but by some one invention he would appeare vnto me to testifie his loue. One time he daunced the Matachine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexterity!) I thinke to make mee see, that he had bene brought vp in such exercises: an other time he perswaded his maister (to make my time seeme shorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play Priamus while he plaide Paris. Thinke (sweet Philoclea) what a Priamus we had: but truly, my Paris was a Paris, and more then a Paris: who while in a paynted apparell, with naked necke, armes, and legges, he made loue to Oenone, you might wel see by his changed countenance, and true teares, that he felt the parte he playde. Tell me (sweet Philoclea) did you euer see such a shepheard? tell me, did you euer heare of such a Prince? And then tell me, if a small or vnworthy assaulte haue conquered me. Truely I would hate my life, if I thought vanitie led me. But since my parents deale so cruelly with me, it is time for me to trust something to my owne judgement. Yet hetherto haue my lookes bene as I told you, which
which continuing after many of these his fruitles trials, have wrought such change in him, as I tell you true (with that worde she laid her hand vpon her quaking side) I do not a little feare him. See what a letter this is (then drew she the curtaine and tooke the letter from vnder the pillowe) which to daie (with an afflicted humblenesse) he deliuered me, pretending before Mopse, that I should read it vnto her, to mollifie (forsooth) her iron stomacke; with that she read the letter containing thus much.

Most blessed paper, which shalt kiss that had, where to all blessednes is in nature a seruit, do not yet disdain to cary with thee the woful words of a miser now despairing: neither be afraid to appeare before her, bearing the base title of the sender. For no sooner shal that divine hande touch thee, but that thy basenesse shall be turned to most hie preferment. Therefore mourne boldly my Inke, for while she lookes vpó you, your blacknes will shine: crie out boldly my Lamentatio; for while she reads you, your cries wil be musique. Say then (O happy messenger of a moost vnhappy meslage) that the too soone borne, too late dying creature, which dares not speake, no not looke, no not scarcelie thinke (as from his miserable selfe, vnto her heauenly highnesse) onely presumes to desire thee (in the time that her eyes and voice doo exalt thee) to say, and in this manner to say, not from him, O no, that were not fit, but of him. Thus much vnto her sacred judgement: O you, the onely, the onely honour to women, to men the onely admiration, you that being armed by Loue, desie him that armed you, in this high estate where in you haue placed me, yet let me remember him.
to whom I am bound for bringing me to your presence, and let me remember him, who (since he is yours, how meanes so euer it be) it is reaso you have an account of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languishing steppes runnes fast to his gravae, and will you suffer a temple (how poorely-built so euer, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be rased? But he dyeth: it is most true, he dyeth; and he in whom you liue, to obey you, dieth. Whereof though he plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he hath receiued. He dyes, because in wofull language all his sens for tell him, that such is your pleasure: for since you will not that he liue, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the most ruined Dorus, but his ende? Ende then, cuill destined Dorus, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it suffiseth her wisedome to know, that her heauenly will shalbe accomplished.

O my Philoelea, is hee a person to write these words? and are these words lightly to be regarded? But if you had seene, when with trembling hand he had delivered it, how hee went away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried him selfe to his sepulcher. Two times I must confesse I was about to take curtesie into mine eyes; but both times the former resolution stopt the entrie of it: so that he departed without obtaining any further kindnesse. But he was no sooner out of the doore, but that I looked to the doore kindly; and truely the feare of him euer since hath put me into such perplexitie, as now you found me. Ah my Pamela (saide Philoelea) leaue sorrow. The riuier of your teares will soone loose his fountaine;
The Countesse of Pembrokes

it is in your hand as well to stitch vp his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And so (though with self-grieved mind) she comforted her sister, till sleepe came to bath himselfe in Pamelaes faire weeping eyes.

Which when Philoclea found, wringing her hands, O me (said she) indeed the onely subiect of the destinies displeasure, whose greatest fortunatenes is more vnfortunate, then my sisters greatest vnfortunatenesse. Alas shee weepes because she would be no sooner happy; I weepe because I can neuer be happie; her teares flow from pittie, mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not enuie thee, deare Pamela, I do not enuie thee: onely I could wish that being thy sister in nature, I were not so farre off a kin in fortune.

CHAP. 6.

The Ladies uprising, and interrogatories to Dorus concerning Pyrocles and Euarchus. His historiologie of Euarchus kingly excellencies, his entry on a most corrupt estate, and reformation thereof by royall arts and actions.

His, and Dorilaus croffe-mariage to ecb others sister, ha-ving by ecb a sonne, their mutuall defence, with Dorilaus death.

Vt the darkenesse of sorrow overshadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themselves under the wings of sleepe, till the next morning had almost lost his name, be-
fore the two sweet sleeping sisters awaked from dreams, which flattered them with more comfort, than their waking could, or would consent unto. For then they were called vp by Misoff who, having bene with Cynedia, had received commandement to be continually with her daughters, and particularly not to let Zelmune and Philoclea have any private conference, but that she should be present to heare what passed. But Misof having now her authoritie encresed, came with flowing eyers to deliuer a flauering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a shame for them to marre their complexions, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: & that, when she was of their age, she trowed, she would haue made a handkerchiefe by that time of the day. The two sweete Princes with a smiling silence answered her entertainment, and obeying her direction, couered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as soone as Pamela was readie (& sooner she was then her sister) the agony of Dorus giuing a fit to her selfe, which the words of his letter (liuely imprinted in her minde) still remembred her of, she called to Mopsa, and willed her to fetch Dorus to speake with her: because (she said) she would take further judgement of him, before she would moue Dametas to graunt her in marriage vnto him. Mopsa (as glad as of sweete-meate to goe of such an arrant) quickly returned with Dorus to Pamela, who entended both by speaking with him to giue some comfort to his passionate harte, and withall to heare some part of his life past, which although fame had alreadie deliuered vnto her, yet she desiered in more particular certainties to haue it from so beloued an historian. Yet the sweetnesse of vertues disposition
The Countesse of Pembroke

Disposition icalous, even ouer it selfe, suffred her not to enter abruptile into questions of Musidorus (whom she was halfe ashamed she did loue so well, and more then halfe forie she could loue no better) but thought best first to make her talke arise of Pyrocles, and his vertuous father: which thus she did.

Dorus (said she) you told me the last day, that Planus was deceaued in that he affirmed the Prince Musidorus was drowned: but withall you confessed his cosen Pyrocles perished, of whom certainly in that age there was a great losse, since (as I haue heard) he was a young Prince, of whome al me expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, & yet vertue promised for him, their expectation should not be deceaued. Most excellent Ladie (said Dorus) no expectatiō in others, nor hope in himself could aspire to a higher mark, the to be thought worthy to be praised by your judgement, & made worthy to be praised by your mouth. But most sure it is, that as his fame could by no meanes get so sweete & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, so could not you (leaving your selfe aside) finde in the world a fitter subject of commendation; as noble, as a long succession of royall ancestors, famous, and famous of victories could make him: of shape most lovely, and yet of mind more louely, valiant, curteous, wise, what should I say more? sweete Pyrocles, excellent Pyrocles, what can my words but wrong thy perfection, which I would to God in some small measure thou hadst bequethed to him that euer must haue thy vertues in admiration; that masked at least in them, I might haue found some more gratious acceptation: with that he imprisoned his looke for a while vpon MopSa, who thereupon fell.
fell into a verie wide smilling. Truely (said Pamela) Dorus I like well your minde, that can raise it selfe out of so base a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating so excellent a Prince, as Pyrocles was. Who shootes at the mid-day Sunne, though he be sure he shall never hit the marke, yet as sure he is, he shall shoot higher, then who aymes but at a bush. But I pray you Dorus (said she) tell me (since I perceave you are well acquainted with that storie) what Prince was that Euarchus father to Pyrocles, of whom so much fame goes, for his rightly royall vertues, or by what wayes he got that opinion. And then so descend to the causes of his sending first away from him, and then to him for that excellent sonne of his, with the discourse of his life and losse: and therein you may (if you lift) say something of that same Musidorus his cosen, because they going together, the story of Pyrocles (which I onely desire) may be the better understood.

Incomparable Lady (saihed he) your commandement doth not onely give me the wil, but the power to obey you, such influence hath your excellencie. And first, for that famous King Euarchus, he was (at this time you speake off) King of Macedon, a kingdome, which in elder time had such a soueraintie over all the provinces of Greece, that euë the particular kings therein did acknowledge (with more or lesse degrees of homage) some kind of fealty thereunto: as among the rest, euë this now most noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of Arcadia. But he, whë he came to his crowne, finding by his later ancestors either negligëce, or misfortune, that in some ages many of those duties had bin intermitted, would rather stirre vp old titles (how apparant soeuer) where-
whereby the publike peace (with the losse of manie not guilte soules) should be broken; but contenting himselfe to guide that shippe, wherein the heauens had placed him, shewed no losse magnanimitie in daungerlesse despising, then others in daungerous afecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the earth hath since borne enow bleeding witnessses, that it was no want of true courage. Who as he was most wise to see what was beft, and most juft in the perfouming what he saw, & temperate in abstaining from any thing any way contrary; so thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater harte to see and contenme daunger, where daunger would offer to make any wrongfull threatning upon him. A Prince, that indeed especially meaured his greatnesse by his goodnesse: and if for any thing he loued greatnesse, it was, because therein he might exercisle his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly a-pect, and the more goodly by a graue maieftie, where- with his mind did decke his outward graces, strong of body, and so much the stronge, as he by a well discipli- ned exercisle taught it both to do, and suffer. Of age, so as he was about fiftie yeares when his Nephew Musido- rus tooke on such shepherdish apparell for the loue of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

4. This King left Orphan both of father and mother, (whose father & grandfather likewise had dyed yong) he found his estate, when he came to age (which al- lowed his authoritie) so diisoynted euin in the noblest & strongest lims of gouernmet, that the name of a King was growne eué odious to the people, his authority ha- ting bin abused by those great Lords, & little kings: who in those betweene-times of raigning (by vniust faou- ring
ring those that were partially theirs, & oppressing them that would defend their libertie against them had brought in (by a more felt then scene maner of proceeding) the worst kind of Oligarchie, that is, whé men are gouerned in deede by a fewe, and yet are not taught to know what those fewe be, to whom they should obey. For they hauing the power of kings, but not the nature of kings, vfed the authority as men do their farms, of which they see within a yeere they shal goe out: making the Kinges swordes strike whom they hated, the Kings purse reward whom they loued: and (which is worst of all) making the Royall countenance serene to undermine the Royall soueraintie. For the Subiectes could taste no sweeter fruiites of hauing a King, then grievous taxations to serue vaine purposes; Lawes made rather to finde faults, then to prevent faults: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priviledged place of vnbrideled licentiousnes, then as a biding of him, who as a father, should giue a fatherly example vnto his people. Hence grew a very dissoluction of all estates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition neuer satisfied) grew factions among themselves: and the vnderlings, glad indeede to be vnderlings to them they hated lest to preserve them from such they hated most. Men of vertue suppressed, left their shining should discover the others filthines; and at length vertue it selfe almost forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nusled in corruption, scorning them that would seeke reformation: yong men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and so to new-fangleines both of manners, apparrell, and each thing els.
The Countesse of Pembroke

eels, by the custome of selfe-guylte euill, glide to change
though oft for a worse, marchandise abused, and to
townes decayed for want of iust and naturall libertie;
offices, euen of judging soules, solde; publique defen-
ces neglected; and in summe, (left too long I trouble
you) allawrie, and (which wried it to the most wrie
course of all) witte abused, rather to faine reason
why it should be amisse, then how it should be amended.

In this, and a much worse pligthe then it is fitte to
trouble your excellent ears withal, did the King. Enar-
cius finde his estate, when he tooke upon him the regi-
ment: which by reason of the long streame of abuile,
he was forced to esstablish by some euen extreme seve-
ritie, not so much for the very faultes themselves,
(which he rather sought to prevent then to punish,) as
for the faultie ones; who strong, even in their faultes,
sorne his youth, and could not learne to disgeft,
that the man which they so long had vied to maake
their owne appetites, shold now be the reducer of
them into order. But so soone as some sewe (but in
deede notable) examples, had thundred a duttie into
the subiects hartes, he soone shewed, no baleses of iuf-
pition, nor the basest baleses of enuiue, could any whit
rule suche a Ruler. But then shined foorth indeede all
loue among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by
iustice, did make that loue most louely: his first & prin-
cipall care being to appeare vnto his people, such as he
would haue them be, & to be such as he appeared; ma-
kling his life the example of his lawes, as it were, his ac-
tions arising out of his deedes. So that within small
time,
time, he wanne a singular loue in his people, and engraffed singular confidence. For how could they chuse but loue him, whom they found so truely to loue the? He euen in reason dislayning, that they that haue charge of beastes, should loue their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to gouerne the most excellent creature, should not loue so noble a charge. And therefore, where most Princes (seduced by flatterie to builde upon false grounds of gouernment) make themselves (as it were) another thing from the people; and so count it gaine what they can get from them: and (as if it were two counter ballances, that their estate goes hieft when the people goes lowest) by a faliacie of argument thinking themselves most Kingses, when the subiects is most basely subiected: he contrariwise, vertuouslie and wisely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof himselfe was the head, euen so cared for them, as he woulde for his owne limmes: never restrayning their liberty, without it stretched to licenciousnes, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not imploied to the purchafe of a greater good: but in all his actions shewing a delight to their welfare, broght that to passe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their loue he had all. In summe (peerelesse Princesse) I might as easily sette downe the whole Arte of gouernment, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in such forte he flourished in the sweete comforthe of dooing much good, when by an action of leauing his Countrie, he was forced to bring foorth his vertue of magnanimite, as before he had done of iu-stice.
The Countesse of Pembroke

He had onely one sister, a Ladie (left I should too easilie fall to partiall prayles of her) of whom it may be iustly said, that she was no vnfit brach to the noble stock wherof she came. Her he had giuen in mariage to Dorilaus, Prince of Thessalia, not so much to make a frédship, as to coöirm the frédship betwixt their posteritie, which betwene them, by the likenes of vertue, had been long before made: for certainly, Dorilaus could neede no amplifiers mouth for the highest point of prais. Who hath not heard (said Pamela) of the valiat, wife, and iust Dorilaus, whose vnripe death doth yet (so many yeares since) draw teares fro vertuous eyes? And indeede, my father is wont to speake of nothing with greater admiration, then of the notable friendshippe (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betwene Princes) that so holily was obserued to the last, of those two excellent men. But (said the) goe on I pray you. Dorilaus (said he) hauing maried his sister, had his mariage in short time blest (for so are folk woont to say, how vnhappie souere the children after grow) with a sonne, whom they named Musidorus: of whom I must needes first speake before I come to Pyrocles; because as he was borne first, so vpon his occasion grew (as I may say accidentally) the others birth. For scarcely was Musidorus made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southlayers, who affirmed strange & incredible things should be performed by that childe, whether the heuens at that time lifted to play with ignorant mankind, or that flatterie be so presumptuous, as euen at times to borow the face of Diiinitie. But certainly, so did the boldnes of their affirmation accompanie the greatnes of what they did affirme (euens descending to particularities,
ritics, what kingdoms he should overcome) that the King of Phrygia (who o'er-superstitiously thought himselfe touched in the matter) sought by force to destroy the infant, to prevent his after-expectations: because a skilful man (having compared his nativity with the child) so told him. Foolish man, either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not considering, that if it were a worke of the superiour powers, the heavens at length are never children. But so he did, & by the aid of the Kings of Lydia and Crete (joining together their armies) invaded Thessalia, & brought Dorilas to some behind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend & brother Enarchus came so mightily to his succour, that with some enterchanging changes of fortune, they began of a just war, the best child, peace. In which time E- narchus made a crose marriage also with Dorilas his sister, & shortly left her with child of the famous Pyrocles, driven to returne to the defence of his owne countrey, which in his absence (helped with some of the ill contented nobilitie) the mighty King of Thrace, & his brother, King of Pannonia, had invaded. The successe of those warres was too notable to be unknowne to your ears, to which it seemes all worthy fame hath glory to come vnto. But there was Dorilas (valiantly requiting his friends helpe) in a great battaile deprivd of his life, his obsequies being no more solenised by the teares of his partakers, the the bloud of his enemies, with so piercing a sorrow to the constant hart of Enarchus, that the newes of his sons birth could lighten his countenance with no shew of comfort, although all the comfort that might be in a child, truth itselfe in him forthwith delivered. For what fortune onely souleayers foretold of Musidorus, that all men might see prognosticated in Py- rocles,
The Countesse of Pembroke

rocles, both Heauens & Earth giuing tokés of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The senate house of the planets was at no time to set, for the decreeing of perfectió in a man, as at that time all folkes skilful therin did acknowledge: onely loue was threatened, and promised to him, and so to his cousin, as both the tempest and hauent of their best yeares. But as death may have prevented Pyrocles, so vnworthinesse must be the death to Musidorus.

CHAP. 7.

The education of Pyrocles & Musidorus. Their friendship, navigation, and first shipwrecke. The strange gratitude of two brothers to them, upon their liberality to those two brothers.

But the mother of Pyrocles (shortly after her childé-birth) dying, was cause that Enarchus recommended the care of his only son to his sister; doing it the rather because the warre continued in cruel heat, betwixt him & those euill neighbours of his. In which meane time those young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on so, that Pyrocles taught admiration to the hardest conceats: Musidorus (perchaunce because among his subjectes) exceeding-ly beloved: and by the good order of Enarchus (well perfourmed by his sister) they were so brought vp, that all the sparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in the, were so blowne to giue forth their uttermost heate that
that justly it may be affirmed, they enflamed the affections of all that knew the. For almost before they could perfectly speake, they began to receive coueits not unworthy of the best speakers: excellent deuifes being vsed, to make even their sport profitable; images of battles, & fortifications being then delivered to their memory, which after, their stronger judgements might dispense, the delight of tales being couerted to the knowledge of all the stories of worthy Princes, both to moue them to do nobly, & teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue still being set before their eyes, & that taught them with far more diligent care, then Gramatical rules, their bodies exercised in all abilities, both of doing and suffring, & their mindes acquainted by degrees with daungerous; & in sum, all bent to the making up of princely mindes: no servile feare vsed towards them, nor any other violent restraint, but still as to Princes: so that a habite of commaundung was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannie: Nature having done so much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

Among which I nothing so much delight to recount, as the memorable friendship that grewe betwixt the two Princes, such as made them more like then the likenesse of all other vertues, and made them more neer one to the other, then the neerenes of their bloud could aspire vnto; which I think grew the faster, and the faster was tied betweene them, by reason that Musidorus being elder by three or foure yeares, it was neither so great a difference in age as did take away the delight in societie, and yet by the difference there was taken
taken away the occasion of childish contentions, till they had both past over the humour of such contentions. For Pyrocles bare reverence ful of loue to Musidorus, & Musidorus had a delight full of loue in Pyrocles. Musidorus, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to Pyrocles, and Pyrocles was so glad to learne of none, as of Musidorus. till Pyrocles, being come to sixtie yeares of age, he seemed so to overrun his age in growth, strength, and all things following it, that not Musidorus, no nor any man living (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horse, or foote, more strongly, or deliver that strength more nimbly, or become the delivery more gracefully, or employal more vertuously. Which may well seeme wonderfull: but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull subject.

At which time understanding that the King Eurachus, after so many yeares warre, and the conquest of all Pannonia, and almost Thrace, had now brought the conclusion of all to the siege of Byzantium (to the raising of which siege great forces were made) they would needs fall to the practice of those vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of Musidorus nobly yeelding ouer her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother she was in effect to the both) the rather that they might helpe her beloved brother, they brake of all delays, which Musidorus for his parte thought already had deuoured too much of his good time, but that he had once granted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deare friend Pyrocles; that he would never seeke the adventures of armes, vntil he might go with him: which having taint boud his hart (a true flame to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne
owne humour for his friends sake, till now finding him able euery way to go thorow with that kinde of life, he was as destrous for his sake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a nauie, that they might go like themselues, and not onely bring the comfort of their presence, but of their power to their deere parent Euarchus, they recommended themselues to the Sea, leaving the shore of Thessalia full of teares and vowes; and were receiued thereon with so smooth and smiling a face, as if Neptune had as then learned falsely to sawne on Princes. The winde was like a feraunt, wayting behind them so iust, that they might fill the failes as they lifted; and the best faylers shewing themselues lesse couetous of his liberalitie, so tempered it, that they all kept together like a beautifull flocke, which so well could obey their maifters pipe: without sometimes, to delight the Princes eies, some two or three of them would striue, who could (either by the cunning of well spending the windes breath, or by the aduantageous building of their mooving houses) leaue their fellowes behind them in the honour of speed: while the two Princes had leisure to see the practife of that, which before they had learned by booke: to consider the arte of catching the winde prifoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it; to see how beautie, and vse can so well agree together, that of all the trinckts, where with they are attired, there is not one but serues to some necessary purpose. And (O Lord) to see the admirable power & noble effects of Loue, whereby the seeming insensible Loadstone, with a secret beautie (holding the spirit of iron in it) can draw that hard-harted thing vnto it, and (like a

vertuous
The Countesse of Pembroke

...virtuous mistresse) not only make it bow it selfe, but
with it make it aspire to so high a Loue, as of the heav-
enly Poles, and thereby to bring forth the noblest
deeds, that the children of the Earth can boast of. And
so the Princes delighting their cōceats with confirming
their knowledge, being wherein the Sea-discipline dif-
fered from Land-service, they had for a day & almost a
whole night, as pleasing entertainment, as the falsest
heart could giue to him he means worst to.

But by that the next morning began a little to make
a guldēn shewe of a good meaning, there arose euen
with the Sun, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face,
which shortly (like inck powred into water) had blac-
ked over all the face of heauen; preparing (as it were)
amournefull stage for a Tragedie to be plaied on. For
forthwith the windes began to speake lowder, and as
in a tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themselves fittest
instruments of commandement; and blowing whole
stormes of hayle and raine vpon them, they were soo-
ner in daunger, then they coulde almost bethinke
themselves of chaunge. For then the traiterous Sea
began to swell in pride against the afflicted Nauie, un-
der which (while the heauen favoured them) it had
layne so calmely, making mountaines of it selfe, o-
uer which the tossed and tottring ship shoulde clime,
to be stright carried downe againe to a pit of hellish
darkeness; with such cruell blowes against the sides
of the shippe (that which way focuer it went, was still-
in his malice) that there was left neither power to stay,
nor way to escape. And shortly had it so duffered
the loving companie, which the daie before had tar-
sried together, that most of them never met againe;
but
but were swallowed vp in his never-satisfied mouth. Some indeed (as since was knowne) after long wandering returned into Thesalia; other recovered Byzantium, and servd Enarchus in his warre. But in the ship wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune fails them) though they employed all industrie to save themselves, yet what they did was rather for dutie to nature, then hope to escape. So ougly a darkenesse, as if it would prevent the nights coming, usurped the dayes right: which (accompanied sometimes with thunders, always with horrible noyes of the chasen winds) made the masters and pilots so astonisht, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew they could scarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whistle. For the sea straue with the winds which should be lowder, & the shrouds of the ship with a ghastful noise to them that were in it, witnessed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heauen roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as hauing those powers for enemies. Certainly there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in those flowing kingdoms. For that dwelling place is unnaturlall to mankind, and then the terriblenesse of the continuall motion, the dissolutio of the fare being from comfort, the eye and the ear hauing ougly images euer before it, doth still vex the minde, euen when it is best armed against it. But thus the day past (if that might be called a day) while the cunningest mariners were so conquered by the storme, as they thought it best with striking sailies to ycelde to be governed by it: the valiantest feeling inward dismayednesse, and yet the feare

S 4  fullest
The Countesse of Pembroke's

fullest ashamed fully to shew it, seeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greatest fortunes) did in their countenances accuse no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what might be done (putting their handes to euene most painefull office) taught them at one instant to promise themselves the best, and yet not to despite the worst. But so were they carried by the tyrannic of the winde, and the treafon of the sea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it shewed it selfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glafe, then by the day cleerenesse) hauing runne fortune as blindly, as it selfe euer was painted, left the conclusion should not aunswere to the rest of the play, they were driuen vp
on a rocke: which hidden with those outrageous waues, did, as it were, closely difsemble his cruel mind, till with an unbelleeued violence (but to them that haue tried it) the shipperanne vp on it; and seeming willinger to perish then to haue her course-stayed, redoubled her blowes, till she had broken her selve in pieces, and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the seas greedinesse, left nothing within it but despaire of safetie, and expectation of a loathsome end. There was to be seene the diuerfe manner of minds in distresse: some fate upon the toppe of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the sea swallowed them; some one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to prevent drowning; some prayed, and there wanted not of them which cursed, as if the heauens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monstrous crie, begotten of manie roaring vowes
vowes, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not prevented it with the power of reason.

But the Princes v'ing the passions of fearing euill, and desiring to escape, onely to serue the rule of ver- tue, not to abandon ones selfe, leapt to a ribbe of the shippe, which broken from his fellowes, floted with more likelyhood to doe service, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; vpon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne seruants of theirs; and streight they foure were carried out of sight, in that huge rising of the sea, from the rest of the shippe. But the piece they were on sinking by little and little ynder them, not able to support the weight of so manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was Leu- cippus, the younger Nellus) shewed themselves right faithfull and grateful seruants vnto them; gratefull(I say) for this cause: Those two gentlemen had bene taken prisoners in the great warre the king of Phrygia made vpon Thessalia, in the time of Musidorus his in- fancie; and hauing beene solde into another countrie (though peace fell after betwene these Realmes) could not be delivered,because of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater summe, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in respect of the great expences her selfe and people had bene put to in those warres; and so had they remained in prison about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing speaches of their good deserts) found means both by selling all the Jewels they had of great price, and by giuing ynder their hands great estates when they should come to be Kings (which promisses their vertue promised for them should be kept) to get
The Countesse of Pembroke

so much treasure as redeemed them from captiuitie. This remember, and kindly remembred by these two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themselves to the seas rage, & cuen when they went to dye, themselves praying for the Princes lives. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, so moued the Princes hartes as the tendernessse of that looing part, farre from glorie, hauing so few lookers on, farre from hope of reward, since themselves were sure to perish.

CHAP. 8.

Pyrocles cast on the shore of Phrygia led prisoner to the King. That suspicios tyrant naturalized. His intent to kill Pyrocles. Musidorus his escape from sea, and offer to dye for his friend. Their contention for death. Preparation for Musidorus execution. His straunge delivery by Pyrocles, and a sodaine mutinie. Their killing the bad King, and creating a better.

But now of all the royal Nauie they had left but one pece of one ship, whercon they kept themselves in all trueth, hauing enterchaunged their cares, while either cared for other, eche comforting and counselling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worfe. But so fell it out, that as they were carryed by the tide (which there seconed by the storme ran exceedingly swiftly)
Musidorus seeing (as he thought) Pyrocles not well upon the board, as he would with his right hand have helped him on better, he had no sooner unsatined his hold, but that a waue forcibly spoiled his weaker hand of hold; and so for a time parted those friends, each crying to the other, but the noise of the sea drowned their farewell. But Pyrocles (then careless of death, if it had come by any means, but his owne) was shortly brought out of the seas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conscience I know) that comfort was but bitter vnto him. And bitter indeed it fell out euin in it selfe to be vnto him.

For being cast on land much bruised & beaten both with the seas hard farewell, and the shores rude welcome, and even almost deadly tired with the length of his uncomfortable labour, as he was walling up to discover some bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came freight running vnto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne,) by appointment watched (with many others) in divers places along the coast, who laide handes of him, and without either questioning with him, or shewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worse having no regard to the hard plight he was in (being so wette and weake) they carried him some miles thence, to a house of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more civilitie (though with much more busines then those vnder-fellowes had shewed) beganne in captious manner to put interrogatories vnto him. To which he (vnsued to such entertainment) did shortlie and plainly aunswere, what he was, and how he came thither.

But
But that no sooner knowne, with numbers of armed
men to garde him (for mischiefe, not from mischiefe)
he was sent to the Kings court, which as then was not
above a dayes iourney off, with letters from that offi-
cer, containing his owne serviceable diligence in disco-
verying so great a personage; adding with all more then
was true of his conjectures, because he would endeare
his owne service.

This country whereon he fell was Phrygia, and it
was to the King thereof to whom he was sent, a Prince
of a melancholy constitution both of bodie and mind;
wickedly sad, ever musing of horrible matters; suspe-
ceting, or rather condemning all men of euill, because
his minde had no eye to espie goodnesse: and there-
fore accusing Sycophantes, of all men did best fort to
his nature; but therefore not seeming Sycophantes, be-
cause of no euill they said, they could bring any new
or doubtfull thing vnto him, but such as already he
had bene apt to determine; so as they came, but as
proofes of his wisedome: fearefull and never secure;
while the feare he had figured in his minde had any
possibilitie of event. A tode-like retyrednesse, and
closenesse of minde; nature teaching the odiousnesse
of poyson, and the daunger of odiousnesse. Yet while
youth lasted in him, the exercises of that age, and his
humour (not yet fullie discouered) made him something the more frequentable, and lesse daungerous.
But after that yeares beganne to come on with
some, though more seldom shewes of a bloudie na-
ture, and that the prophetic of Musidorus destinie
came to his eares (delivered vnto him, and receiued
of him with the hardest interpretation, as though
his subjectes did delight in the hearing thereof.)
Then gaue he himselle indefe to the full currant of
his disposition, especially after the warre of Thesalia,
wherein (though in truth wrongely) he deemed, his
insuccessings proceeded of their unwillingnes to haue
him prosper: and then thinking him selfe contemned,
(knowing no countermine against contempt, but ter-
ror) began to let nothing passe which might beare the
colour of a fault, without sharpe punishment: & when
he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was
sufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be
guiltie. And as there is no honor, to which impudent
pouertie cannot make it selfe serviceable, so were there
eow of those desperate ambitious, who would builde
their houses vpon others ruines, which after shoulde
fall by like practises. So as servitude came mainly vpon
that poore people, whose deedes were not onely puni-
shed, but words corrested, and even thoughts by some
meane or other puld out of the: while suspiciõ bred the
mind of cruelty, and the effectes of cruelty stirred a
new cause of suspition. And in this plight (full of watch-
full fearefulnes) did the storme deliuer Sweete Pyrocles
to the stormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did
such wrong to so rare a stranger (whose countenaunce
deserved both pitie and admiration) condemning the-
selues as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their
forces.

But when this bloudy King knew what he was, and
in what order he and his cofin Musidorus (so much of
him feared) were come out of Thesalia, assuredly think-
ing (because euery thinking the worst) that those for-
ces were provided against him; glad of the perishing
(as
The Countesse of Pembrokes

(as he thought) of Musidorus, determined in publique fort to put Pyrocles to death. For hauing quite loste the way of noblenes, he strange to clime to the height of terrorblenes, and thinking to make all men adread, to make such one an enemie, who would not spare, nor feare to kill so great a Prince; and lastly, hauing nothing in him why to make him his friend, thought, he woulde make him away, for being his enemie. The day was appointed, and all things appointed for that cruell blow, in so solemn an order, as if they would set forth tyrany in most gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of intin- cible valour, yet so vnustly subiect to such outrageous wrong, carrying himselfe in all his demeanure so constaty, abiding extremitie, that one might see it was the cutting away of the greatest hope of the world, and destroying vertue in his sweetest growth.

But so it fell out that his death was prevented by a rare example of friendship in Musidorus: who being almost drowned, had benetaken vp by a Fisherman belonging to the kingdome of Pontus; and being there, and understanding the full discourse (as Fame was very prodigall of so notable an accident) in what case Pyrocles was learning withall, that his hate was farre more to him then to Pyrocles, he founde means to acquaint him selfe with a noble-man of that Countrie, to whom largely discovering what he was, he found him a most fitte instrument to effectuate his desire. For this noble-man had bene one, who in many warres had serued Euxarchus, and had bene so mind-striken by the beautie of vertue in that noble King, that (though not bome his Subiect) he even professe himselfe his servaunt. His desire therefore to him was, to keepe Musidorus in a
in a strong Castle of his, and then to make the King of Phrygia understand, that if he would deliver Pyrocles, Musidorus would willingly put him selfe into his handes: knowing well, that how thirstie so euer he was of Pyrocles bloud, he woulde rather drinke that of Musidorus.

The Nobleman was loath to preferue one by the losse of another, but time urging resolution: the importunitie of Musidorus (who shewed a minde not to ouer-lie Pyrocles) with the affection he bare to Euar-chus, so preuayled, that he carried this strange offer of Musidorus, which by that Tyrant was greedelie accepted.

And so vpon securitie of both sides, they were enterchanged. Where I may not omitt that worke of friendship in Pyrocles, who both in speache and couitenance to Musidorus, well shewes, that he thought him selfe injured, and not releued by him: asking him, what he had euer seene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidentes as well as any man: and why he shoulde enuie him the glorie of suffering death for his friendes cause, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne possession: But in this notable contention, (where the conquest must be the conquerers destruction, and saefte the punishment of the conquered) Musidorus preuayled: because he was a more welcome prize to the vnjuste King, that wisht none well, to them worse then others, and to him worste of all: and as chearefully going towarde, as Pyrocles went frowardly fromwarde his death, he was deliuered to the King, who could not be inough sure of him, without he fed his owne eies vpon one,
The Countesse of Pembrokes

one, whom he had begun to feare, as soone as the other began to be.

7 Yet because he would in one acte, both make ostentation of his owne felicitie (into whose hands his most feared enemie was fallen) and withal cut of such hopes from his suspected subjects (when they should knowe certainly he was dead) with much more skilful cruelty, and horrible solemnity he caused each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannie. And so the day being come, he was led foorth by many armed men (who often had beeene the fortifiers of wickednes) to the place of execution: where coming with a mind comforted in that he had done such service to Pyrocles, this strange encounter he had.

8 The excelling Pyrocles was no sooner deliuered by the kings servants to a place of liberty, then he bent his witte and courage, (and what would not they bring to passe:) how ether to deliuer Musidorus, or to perish with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces sufficient by force to rescue him) to bring himselfe to die with him, (little hoping of better euent) he put himselfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of some few crownes he tooke of that noble man, (who full of sorrow, though not knowing the secrete of his intent, suffered him to goe in such order from him) he (even he, born to the greatest expectation, and of the greatest bloud that any Prince might be) submitted himselfe to be servaunt to the executioner that should put to death Musidorus: a farre notabler proofe of his friendship, considering the height of his minde, then any death could be. That bad oficer not suspecting him, being a-raied fit for such an estate, & hauing his beautie hidden by
by many soule spots he artificially put vpon his face, gaue him leave not onely to weare a swords him selfe, but to beare his swords prepared for the iustified murder. And so Pyrocles taking his time, when Musidorus was vpon the scaffold (separated somewhat from the rest as allowed to say something) he stepped vnto him; & putting the swords into his hande not bound (a point of ciuitie the officers vsed towards him, because they doubted no such enterprise) Musidorus (saide he) die nobly. In truth, neuer mā betweene ioy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after considering his case, had such a confusion of thoughts, as I had, when I saw Pyrocles so neare me. But with that Dorus blushed, and Pamela smiled: and Dorus the more blushed at her smiling, and the more smiled at his blushing; because he had (with the remembraunce of that plight he was in) forgotten in speaking of himselfe to vse the third person. But Musidorus turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this sorte: But (saide he) when they were with swords in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place of defence) but making that a preferuation in not hoping to be preferued, and now acknowledging themselves subject to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongst the all (for all were enemies) & had quickly either with flight or death, left none vpon the scaffold to annoy them. Wherein Pyrocles (the excellent Pyrocles) did such wonders beyond belief, as was hable to leade Musidorus to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, iust rage & desperate vertue did such effects, that the popular iorte of the beholders began to be almost

super-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Superstitiously amazed, as at effectes beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from out a window (where he was not ashamed, the world should behold him a beholder) comanded his garde, and the rest of his soouldiers to haften their death. But many of them lost their bodies to loose their soules, when the Princes grew almost so weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

But as they were still fighting with weake armes, and strong harts, it happened, that one of the soouldiers (comanded to go vp after his fellowes against the Princes) having received a light hurt, more wounded in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came vp with modestie: which another of his fellowes seeing, to pike a thanke of the King, strake him upon the face, reuiling him, that so accompanied, he would runne away from so fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in reuenge thrust him through: which with his death was streight requited by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongst the soouldiers, which seene, and not understood by the people (vsed to feares but not vsed to be bolde in them) some began to cry treason, and that voice streight multiplying it selfe, the King (O the cowardise of a guiltie conscience) before any man set vpon him, fled away. Wherewith a bruit (either by arte of some well meaning men, or by such chaunce as such things often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was slaine; wherewith certaine yong men of the brauest minds, cried with lowde voice, Libertie; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them,
them set upon the gate, and soldiers as chief instruments of Tyrannie: and quickly, aided by the Princes, they had left none of them alive, nor any other in the citie, who they thought had in any forte set his hand to the worke of their seruitude, and (God knowes) by the blindness of rage, killing many guiltes persons, either for affinity to the Tyrant, or enmity to the tyrant-killers. But some of the wisest (seeing that a popular licence is indeepe the many-headed tyranny) preuailed with the rest to make Musidorus their chiefe: choosing one of them (because Princes) to defende them, and him because elder and most hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom foorthwith they lifted vp. Fortune (I thinke) smiling at her worke therein, that a scaffold of execution should grow a scaffold of corona-

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, that the King was not dead, but fled to a strong castle of his, neere had, where he was gathering forces in all speed possible to suppress this mutinie. But now they had run themselves too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the same career; and too well they knew the sharpnesse of his memorie to forget such an injury; therefore learning vertue of necessitie, they continued resolute to obey Musidorus. Who seeing what forces were in the citie, with them issued against the Tyrant, while they were in this heat, before practises might be vised to disfluer them: & with them met the King, who likewise hoping little to preuaile by time, (knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where himselfe was slaine by Musidorus, after he had seene his onely sonne (a Prince of great courage
The Comtesse of Pembrokes
courage & beautie, but restored in blood by his naughty Father) slaine by the hand of Pyrocles. This victory obtained, with great, and truly not undeserved honour to the two Princes, the whole estates of the country with one consent, gave the crown and all other marks of sovereignty to Musidorus, desiring nothing more, then to live under such a government, as they promised the felues of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatness to give a kingdom, then get a kingdom; understanding that there was left of the blood Royall, & next to the successor, an aged Gentleman of approved goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his cousins power, but danger from him, and odioufnes for him) having past his time in modest secrecy, & as much from entremedling in matters of governement, as the greatness of his blood would suffer him, did (after having receiued the full power to his owne hands) resigne all to the noble-men: but with such conditions, & cautions of the conditions, as might assure the people (with as much assurance as worldly matters beare) that not onely that governour, of whom indeed they looked for al good, but the nature of the governement, should be no way apt to decline to Tyrany.

CHAP. 9.

1. The two brothers escape to the shore of Pontus. 2. Incostancy, and ensie portrayed in the King & his Counseller. 3. The advancement & overthrow by them of those two brothers. 4. The revenge thereof by the two Princes. 5. The cruelties of two revengefull Gyants, and their death by the Princes. 6. Their honours, and their honourable mindes.

This
His dooing set forth no lesse his magnificence, then the other act did his magnanimitie: so that greatly prayed of all, and justly beloved of the newe King, who in all both wordes and behauiour protested him selfe their Tenaunt, or Liegeman, they were drawne thence to revenge those two seruants of theirs, of whose memorabe faith, I told you (most excellët Princeſſe) in willingly giuing themselves to be drowned for their sakes: but drowned indeed they were not, but got with paineful swimming vpon a rocke: fro whence (after being come as neere famishing, as before drowning) the weather breaking vp, they were brought to the maine lande of Pontus; the same country vpon which Musidorus also was fallen, but not in so luckie a place.

For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant also, not thorow suspition, greedines, or vnreugefulnes, as he of Phrygia, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconstant of his choife of friends, or rather never having a friend, but a playfellow; of whom when he was weary, he could not otherwise rid himselfe, the by killing the: giuing somtimes prodigally, not because he loued them to whom he gaue, but because he lusted to giue: punishing, not so much for hate or anger, as because he felt not the smart of punishment: delighted to be flattered, at firit for those vertues which were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like judgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed some notable mischiefe.
He chaunced at that time (for indeed long time none lasted with him) to have next in vfe about him, a mä of the most envious disposition, that (I think) ever infected the aire with his breath: whose eies could not looke right vpon any happie mä, nor cares beare the burthen of any bodies praise: contrary to the natures of all other plagues, plagued with others well being; making happines the ground of his unhappinesse, & good newes the argument of his sorrow: in sum, a man whose fauour no man could winne, but by being miserable.

And so, because these two faithfull servants of theirs came in miserable sorte to that Courte, he was apt enoue at first to fauour them; and the King understaund of their aduenture, (wherein they had shewed so constant a faith vnto their Lordes) suddenly falles to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayses, and praying him self in his harte, in that he prayed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of minions, when aduauencement (the most mortall offence to envy) stirred vp their former friend, to ouerthrow his owne worke in them; taking occasion vpon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late King of Phrygia deftroyed by their two Lordes, who having bene a neere kinmfman to this Prince of Pontus, by this envious Coucellour, partly with suspition of pratyfe, partly with glory of in-part reuëging his cousins death, the King was suddenly turned, (and euery turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them vp in prison, as servants to his enemies, whom before he had never knowne, nor (til that time one of his owne subjectes had entertained and dealt for them) did euuer take heed of. But
But now earnest in every present humour, and making himselfe braue in his liking, he was content to give them just cause of offence, when they had power to make just revenge. Yet did the Princes send vnto him before they enter'd into war, desiring their servants liberty. But he, s'welling in thier hübleness, (like a bubble swollen vp with a small breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or never knowing humanitie, caused their heads to be striken off, by the advice of his envious Councellor (who now hated them so much the more, as he foresaw the happines in having such, and so fortunate masters) and sent them with vntroyall reproches to Musidorus and Pyrocles, as if they had done traiterously, and not Heroically in killing his tyrannicall Cofen.

But that iniurie went beyond all degree of reconcilement; so that they making forces in Phrygia (a kingdom, wholly at their commandment, by the loue of the people, and gratefulnesse of the King) they entered his country; and wholly conquering it (with such deeds as at first Fame said were excellent) tooke the King; and by Musidorus commandement (Pyrocles hart more inclined to pitie) he was flaine upon the tombe of their two true Servants, which they caused to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanship, to preferue their deade lies. For his wicked Servant he should haue felt the like, or worse, but that his harte brake euon to death with the beholding the honour done to the deade carcasses? There might Pyrocles quietly haue enjoyed that crowne, by all the desire of that people, most of whom had resuolted vnto him: but he, finding a sister of the late Kings (a faire and well esteemed Lade) looking for no-
thing more, then to be opprest with her brothers ruines, gave her in marriage to the noble man his fathers old friend, and endowed them with the crowne of that kingdome. And not content with those publike actions, of princely, and (as it were) gauing vertue, they did (in that kingdome and some other neere about) diuers acts of particular trials, more famous, because more perilous. For in that time those regions were full both of cruell monsters, & monstrous men: all which in short time by private combats they delivered the countries of.

Among the rest, two brothers of huge both greatness & force, therefore commonly called giants, who kept these elues in a castle seate upon the top of a rock, impregnable, because there was no comming vnto it, but by one narrow path, where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. These brothers had a while serued the King of Pontus, and in all his affaires (especially of war, whereunto they were onely apt) they had shewed, as unconquer'd courage, so a rude faithfulness: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceit; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and vprightly dealt with; rather impatient of injury, then delighted with more then ordinary curteisies: and in injuries more sensible of smart or losse, then of reproch or disgrace. These men being of this nature (and certainly Jewels to a wise man, considering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were discarded by that vnworthy prince after many notable deserts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more evident to them, because it sodayly fell from an excesse of favor, which (many examples hauing taught them)
them) neuer stoopt his rasse till it came to an headlong overthrow: they full of rage, retyr'd themselves vnto this castle. Where thinking nothing iust the revenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) ful of inward brauery and fiercenes, scarcely in the glasse of Reason, thinking it self faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gaue themselves to make all the countrie about them (subject to that King) to smart for their Lords folly: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it testified their spite, which they desired to manifest. And with vs of euill, growing more and more euill, they tooke delight in slaughter, and pleasing themselves in making others wracke the effect of their power: so that where in the time that they obeyed a master, their anger was a servicable power of the minde to doo publike good; so now vnbridled, and blinde judge of it selfe, it made wickednesse violent, and praised it selfe in excellencie of mischiefe, almost to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly regarded by their carelesse and louelesse king. Till now these Princes finding them so fleshed in cruellie, as not to be reclaimed, secretly undertooke the matter alone: for accompanied they would not haue suffered them to haue mounted; and so those great fellows scornfully receiving them, as foolish birds falne into their net, it pleased the eternall justice to make the suffer death by their hands: So as they were manifoldly acknowledged the savers of that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to set forth the numbers of wel-deuised honors done vnto them: But as high honor is not onely gotten and borne by paine,
The Countesse of Pembroke

and danger, but must be nurt by the like, or else vanishes as soone as it appeares to the world: so the natural hunger thereof (which was in Pyrocles) suffered him not to account a resting seate of that, which euer either riseth, or falleth, but still to make one action beget another: whereby his doings might send his praise to others mouthes to rebound againe true contentment to his spirite. And therefore having well established those kingdoms, under good governours, and rid them by their value of such giants and monsters, as before time armies were not able to subdue, they determined in unknowne order to see more of the world, & to employ those gifts esteemed rare in them, to the good of mankinde; and therefore would themselves (understanding that the King Euarhus was passed all the cumber of his warres) goe privately to seake exercises of their vertue; thinking it not so worthy, to be brought to heroycall effects by fortune, or necessitie (like Venus and Aeneas) as by ones owne choice, and working. And so went they away from very vnwillinge people to leaue them, making time haste it selfe to be a circumstance of their honour, and one place witnesse to another of the truth of their doings. For scarcely were they out of the cosines of Pontus, but that as they ridde alone armed, (for alone they went, one serving the other) they mette an aduenture; which though not so notable for any great effect they perfourmed, yet worthy to be remembred for the vn-vfied examples therein, as well of true natural goodnes, as of wretched vngratefulnesse.

CHAP.
T was in the kingdom of Galacie, the season being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then sodainely growne to so extreame and foule a storme, that never any winter (I thinke) brought forth a fowler child: so that the Princes were euene compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to seake some throwding place within a certayne hollow rocke offering it vnto them, they made it their shield against the tempests furie. And so staying there, till the violence thereof was passed, they heard the speach of a couple, who not perceiuing them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a straunge and pitifull disputation which made them steppe out; yet in such sort, as they might see vnseene. There they perceaued an aged man, and a young, scarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arrayed, extreameley weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all those miseries, in both thefe seemed
The Countess of Pembroke's letter seemed to appear a kind of noblenesse, not mutable to that affliction. But the first words they heard were these of the old man. Well, Leonatus (said he) since I cannot persuade thee to lead me to that which should end my grief, & thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leave me: fear not, my miserie cannot be greater then it is, & nothing doth become me but miserie; fear not the danger of my blind steps, I cannot fall worse then I am. And do not I pray thee, do not obstinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But fly, fly from this region, one of worthy of me. Deare father (answered he) do not take away from me the onely remnant of my happinesse: while I haue power to doo you service, I am not wholly miserable. Ah my sonne (said he), and with that he groned, as if sorrow straue to breake his harte,) how euill fits it me to haue such a sonne, and how much doth thy kindnesse vpbraide my wickednesse? These dolefull speeches, and some others to like purpose (well shewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moued the Princes to goe out vnto them, and ask the younger what they were? Sirs (answered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreeable by a certaine noble kinde of pitiousnes) I see well you are strangers, that know not our miserie so well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we must be miserable. In deed our state is such, as though nothing is so needfull vnto vs as pittie, yet nothing is more daungerous vnto vs, then to make our selves so knowne as may stirre pittie. But your presence promiseth, that cruelty shall not ouer-runc hate. And if it did, in truth our state is soncke below the degree of feare.

This
This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull Prince of this crounie of Paphlagonia, by the hard-harted vngratefulnes of a sonne of his, deprieued, not onely of his kingdome (whereof no forraime forces were euer able to spoyle him) but of his sight, the riches which Nature graunts to the poorest creatures. Whereby, & by other his vnnatural dealings, he hath bin driuen to such griefe, as euen now he would haue had me to haue led him to the toppe of this rocke, thece to cast himselfe headlong to death:and so would haue made me (who receuied my life of him) to be the worker of his destruction. But noble Gentlemen (said he) if either of you haue a father, and feele what duetifull affecction is engraffed in a sonnes hart, let me intreate you to conuey this afflicted Prince to some place of rest & securitie. Amongst your worthie actes it shall be none of the leaft, that a King, of such might and fame, and so vniustly oppresst, is in any sort by you relieued.

But before they could make him answere, his father began to speake, Ah my sonne (said he) how euill an Historian are you, that leaue out the chiefe knotte of all the discourse: my wickednes, my wickednes. And if thou doest it to spare my eares, (the onely sense nowe left me proper for knowledge) assure thy selfe thou doft mislike me. And I take witnesses of that Sunne which you see (with that he cauf vp his blinde eyes, as if he would hunt for light) and with my selfe in worse case then I do with my selfe, which is as euill as may be, if I speake vtruely; that nothing is so welcome to my thoughts, as the publishing of my shame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whom from my harte I wish that it may not proue ominous foretoked of misfortune to
to have mete with such a miser as I am ) that whatsoever my sonne ( & God, that truth binds me to reproach him with the name of my sonne ) hath said, is true. But besides those truthes, this also is true, that having had in lawful mariage, of a mother fitte to beare roayall children, this sonne ( such one as partly you see, and better shall knowe by my shorte declaration ) and so enjoyed the expectations in the world of him, till he was growe to justifie their expectations. ( so as I needed enim no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie, to leaue an other ones-felte after me ) I was caried by a bafarde sonne of mine ( if at least I be bounde to beleue the words of that base woman my concubine, his mother ) first to mislike, then to hate, lastly to destroy; to doo my best to destroy, this sonne ( I thinke you thinke ) vnder serving destruction. What waies he vied to bringe me to it, if I should tell you, I should tediously trouble you with as much poysonous hypocrisie, desperate fraudue, smothe malice, hidden ambition, & smiling enuie, as in any liuing person could be harbored. But I lift it not, no remembrance, ( no, of naughtines ) delights me, but mine own, & me thinks, the accusing his traines might in some manner excuse my fault, which certainly I loth to doo. But the conclusion is, that I gave order to some servants of mine, whom I thought as apte for such charities as my selues, to leade him out into a forrest; & there to kill him.

But those theues ( better natured to my sonne then my selfe ) spared his life, letting him goe, to learne to liue poorly: which he did, giving himselfe to be a privateouldier, in a countrie here by. But as he was redy to be greatly aduanced for some noble peces
ces of service which he did, he hearde newes of me: who (dronke in my affection to that vnlawfull and unnaturall sonne of mine) suffered my self so to be governed by him, that all favours and punishments past by him, all offices, and places of importance distributed to his favourites: so that ere I was aware, I had left my self nothing but the name of a King: which he shortly weari of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignity, which was laid upon me) threw me out of my fear, and put out my eies: and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me goe, neither imprisoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me feel my miserie: miserie indeed, if ever there were any, tull of wretchednes, fuller of disgrace, and fullest of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by so vniust meanes, as vniustlie he kept it, by force of stranger soldiers in Cittadel, the nestes of tyranny, & murderers of libertie; disarming all his own countreymen, that no man durst shew himself a wel-willer of mine: to say the truth (I think) few of the being so (considering my cruell follie to my good sonne, and foolish kindnes to my vnkinde bastard;) but if there were any who fell to pitie of so great a fall, and had yet any sparkes of vnstained duety lefte in them towards me, yet durst they not shewe it, scarcely with giving me almes at their doores; which yet was the onelie sustenaunce of my distressed life, no bodie daring to shewe so much charitie, as to lende me a hande to guide my darke steppes: Till this sonne of mine (God knowes, woorthie of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father,) forgetting my abominable wrongs, not recking danger, & neglecting the present good way he was in doing himselfe good, came
The Countesse of Pembroke's

came hether to doo this kind office you see him per-
forme towards me, to my unspeakable griefe; not one-
ly because his kindnes is a glasse euè to my blind eyes,
of my naughtines, but that aboue all griefes, it greeues me he should desperately aduenture the losse of his soul-
deferring life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune
for my deserts,as if he would cary mudde in a chest of
christall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, how
much foeuer(and with good reason) he despiseth me,
of all men despised, yet he will not let slippe any advan-
tage to make away him, whose iust title (ennobled by
courage and goodnes) may one day shake the seate of a
neuer secure tyrannie. And for this cause I craved of
him to leade me to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I
must confesse, with meaning to free him from so Ser-
pentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I
purposed, onely therein since he was borne, shewed
himselfe disobedient vnto me. And now Gentlemen,
you hauethe true storie, which I pray you publish to
the world, that my mischieuous proceedings may be
the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left
for so great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine
that of you, which my sonne denies me: for neuer was
there more pity in taming any, then in ending me; both
because therein my agonies shall ende, and so shall you
preferue this excellent young man, who els wilfullly fo-
lowes his owne ruine.

The matter in it self lamentable, lamentably expres-
sed by the old Prince (which needed not take to him-
selfe the gessures of pitie, since his face could not put of
the markes thereof) greatly moued the two Princes to
compassion, which could not stay in such harts as theirs
with-
without seeking remedie. But by and by the occasion was presented: for *Plexirtus* (so was the bastard called) came the other with forty horse, only of purpose to murder this brother; of whose coming he had soone advertisement, and thought no eyes of sufficient credit in such a matter, but his owne; and therefore came him selfe to be actor, and spectator. And as soone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) garde of but two men, commanded some of his followers to set their handes to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwise armed but with a sword) how falsely fcorer he was dealt with by others, would not betray him selfe: but bravely drawing it out, made the death of the first that assaulted him, warn his fellowes to come more warrantly after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Musidorme* were quickly become parties (so just a defence deserving as much as old friendship) and so did behave them among that company (more injurious, then valiant) that many of them lost their lives for their wicked master.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at last prevailed, if the King of *Pontus* (lately by them made so) had not come vnlooked for to their succour. Who (having had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently upon some great danger, presently to follow those two Princes whom he most dearly loued) was come in all haste, following as well as he could their track with a hundred hores in that country, which he thought (considering who then raigned) a fit place enough to make the stage of any Tragedie.

But then the match had been so ill made for *Plexirtus*, that his ill-led life, & worsel gotten honour should have tumbled
tumbled together to destruction; had there not come in Tydeus & Telenor, with forty or fiftie in their suit, to the defence of Plexirus. These two were brothers, of the noblest house of that country, brought up their infancy with Plexirus: men of such prowele, as not to know fear in themselves, and yet to teach it others that should deal with them: for they had often made their lives triumph over most terrible dangers; never dismayed, and ever fortunate; and truly no more seared in their valure, then disposed to goodness and justice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could have learned to make friendship a child, and not the father of Vertue. But bringing vp (rather than choice) having first knit their minds vnto him, (indeed craftie enougb, eyther to hide his faultes, or neuer to shew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly held out the course, rather to satisfie him, then al the world; and rather to be good friends, then good men: so as though they did not like the euill he did, yet they liked him that did the euill; and though not counsellors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they having heard of this sodamne going out, with so small a company, in a country full of euill-wishing minds toward him (though they knew not the cause) followed him, till they found him in such case as they were to venture their lives, or else he to loose his: which they did with such force of minde and bodie, that truly I may iustly say, Pyrocles & Musidorus had neuer till then found any, that could make them so well repeate their hardest lesson in the seates of armes. And briefly so they did, that if they ouercame not, yet were they not ouercome, but caried away that vngratefull maister
maister of theirs to a place of securitie; howsoever the
Princes laboured to the contrary. But this matter being
thus far begun, it became not the constâcie of the Prin-
ces so to leave it; but in all haste making forces both in
Pontus and Phrygia, they had in fewe dayes, lefte him
but only that one strong place where he was. For seare
hauing bene the onely knot that had fastned his peo-
ple vnto him, that once vntied by a greater force, they
all scattered from him, like so many birdes, whose cage
had bene broken.

In which season the blind King (hauing in the chief
cittie of his Realme, set the crowne vpó his sone Leo-
natus head) with many teares (both of ioy and sorrow)
setting forth to the whole people, his owne fault & his
sonnes vertue, after he had kist him, and forst his sone
to accept honour of him (as of his newe-become sub-
ject) euë in a moment died; as it should seeme:his hart
broken with vnkindnes & affliction; stretched so farre
beyond his limits with this excesse of çôfort, as it was
able no longer to keep safe his roial spirits. But the new
King (hauing no lesse louingly performed all duties to
him dead, then alieue) pursued on the siege of his unnatu-
ral brother, as much for the revenge of his father, as
for the establishing of his owne quiet. In which siege
truly I cannot but acknowledge the prowesse of those
two brothers, then whom the Princes never found in
all their trauell two men of greater habilitie to per-
forme, nor of habler skill for conducvt.

But Plexvirtus finding, that if nothing els,famintwould
at last bring him to destruccion; thought better by hûble-
nes to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For
certainely so had nature formed him, & the exercife of

V2

Craft
craft conformed him to all turnings of sleights, that though no man had lesfe goodnes in his soule then he, no man could better find the places whence argument might grow of goodnesse to another: though no man felt lesfe pitie, no man could tel better how to stir pitie: no man more impudet to deny, where proofs were not manifest, no man more ready to confesse with a repenting maner of aggrauating his owne euil, where denial would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way, that hauing gotten a passport for one (that pretended he would put Plexirtus aluie into his hads) to speak with the King his brother, he him selfe (though much against the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wished to die in braue defence) with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himselfe to the discretion of Leonatus. Where what submission he vsed, how cunningly in making greater the faulte he made the faultines the lesfe, how artificially he could set out the torments of his owne conscience, with the burdensome comber he had found of his ambitious desires, how finely seeming to desrire nothing but death, as ashamed to liue, he begd life, in the refusing it, I am not cunning enough to be able to expresse: but so fell out of it, that though at first fight Leonatus saw him with no other cie, then as the murderer of his father; & anger already began to paint reuenge in many colours, ere long he had not only gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuse of the fault past, yet an opinion of a future amédment: while the poore villaines (chiefe ministers of his wickednes, now betrayed by the author thereof,) were deliuered to many cruell sorts of death; he so handling it, that it rather seemed, he had rather come into the defence
fence of an unremediable mischief already committed, then that they had done it at first by his consent.

In such sort the Princes left these reconciled brothers (*Plexirtus* in all his behaviour carrying him in far lower degree of service, then the ever-noble nature of *Leonatus* would suffer him) & taking likewize their leaves of their good friend the King of *Pontus* (who returned to enjoy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdom) they privately went thence, having onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accompany them, through divers places; they foure doing actes more dangerous, though lesse famous, because they were but priuat chivalries: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Queene *Erona* of *Lycia*, besieged by the puissant King of *Armenia*, they bent themselves to her succour, both because the weaker (& weaker as being a Lady,) & partly because they heard the King of *Armenia* had in his company three of the most famous men living, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince *Plangus*, (whose name was sweetened by your breath, peerlesse Ladie, when the last daie it pleased you to mention him vnto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) *Barzanes* and *Euardes*, men of Giant-like both hugenes and force: in which two especially, the trust the King had of victorie, was repos'd. And of them, those two brothers *Tydeus* and *Telenor* (sufficient judges in warlike matters) spake so high commendations, that the two yong Princes had eu'n a youthfull longing to haue some triall of their vertue. And therefore as soone as they were entred into *Lycia* they ioyned theselves with them that faithfully serued the
The Countesse of Pembroke

the poore Queene, at that time besieged: and cre long animated in such sort; their almost overthroune harts, that they went by force to releue the towne, though they were depruied of a great part of their strengthe by the parting of the two brothers, who were sent for in all hast to returne to their old friend and maister, Plexurus: who (willingly hood-winking themselues from seeing his faulites, and binding themselues to beleue what he said) often abused the vertue of courage to defend his owne vice of injustice. But now they were sent for to aduance a conquest he was about; while Pyrocles and Musidorus pursuèd the deliuerie of the Queene Erona.

CHAP. 11.

1 Dorus his suite to Pamela interrupted by Mopsas making.
2 The sistors going with Zelmane to wash themselves.
3 The pleasantnes of the riner. 4 The pleasure Zelmane had in seeing them, uttered; in speech, and song: She led by a spaniel, to know, and hurt her noble rival. The parting of that fray.

I Have heard (said Pamela) that parte of the story of Plangus, whè he passe through this country: therefo you may (if you lift) passe ouer that warre of Eronas quarrel, left if you speake too much of warre matters, you should wake Mopsa, which might happily breed a great broile.

1 He looked, and saw that Mopsa indeede fat swallowing of
of sleepe with open mouth, making such a noise withal, as no bodie could lay the stealing of a nappe to her charge. Whereupon, willing to see that occasion, he kneeled downe, and with humble-hartednesse, & harty earnestnes printed in his graces, Alas (said he) divine Lady, who haue wrought such miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the basest) to think all principalities base, in respect of the sheepwoke, which may hold him vp in your sight; vouchsafe now at last to heare in direct words my humble suit, while this dragon sleepe, that keepes the golden fruit. If in my desire I wish, or in my hopes aspire, or in my imagination faine to my selfe any thing which may be the left spot to that heavenly vertue, which shines in all your doings. I pray the eternal powers, that the words I speak may be deadly poissons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my desires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne confusion. But if loue, loue of you, loue of your vertues, seeke onely that favour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which cannot mis-become your excellencie, O doo not: He would haue said further, but Pamela calling aloud Mopsa, she sodainly start vp, staggering, and rubbing her eyes, ran first out of the doore, and then backe to them, before she knew how she went out, or why she came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little selfe, she asked Pamela, why she had called her. For nothing (said Pamela) but that you might heare some tales of your servants telling: and therefore now (said she) Doris go on.

But as he (who found no so good sacrifice, as obedience) was returning to the story of himselfe, Philocles came in, & by and by after her, Misoe, so as for that time
The Countesse of Pembroke's

...they were faine to let Dorus depart. But Pamela delight-ed eué to preserve in her memory, the words of so wel a beloved (speaker) repeated the whole substance to her sister, till their sober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themselves something, (even tyred with the noysomnes of Mifsas conversation) they determyned to goe (while the heate of the day lasted) to bath themselves (such being the maner of the Arcadian nymphes often to doo) in the river of Ladon, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight them vnder some shadow. But they could not stir, but that Mifs with her daughter Mopsa was after them: and as it lay in their way to passe by the other lodge, Zelmae out of her window espied them, and so stole downe after them: which she might the better doo because that Gyneeia was sicke, and Bas-lius (that day being his birth-day) according to his ma-ner, was busie about his devotions; and therefore she went after, hoping to finde some time to speake with Philoctea: but not a word could she beginne, but that Mifs would be one of the audience, so that she was driven to recommend thinking, speaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her trust, till they came to the river's side; which of all the rivers of Greece had the price for excellent purenesse and sweetenesse, in so much as the verie bathing in it, was accouhted exceeding healthfull. It ranne vpon so fine and delicate a ground, as one could not easely judge, whether the Riuere did more wash the grauel, or the grauel did pu-rifie the Riuere; the Riuere not running forth right, but almost continually winding, as if the lower streams would returne to their spring; or that the Riuere had a delight to play with it selfe. The banckes of either side seeming...
feeming armes of the louing earth, that saine would embrace it; and the Riuer a wanton nympf which still would flitre from it: either side of the bancke being fringed with most beautifull trees, which refisted the sumes dartes from ouer-much pearcing the naturall coldnes of the Riuer. There was the

But among the rest a goodly Cypres, who bowing her faire head ouer the water, it seemed she looked into it, and dressed her greene lockes, by that running Riuer. There the Princesse determining to bath themselves, though it was so pruyledged a place, vpon paine of death, as no bodie durft presume to come thither, yet for the more surety, they looked round about, and could see nothing but a water spaniell, who came downe the riuer, shewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a snuffling grace, disdaining that his smelling force coulde not as well preuaile thorow the water, as thorow the aire; & therefore wayting with his eye, to see whether he could espie the ducks getting vp againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpose, he got out of the riuer, & shaking off the water (as great men do their friends, now he had no further cause to see it) in-weeded himself, as the Ladies lost the further marking his sportfulnesse: and inuiting Zelmame also to wash her selfe with them, and she excusing her selfe with having taken a late cold, they began by peace-meale to take away the eclipsing of their apparell.

Zelmame would haue put to her helping hand, but she was taken with such a quiuering, that she thought it more wisedome to leane her selfe to a tree and looke on, while Misio and Mopsa (like a couple of forsewat melters)
The Countesse of Pembroke

meters) were getting the pure siluer of their bodies out of the vre of their garments. But as the rayments went of to receaue kisles of the ground, Zelmane enuied the happinesse of all, but of the smocke was even jealous, and when that was taken away too, and that Philoclea remained (for her Zelmane onely marked) like a Diamond taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from vnder a cloud, and shewing his naked beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much for a patient sight, the delight too strong for a stayed concept: so that Zelmane could not choose but runne, to touch, embrace, and kisle her; But conscience made her come to her selfe, & leave Philoclea, who blushing, and withall smilling, making shamefaste the pleasanter, and pleasure shamefast, tenderly moued her feete, un-wonted to seele the naked ground, till the touch of the cold water made a prettie kinde of shrugging come ouer her bodie, like the twinkling of the fairest among the fixed stars. But the River it selfe gaue way vnto her, so that she was streight brest high; which was the deepeft that there-about she could be: and when cold Lodon had once fully imbraced them, himselfe was no more so cold to those Ladies, but as if his cold complextion had bene heated with loue, so seemed he to play about euery part he could touch.

Ah sweete, now sweetest Lodon (saiid Zelmane) why dost thou not stay thy course to haue more full taft of thy happines? But the reason is manifest, the upper streams make such haste to haue their part of embracing, that the nether (though lothly) must needs giue place vnto them. O happie Lodon, within whom she is, vpon whom her beautie falls, thorow whom her eye perceieth.
perceth. O happie Ladon, which art now an unperfect mirror of all perfection, canst thou euer forget the blestnes of this impression? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine gravel, to weeds & mudde; if thou doo, let some vniust niggards make were to spoile thy beauty; if thou do, let some greater river fall into thee, to take away the name of Ladon. Oh Ladon, happie Ladon, rather slide then run by her, left thou shou'dst make her legs slippe from her; and then, O happy Ladon, who would then call thee, but the most cursed Ladon? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, somtimes striking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) seemed to smile at such beating, and with twentie bubbles, not to be content to have the picture of their face in large vpon him, but he would in ech of those bubbles set forth the miniature of them.

But Zelmane, whose sight was gaine-said by nothing but the transparent valle of Ladon, (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one stay, yet with the continuance continually hath his heate encreased) had the coales of her affection so kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that nowe all her parts grudged, that her eyes shou'd doo more homage, then they, to the Princeffe of them. In somuch that taking vp the Lute, her wit began to be with a divine furie inspired; her voice would in so beloued an occasion second her wit, her hands accorded the Lutes musick to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the musick; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it should be celebrated; her soule the Queene which shou'd be delighted. And so togethier went the utterance and the


The Countesse of Pembroke's

the invention, that one might judge, it was Philocles
beautie which did speedily write it in her eyes; or the
sense thereof, which did word by word endite it in her
minde, whereto she (but as an organ) did onely lend
vterance. The song was to this purpose.

What tongue can her perfections tell
In whose each part all pens may dwell?
Her haire fine threads of finest gould
In curled knots mans thought to hold:
But that her fore-head says in me
A whiter beautie you may see.
Whiter indeed; more white than snow,
Which on cold winters face doth grow.
That doth present those euene browes,
Whose euall line their angles bowes,
Like to the Moon when after change
Her horned head abroad doth range:
And arches be to heavenly lids,
Whose winke each bold attempt forbids.
For the blacke starrs those Spiheares containe
The matchlesse paire, euene praisde staine.
No lampe, whose light by Art is got,
No Sunne, which shines, and seeth not,
Can liken them without all peere,
Saue one as much as other cleere:
Which onely thus unhappie be,
Because themselves they cannot see.
Her cheekes with kindly claret spread.
Aurora like new out of bed,
Or like the fresh Queene-apples side,
Blushing at sight of Phoebus pride.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Her nose, her chinne pure inorie weares:
No purer then the pretie eares,
So that therein appeares some blood,
Like wine and milke that mingled stood
In whose Incirclets if ye gaze,
Your eyes may tread a Lovers maze.
But with such turnses the voice to stray,
No talke untaught can finde the way.
The tippe no iewell needes to weare:
The tippe is iewell of the eare.

But who those ruddy lippes can misse?
Which blessed still themselves doo kisse.
Rubies, Cherries, and Roses new,
In worth, in taste, in perfitt heve:
Which neuer part but that they shrowe
Of pretious pearle the double rove,
The second sweetly-fenced warde,
Her heaunly-dewed tongue to garde.
Whence neuer word in vaine did flowe.
Faire under these doth slately growe,
The handle of this pretious worke,
The neck, in which strange graces lurke.
Such be I thinke the sumptuous towers
Which skill dooth make in Princes bower.
So good a say inioutes the eye,
A little downward to espie,
The liuelie clusters of her brests,
Of Venus babe the wanton nests:
Like pomels round of Marble cleere:
Where azurde veinues well mixt appeere.
With dearest tops of porphyrie.
Betwixt these two a way doth lie,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Away more worthie beauties fame,
Then that which beares the Milkie name.
This leads into the joyous field,
Which onely still doth Lillies yeeld:
But Lillies such whose native smell
The Indian odours doth excelle.
Waste it is calde, for it doth waste
Mens lives, untill it be imbraste.

There may one see, and yet not see
Her ribbes in white all armed be.
More white then Neptunes somie face,
When strugling rocks he would imbrace.

In those delights the wandering thought
Might of each side onstray be brought,
But that her navel doth unite,
In curious circle, busie sight:
A daintie seale of virgin-waxe,
Where nothing but impression lackes.

Her bellie then gladde sight doth fill,
Lustly entitle Cupids hill.
A hill most fitte for such a master,
A spotlese mine of Alabaster.
Like Alabaster faire and steake,
But soft and supple fatten like.
In that sweete seate the Boy doth sitt:
Loath, I must leave his chiefe refort.

Yet never shall my song omitte
Thyes for Ouids song more fitte;
Which flanked with two sugred flankes,
Lift up their stately swelling bankes;
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

That Albion clines in whiteness passe:
With hanches smooth as looking glass.
But bow all knees, now of her knees
My tongue doth tell what fancy sees.
The knottes of joy, the gemmes of love,
Whose motion makes all graces move.
Whose bought incas'd doth yeeld such sight,
Like cunning Painter shadowing white.
The garnring place with child-like signe,
Sheaves easie print in mettall fine.
But then againe the flesh doth rise
In her braue caules, like chriftall skyes.
Whose Atlas is a smallest small,
More white then whitest bone of all.
Shall thereout steales out that round cleane foote
This noble Cedars pretious roote:
In sheve and sent pale violets,
Whose steppe on earth all beautie sets.
But back unto her back, my Muse,
Where Ledas swanne his feathers meues,
Along whose ridge such bones are met,
Like comfits round in marcbpane set.
Her shoulders be like two white Doves,
Pearching within square royall rooves,
Which leaded are with siluer skinne,
Passing the hate-sport Ermelin.
And thence those armes derived are;
The Phoenix wings are not so rare
For faultlesse length, and stainlesse beme.
Ah woe is me, my woes renewe;
Now course doth leade me to her hand,
Of my first love the fatall band.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

Where whitenes dooth for ever sitte:
Nature her selfe enameld it.
For there with strange compact dooth lie
Warne snow, most pearle, softe iuorie.
There fall those Saphir-coloured brookes,
Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
Sweete Islands make in that sweete land.
As for the fingers of the hand,
The bloody shaftes of Cupids warre,
With amatifs they headed are.

Thus hath each part his beauties part,
But how the Graces doo impart
To all her limmes a spatiaall grace,
Becoming every time and place.
Which doth even beautie beautifie,
And most bewitch the wretched eye.

How all this is but a faire Inne
Of fairer guestes, which dwell within.
Of whose high praise, and praisefull blisse,
Goodnes the penne, heaven paper is.
The inke immortal fame dooth lende:
As I began, so must I ende.

No tongue can her perfections tell,
In whose each part all tongues may dwel.

But as Zelmane was coming to the latter end of her song she might see the same water-spaniell which before had huted, come and fetch away one of Philocleas gloues; whose fine proportion, shewed well what a daintie guest was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to Zelmane, to see that the dogge was therewith delighted, and so let him goe a little way withall, who quickly
quickly carried it out of sight among certaine trees and bushes, which were very close together. But by & by he came againe, & amongst the raiments (Mifo and Mopsa being preparing sheats against their comming out) the dog lighted upon a little booke of foure or fiue leaves of paper, & was bearing that away to. But then Zelmane (not knowing what importaunce it might be of) ran after the dog, who going streight to those bushes, she might see the dog deliver it to a Gentleman who secretly lay there. But she hastily comine in, the Gentleman rose vp, & with a courteous (though sad) countenance presented himself vnto her. Zelmanes eies streight willed her mind to marke him: for she thought, in her life she had neuer seene a ma of a more goodly presence, in whom stong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie fiercenesse: being indeed such a right manlike man, as Nature often erring, yet shewes she would faine make. But when she had a while (not without admiration) vewed him, she desired him to deliver backe the glowe & paper, because they were the Ladie Philoceleas; telling him withall, that she would not willingly let the know of his close lying in that prohibited place, while they were bathing the slices, because she knew they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (answered he) the worst of the complaint is already passed, since I feele of my fault in my self the punishmeet. But for these things I assure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnesse, not my presumption. With that he gaue her backe the paper: But for the glowe (said he) since it is my Ladie Philoceleas, giue me leave to keepe it, since my hart canot persuade it selfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (lady indeed of all my desires) that owes it, that
The Countesse of Pembroke

I will direct my life to honour this gloue with serving her. O villain (cried out Zelman, madded with finding an unlooked-for Ruall, and that he would make her a messenger) dispatch (saide she) and deliver it, or by the life of her that owes it, I will make thy soul (though too base a price) pay for it. And with that drewe out her sworde, which (Amazon-like) she ever ware about her. The Gentleman retired himself into an open place amongst the bushes; & the drawing out his toorie, he offered to deliver it unto her, saying withall, God forbid I should vse my sworde against you, since (if I be not deceived) you are the same famous Amazon, that both defended my Ladies just title of beautie against the valiant Phalanus, & saved her life in killing the Lion: therefore I am rather to kiss your hands, with acknowledging my selfe bound to obey you. But this courtesie was worse then a bastonado to Zelman: so that againe with ragefull eyes she bad him defend himselfe, for no lesse then his life should answer it. A hard case (said he) to reach my sworde that lesfon, which hath euer vse to turne it selfe to a shield in a Ladies presence. But Zelman harkening to no more wordes, began with such wittie furie to pursue him with blowes & thruts, that Nature & Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his safetie. Yet still courtesie, that seemed incorporate in his hart, would not be perwaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to stand vpon the best defensive gard he could, sometymes going backe, being content in that respect to take on the figure of cowardise; sometyme with strong and well-met wards, sometyme cunning avoidings of his body; and sometymes faining some blowes, which himselfe puld backe before they needed
to be withstood. And so with play did he a good while fight against the fight of Zelmane, who (more spited with that curtesie, that one that did nothing should be able to resist her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne sweet disposition, determining to kill him if he fought no better; so redoubling her blows, drew the stranger to no other shift; then to warde, and go backe; at that time seeming the image of innocencie against violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and priuate respects, who standes onely vpon defence, stands vpon no defence: For Zelmane seeming to strike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall stept backe as he was accustomed, she stoppeth her blow in the aire, and suddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breast; so as he was driuen with the pommell of his sword (having no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thrust was so strong, that he could not so wholly beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But Zelmane retiriing her sworde, and seeing his blood, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie, and hartily forie, and even ashamed with her selfe she was, considering how little he had done, who well she found could have done more. In so much that she said, truly I am forie for your hurt, but your selfe gaue the cause, both in refusing to deliver the gloue, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could have done. But (faide shee) because I perceave you dislayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you shall meete with a neere kinman of mine, Pyrocles Prince of Macedon, and I giue you my worde, he for me shall maintaine this
The Countesse of Pembrookes

this quarrell against you. I would (answered Amphialus) I had many more such hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whose vertue I loue & admire, though my good destiny hath not bene to see his person.

But as they were so speaking, the yong Ladies came, to who Mopsa (curious in any thing, but her own good behauiour) having followed & seene Zelmane fighting, had cried, what she had seene, while they were drying themselues, & the water (with some drops) seemed to wepe, that it should parte from such bodies. But they carefull of Zelmane (assuring themselues that any Arcadian would beare reverence to them) Pamela with a noble mind, and Philoclea with a louing (haftily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was prowde, and they ashamed) they made quicke worke to come to saue Zelmane. But already they found them in talke; & Zelmane carefull of his wound. But whē they saw him they knew it was their cousin germain, the famous Amphialus; whom yet with a sweete-graced bitterness they blamed for breaking their fathers commandement, especially while themselues were in such fort retired. But he craved pardon, protesting vnto them that he had onely bene to seeke solitare places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while possessd him, and guided to that place by his spaniell, where while the dog hunted in the riuere, he had withdrawne himselfe to pacifie with sleepe his ouer-watched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him see that whereof he had dreamed, & withall not obscurely signified that he felt the mart of his owne doings. But Philoclea (that was euen jealous of her self; for Zelmane) would needs have her gloue, and not without so mighty a loure as that
face could yeeld. As for Zelme when she knew, it was Amphialus, Lord Amphialus (said she) I have long desired to know you, heretofore I must confesse with more good will, but still with honoring your vertue, though I love not your person: & at this time I pray you let vs take care of your wound, upon condition you shall hereafter promise, that a more knightly combat shall be performed betwene vs. Amphialus answered, in honorable fort, but with such excusing himselfe, that more and more accused his loue to Philoclea, & prouoked more hate in Zelmane. But Mosfa had already called certaine shepheards not far of (who knew & well obserued their limits) to come and helpe to carrie away Amphialus, whose wound suffered him not without danger to straine it: and so he leaving himselfe with them, departed from them, faster bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound vp by the sheetes, wherwith Philoclea had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound, and bleffe the sword for that fauour.

CHAP. 12.

How Basilius found Plangus: his lamentation. Philoclea entreated by Zelmane to relate the storie of Erona.

E being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked simplicitie their cousin had seene the) returned to the lodge-warde: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake of so pleasing a company, with going to performe a cumber some obedience,
Zelmone invited them to the little arbour, only reserved for her, which they willingly did: and there sitting, Pamela having a while made the lute in his language, shew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, Zelmone delivered up the paper, which Amphialus had at first yielded unto her: and seeing written upon the backside of it, the complaint of Flanges, remembering what Dorus had told her, and desiring to know how much Philocleas knew of her estate, she took occasion in the presenting of it, to ask whether it were any secret, or no. No truely (answered Philocleas) it is but even an exercise of my fathers writing, upon this occasion: He was one day (somewhat before your comming hither) walking abroad, having vs two with him, almost a mile hence; and crossing a hie way, which comes from the citty of Megalopolis, he saw this Gentleman, whose name is there written, one of the propret and best-graced men that ever I sawe, being of middle age, and of a meane stature. He lay as then under a tree, while his servaunts were getting fresh post-horses for him. It might seeme he was tired with the extreme travaile he had taken, and yet not so tyred, that he forced to take any rest; so haftly he was upon his journey: and with-all so sorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, even groanes, teares, and passionate talking to himself, moved my Father to fall in talke with him: who at first not knowing him, answered him in such a desperate phrase of griefe, that my Father afterward took delight to set it downe in such forme as you see: which if you read, what you doubt of, my sister and I are hable to declare vnto you. Zelmone willingly opened the
the leaues, and read it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.

Plangus. Basilius.

Arcadia. Lib. 2.

A Las how long this pilgrimage doth last?
What greater ills have now the heavens in store?
To couple coming harms with sorrows past?
Long since my voice is hoarse, and throte is sore,
With cries to skyes, and curses to the ground,
But more I plaine, I seele my woes the more.
Ah where was first that cruel cunning found,
To frame of Earth a vessell of the minde,
Where it should be to selfe-destruction bound?
What needed so high sprites such mansions blind?
Or wrap in flesh what do they here obtaine,
But glorious name of wretched humaine-kind?
Balles to the starres, and thralles to Fortunes raigne;
Turnd from themselves, infected with their cage,
Where death is feard, and life is held with paine.
Like players plaist to fill a filthy stage,
Where chaunge of thoughts one foole to other sheaves,
And all but ierks, saue onely sorrows rage.
The child feeleth that, the man that feeling knowes,
With cries first borne, the presage of his life,
Where wit but servus, to haue true taste of woes.
A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots bere toise
This bodie is : this boke so composed,
As in it selfe to nourish mortall strife.
So divers be the Elements disposed
In this weake worke, that it can never be
Made unforme to any state reposed.
Griefe onely makes his wretched state to see

(Euen)
The Countesse of Pembroke

(Euen like a toppe which nought but whipping moves)
This man, this talking beaft, ebi: walking tree.
Griefe is the stone which finelj judgement proves:
For who grieues not hath but a blockish braine,
Since cause of griefe no cause from life removes.

Basilius

How long wilt thou with mouesfull musicke staine
The cheerfull notes these pleasant places yeeld,
Where all good haps a perfect grace maintaine?

Plangus

Curl be good haps, and curl be they that build
Their hopes on haps, and do not make despaire
For all these certaine blowes the surest shield.
Shall I that saw Eronaes shinning haire
Torne with her hands, and those same hands of snow
With lose of purest blood themselves to teare?
Shall I that saw those brests, where beauties flow,
Swelling with sighes, made pale with minds disease.
And saw those eyes (those Sonnes) such shoures to shew,
Shall I, whose cares her mournesfull words did seize,
Her words in syrup laid of sweetest breath,
Relent those thoughts, which then did so displease?
No, no: Despaire my dayly leffon faith,
And faith, although I seeke my life to flie,
Plangus muft line to see Eronaes death
Plangus muft line some helpe for her to trie,
Though in despaire, so Love enforceth me,
Plangus doth line, and muft Erona dye?
Erona dye? O heaven (if heaven there be)
Hath all thy whirling course so small effect?
Serve all thy starrie eyes this flame to see?
Let doltes in haste some altars faire erect.

To
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

To those high powers, which idly sit above,
And virtue do in greatest need neglect.

O man, take heed, how about the Gods do move
To irefull wrath, which thou canst not resist.
Blasphemous words the speaker vaunt do prone.
Alas while we are wrapt in foggie mist
Of our selfe-love (so passions do deceive)
We think they hurt, when most they do assist.
To harms us wormes should that high Justice leave
His nature? nay, himselfe? for so it is.
What glorie from our losse can be receive?
But still our daReed eyes their way do misse;
While that we do at his sweete scourge repine,
The kindly way to beate us to our bliss.
If she must dye, then hath she past the line
Of lothsome dayes, whose losse how canst thou mone,
That does so well their miseries define?
But such we are with inward tempest blowne
Of mindes quite contrarie in waues of will:
We mone that lost, which had we did beone.

And shall shee dye? shall cruelle fier still
Those beames that set so many harts on fire?
Hath she not for euen death with lone to kill?
Nay even cold Death enflamde with hot desire
Her to enjoy, where joy it selfe is thrall,
Will spoile the earth of his most rich attire.
Thus Death becomes a rivall to us all,
And hopes with soule embracements her to get,
In whose decay Vertues faire shrine must fall.
O Vertue weake, shall death his triumph set
The Countesse of Pembroke.

Upon thy spoiles, which never should be maste?
Let Death first dye, both his worthy let.
By what eclipse shall that Sonne be defaète?
What myne hath erft throwne downe, to faire a tower?
What sacrifice hath such a saint disgraft?
The world the garden is, she is the flower
That sweetens all the place, she is the guest
Of rarest price, both heav'n and earth her boven.
And shall (ô me) all this in ashes rest?
Alas, if you a Phoenix now will have-
Burnt by the Sunne, she first must build her nest.
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would save
Such beams so like his owne, which might have might.
In him, the thoughts of Phaëton's damme to drawe.
Therefore, alas, you use vile Vulcans spight,
Which nothing spares, to melt that Virgin-waxe
Which while it is, it is, all Asia's light.
O Mars, for what dote sere thy armed axe?
To let that wit-old beast consume in flame
Thy Venus child, whose beautie Venus lackes?
O Venus (if her praise no envy frames),
In thy high minde get her thy husbands grace.
Sweete speaking of a currish hart reclaimes.
O eyes of mine, where once she saw her face,
Her face which was more lively in my hart;
O braine, where thought of her bade onely place;
O hand, which toucht her hand when she did part;
O lippes, that kist her hand, with my teares sprent;
O tongue, then dumbe, not daring tell my smart;
O soule, whose love in her is onely spent,
What ere you see, thinke, touch, kisse, speake, or luse.
Let all for her, and unto her be bent.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Thy wailing words do much my spirits move,
They uttered are in such a feeling fashion,
That sorrowes work against my will I prove.

Me-thinkes I am partaker of thy passion,
And in thy case do gentle mine owne debilitie:
Selfe-guiltie folke most prone to seele compassion.

Yet Reason faith, Reason should have abilitie,
To hold these worldly things in such proportion,
As let them come or go with euene facilitie.

But our Desires tyrannicall extortion
Doth force us there to set our chiefe delightfulnes,
Where but a baiting place is all our portion.

But still, although we faile of perfect rightfullnes,
Seeke we to tame the childish superfluities:
Let us not winke though void of purest rightfullnes.

For what can breed more peevish incongruitie,
Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
Let us some grammar learne of more congruitie.

If through mine eares pearce any consolation
By wise discourse, sweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
If ought I cease these hideous exclamations,
While that my soule, she, she lives in affliction;
Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,
To wretched me, the last worst malediction.

Can I, that know her sacred parts restrained be,
For any joy, know fortunes vile displacing her,
In morall rules let raging woes contained be?

Can I forget, when they in prison placing her,
With swelling hart in spite and due disdainfulnes,
She lay for dead, till I helpe with unasing her?
Can I forget from how much mourning plainfulnes
The Countesse of Pembroke's

With Diamond in window-glasse she graue,
Erona dye, and end thy oungly painefulnes?
Can I forget in how straunge phrase she graued?
That quickly they would her burne, drownne,or smother,
As if by death she oueley might be saued?
Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
Let me forget that Plangus I am called:
Let me forget I am sonne to my mother,
But if my memory must thus be thralled
To that strange stroke which conquer'd all my senses,
Can thoughts still thinking so rest unappalled?

Basilius. Who still doth seke against himselfe offences,
What pardon can auaile? or who employs him.
To hurt himselfe, what shields can be defenses?
Woe to poore man : ech outward thing annoyes him
in divers kinds: yet as he were not filled,
He heapes in inward griefe, which most destroys him.
Thus is our thought with paine for thistles tilled:
Thus be our noblest parts dried up with sorrow:
Thus is our mind with too much minding spilled.
One day layes vp stufte of griefe for the morrow:
And whose good hap do leaue him unprovided,
Condoling cause of friendship he will borrow.
Betwixt the good and shade of good dividied,
We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:
So are we from our high creation slided.
But Plangus left I may your sicknesse misse
Or rubbing hurt the fore, I here doo end.
The asse did hurt when he did thinke to kisse:
When Zelmaane had read it ouer, marueyling verie much of the speeche of Eronas death, and therefore desirous to know further of it, but more desirous to heare Philocelea speake, Most excellent Ladie (said she) one may be little the wiser for reading the Dialogue, since it nether sets foorth what this Plangus is, nor what Erona is, nor what the cause should be which threatens her with death, and him with sorow: therefore I woulde humbly craue to vnderstand the particular discourse thereof: because (I must confesse) some thing in my trauaile I haue heard of this strange matter, which I would be glad to find by so sweet an authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (answered Philocelea) that after he knew my father to be Prince of this countrey, while he hoped to preuaile something with him in a great request he made vnto him, he was content to open fully vnto him the estate both of himselfe, and of that Ladie; which with my sisters help (said she) who remembers it better then I, I will declare vnto you: and first of Erona, (being the chiefe Subiect of this discourse) this storie (with more teares and exclamations then I list to spende about it) he recounted.

CHAP. 13.

Erona saith Love, * must love the base Antiphilus is loved, pursued, and beleaguered by the great Tiritades. * The two Greeke Princes ayde her. * They combatte with two Kings; Antiphilus with Plangus; they conquerors, he prisoner. * Eronas hard-choice to redeeme him. * Tiritades slaine, Antiphilus deliuered, Artaxia chased by the two Princes, * and her hate to them.
Late there reigned a King in Lycia, who had for the blessing of his marriage, this only daughter of his, Erone; a Princess, worthie for her beautie, as much praise, as beautie may be praise-worthy. This Princess Erone, being 19 years of age, seeing the country of Lycia so much devoted to Cupid, as that in every place his naked pictures & images were superstitiously adored (ether moued theruto, by the esteeming that could be no Godhead, which could breed wickednes, or the shamefull consideration of such nakednes) procured so much of her father, as ytterly to pull downe, and deface all those statues and pictures. Which how terribly he punished (for to that the Lycians impute it) quickly after appeared.

For she had not liued a yeare longer, when she was striken with most obstinate Love, to a yong man but of mean parentage, in her fathers court, named Antiphilus, so meaner, as that he was but the sone of her Nurse, & by that meanes (without other desert) became known of her. Now so euill could she conceale her fire, and so wilfully persevered she in it, that her father offering her the marriage of the great Tirdates, king of Armenia (who desired her more then the ioyes of heaven) she for Antiphilus false refus’d it. Many wayes her father sought to withdrawe her from it; sometimes persuasions, sometimes threatnings; once hiding Antiphilus, & giving her to understand that he was fled the countrie: Lastly, making a solemne execution to be done of another, under the name of Antiphilus, whom he kept in prison. But nether she liked persuasions, nor feared threatenings, nor changed for absence: and when she thought him dead,
dead, she fought all means (as well by poysen as by knife) to send her soule, at least, to be married in the eternall church with him. This so brake the tender fathers hart, that (leaving things as he found them) he shortly after died. Then foorthwith Erone (being seazed of the crowne, and arming her will with authoritie) sought to advance her affection to the holy title of matrimony.

But before she could accomplis all the solemnitie, she was ouertake with a war the King Tiridates made upon her, only for her person, towards whom (for her ruine) Loue had kindled his cruel hart; indeed cruel & tyrannous: for (being far too strong in the field) he spared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be found no foile to set foorth the extremity of his loue, but extremity of hatred) wrote (as it were) the sonets of his Loue, in the bloud, & tuned the in the cries of her subiects, although his fair sister Artaxia (who would accompany him in the army) sought all means to appease his fury: till lastly, he besieged Erone in her best citie, vowing to winne her, or lose his life. And now had he brought her to the point either of a wofull consent, or a ruinous denial; wher there came thether (following the course which Vertue & Fortune led the) two excellent youg Princes, Pyrocles and Musidorus, the one Prince of Macedo, the other of Thessalia: two princes, as Plagus said, (and he witnessed his laying with sighes & tears) the most accouchd both in body & mind, that the Sun euery lookt vpon. While Philoclea spake those words, Of sweete wordes (thought Zelmane to herself) which are not onely a praise to me, but a praise to praise it selfe, which out of that mouth iffueh. These 2. princes (said Philoclea) as well to help the weaker
The Countesse of Pembroke

especially being a Ladie) as to save a Greek people from being ruined by such, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering together such of the honestest Lycians, as woulde venture their liues to succour their Princesse: giving order by a secret message they sent into the Citie, that they should issue with all force at an appointed time; they set upon Tiridates campe, with so well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both sides assaulted, he was like to be overthrown: but that this Plangus (being Generall of Tiridates hordes) especially ayded by the two mightie men, Euarde and Barzanes, rescued the foot-men, even almo it defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their succours both of men and victual) to enter the Citie.

Which when Tiridates found would make the war long, (which length seemed to him worse then a languishing consumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, against those two Princes and Antiphilus: and that thereupon the quarrell should be decided; with compact, that neither side should helpe his fellow: but of whose side the more ouercame, with him the victorie should remayne. Antiphilus (though Erons chose rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for shame refuse the offer, especially since the two strangers that had no interest in it, did willingly accept it: besides that, he sawe it like enough, that the people (were of the miseries of war) would rather give him vp, if they sawe him shrinke, then for his sake venture their ruine: considering that the challengers were farre of greater worthinesse then him selfe. So it was agreed vpon; and against Pyrocles was Euarde, King of Bithinia; Barzanes of Hircania, against Musi-
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Musidorus, two men, that thought the world scarce able to resist them: & against Antiphilus he placed this same Plagus, being his own cousin germain, & sonne to the King of Iberia. Now so it fell out that Musidorus slewe Barzanes, & Pyroles Enardes, which victory those Princes esteemed above all that euer they had: but of the other side Plagus tooke Antiphilus prisioner: under which colour (as if the matter had bene equal, though indeed it was not, the greater part being overcame of his side) Tiridates continued his war: & to bring Erona to a compassed yeelding, sent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walles of the towne strike of Antiphilus head; without his suite in that space were granted: adding withall (because he had heard of her desperate affectio) that if in the mean time she did her selfe any hurt, what tortures could be devised should be layed vpon Antiphilus.

Then lo if Cupid be a God, or that the tyranny of our own thoughts feeme as a God vnto vs. But whatsoever it was, then it did set forth the miserablenes of his effectes: she being drawne to two contraries by one cause. For the loue of him commaunded her to yeeld to no other: the loue of him commaunded him to preserve his life: which knot might well be cut, but untied it could not be. So that Loue in her passions (like a right makebate) whispered to both sides arguments of quarrell. What (said he of the one side) dooest thou loue Antiphilus, or Erona? and shal Tiridates enioy thy bodie? with what eyes wilt thou looke vpon Antiphilus, when he shall know that another possesseth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canst thou do it? canst thou force thy hart? Thinke with thy selfe, if this man haue thee, thou shalt neuer haue more part of Antiphilus then if he were dead. But
The Countesse of Pembroke

But thus much more, that the affectio shalbe gnawing, 
& the remorse still present. Death perhaps will coole 
the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou shalt euer 
loue, and euer lacke. Thinke this beseide, if thou marrie 
Tiridates, Antiphilus is so excellent a man, that long he 
cannot be from being in some high place married: canst 
theu suffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him 
the wrong: if thou abuse thy body, thou doost him the 
wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, 
or at another time he shal die. But it shalbe thy worke, 
thy shamefull worke, which is in thy power to shun, to 
make him live to see thy faith falsified, and his bed defi- 
led. But when Loue had well kindled that parte of her 
thoughts, then went he to the other side. What (said 
he) O Enana, and is thy Loue of Antiphilus come to that 
point, as thou doost now make it a question, whether 
he shal die, or no? O excellent affection, which for too 
much loue, will see his head of. Marke well the reasons 
of the other side, and thou shalt see, it is but loue of thy 
selfe which fo disputeth. Thou canst not abide Tirida- 
tes: this is but loue of thy selfe: thou shalt be ashamed 
to looke vpon him afterward: this is but feare of shame, 
& loue of thy selfe: thou shalt want him as much then; 
this is but loue of thy selfe: he shalbe married: if he be 
well, why should that grieue thee, but for loue of thy 
selfe? No, no, pronounce these wordes if thou canst, 
let Antiphilus die. Then the images of each side stood 
before her understanding; one time she thought she 
saw Antiphilus dying: an other time she thought Anti-
philus saw her by Tiridates enjoyed: twenty times call- 
ing for a seruaunt to carry message of yeelding, but be-
fore he came the minde was altered. She blusht when 
she considered the effect of granting; she was pale, whè
the remembred the fruits of denial. As for weeping, sighing, wringing her hands, & tearing her hair, were indifferent of both sides. Easily she would have agreed to have broken all disputations with her owne death, but that the fear of Antiphilus furder torments staied her. At length, euè the evening before the day apointed of his death, the determinatio of yeelding prevailed, especially growing vpò a message of Antiphilus, who with all the conjuring termes he could deuise, besought her to save his life, upon any condition. But she had no sooner sent her messenger to Tiridates, but her mind changed, and she went to the two yong Princes, Pyrocles & Musidorus, & falling downe at their feet, desirè the to trie some way for her deliverance: shewing her selfe resolued, not to over-lie Antiphilus, nor yet to yeeld to Tiridates.

They that knew not what she had done in private, prepared that night accordingly: & as sometimes it falls out, that what is incostancy, seemes cunning; so did this change indeed stand in as good steed as a witty dissimulatio. For it made the King as reckles, as them diligent: so that in the dead time of the night, the Princes issued out of the towne, with which she would needs go, either to die her self, or reskew Antiphilus, having no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what deuise (though Plangus at large described it) the conclusion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes so preuailed, that Antiphilus was succoured, and the King slaine. Plangus was then the chiefeman left in the campe; and therefore seeing no other remedic, coueied in safety into her country Artaxia, now Queene of Armenia, who with truelamétations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way comfort
The Contesse of Pembrokes

côfert her in respect of her brothers losse, who she stud-
died all meanes possible to revenge upon every one of
the occasioners, having (as she thought) overthrown her
brother by a most abominable treason. In somuch,
that being at home, she proclaimed great rewards to an-
ny private man, and her selfe in manage to any Prince,
that would destroy Pyrœcles and Musidoras. But thus
was Antiphilus redeemed, and (though against the con-
sent of all her nobility) married to Erona, in which case
the two Greeke Princes (being called away by an-
other aduenture) left them.

CHAP. 14.

1 Philocleas narration broken of by Milo. 1 Her old-mines
tale, 1 and ballad against Cupid. 1 Their drawing cutting
for tales. 1 Moplas tale of the old cut: 1 cut of by the La-
dies to returne to their stories.

Vt now me thinkes as I haue read
some Poets, who when they inted
to tell some horrible matter, they
bid men shun the hearing of it: so
if I do not desire you to stop your
cares frô me, yet may I well desire
a breathing time, before I am to
tell the execrable treason of Anti-
philus, that brought her to this misery; and withall with
you all, that frô al mankind indeed you stop your cares.
O most happy were we, if we did set our lones one up-
on another. (And as she spake that worde, her checkes
in red letters writ more, then her tongue did speake.)
And therefore since I haue named Plangus, I pray you
sister
After (said she) helpe me with the rest, for I haue helde the stage longe enough: and if it please you to make his fortune knowne, as I haue done Eronas, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falshood: & so betwene vs both, my Ladie Zelmene shall vnderstand both the caufe and parties of this Lamentation. Nay I beflrow me then (said Miso) I wil none of that, I promise you, as long as I haue the gouernm'et, I will first haue my tale, & the my Lady Pamela, my Lady Zelmene, & my daughter Mopsa (for Mopsa was then returned fro Amphius) may draw cuts, & the shortest cut speake first. For I tell you, and this may be suffred, when you are married you wil haue first, and last word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to see with what an eger earnestnesse she looke, having threatening not onely in her Ferret eies, but while she spake, her nose seeming to threaten her chin, & her shaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they must obey: & Miso (sitting on the groiud with her knees vp, & her hands upon her knees) tundring her voice with many a quauering cough, thus discoursed vnsto the. I tel you true (said she) whatsoeuer you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am, & I, simple though I sit here, thought once my pennie as good siluer, as some of you do: and if my father had not plaid the hafty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might haue had an other-gaines husband, the Dametas. But let that passe, God amend him: and yct I speake it not without good cause. You are ful of your tittle tattling of Cupid: here is Cupid, & there is Cupid. I will tell you now, what a good old woma told me, what an old wife ma told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gaue it him in writing; and here I haue it in my praier booke. I pray you
The Countesse of Pembroke

(said Philoclea) let us see it, & read it. No haft but good
(said Misfi) you shall first know how I came by it. I was a
young girl of a seuen and twenty yeare old, & I could
not go thorow the streate of our village, but I might
heare the young me talke, O the pretie little eies of Mi-
sfi; O the fine thin lips of Misfi, O the goodly fat hands
of Misfi: besides, how well a certaine wraying I had of
my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke
with one eye, & the other cast daifesys at me: I must co-
fesse, being so many amorous, it made me set vp my pea-
cocks tayle with the hiest. Which when this good old
woma perceiued (O the good wold woman, well may
the bones rest of the good wold woma) she cald me to
her into her house. I remember full well it stood in the
lane as you go to the Barbers shop, all the towne knew
her, there was a great losse of her: she called me to her,
and taking first a solpe of wine to comfort her hart (it
was of the same wine that comes out of Candia, which
we pay so deere for now a daies, and in that good
worlde was very good cheape) she cald me to her. Min-
nion said she, (indeed I was a pretie one in those daies
though I say it) I see a nubcr of lads that loue you; Wel
(said she) I say no more: doo you know what Loue is:
With that she broght me into a corner, where ther was
painted a foule fied I trow: for he had a paire of hornes
like a Bull, his feete clouen, as many eyes vpon his bo-
die, as my gray mare hath dappels, & for all the world
so placed. This mofter sat like a hagman vpó a paire of
gallowes, in his right hand he was painted holding a
crowne of Laurell, in his left hand a purse of mony, &
out of his mouth honge a lace of two faire pictures, of a
mā, & a womā, & such a countenance he shewed, as if he
would
would persuade folks by those allurements to come thither & be hanged. I, like a tedious harted wench, shriked out for feare of the diuell. Well (sayd she) this same is even Loue: therefore do what thou liest with all those fellowes, one after another; & it recks not much what they do to thee, so it be in secrete; but vpon my charge, never love none of them. Why mother (said I) could such a thing come fro the belly of the faire Venus? for a few dayes before, our (priest betwwene him & me) had tolde me the whole storie of Venus. Tush (said she) they are all deceaued: and therewith gaue me this Booke, which she said a great maker of ballets had giuen to an old painter, who for a little pleasure, had bestowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (said she) & thou shalt see that his mother was a cowe, and the false Argus his father. And so she gaue me this booke, & there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make such a face to weepe, as if it were not sorrow, it was the carkasse of sorrow that appeared there. But while her teares came out, like raine falling vpon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her prayer booke was read among these Ladies, which contained this.

Poore Painters oft with silly Poets joyn,
To fill the world with strange but vaine conceits:
One brings the stuffe, the other stamps the coin,
Which breeds nought else but gloes of deceits.

Thus Painters Cupid paint, thus Poets do
A naked god, young blind, with arrowes two.
Is he a God, that ever flies the light?
Or naked he, disguis'd in all untruth?
The Countesse of Pembroke's

If he be blind, how hiteth he so right?
How is he young, that sham'de old Phoebus youth?

But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade:
Some hurt accuse a third with hornehead.

No, nothing so, an old false knave he is
By Argus got on Io, then a cow:
What time for her Iuno her Ioue did misse,
And charge of her to Argus did allow.

Mercury kill'd his false fire for this act,
His damne a beast was pardond beastly fact.

With fathers death, and mothers guiltie shame,
With Ioues disdaine at such a rivals seed,
The wretch compell'd a runnagate became,

And learn'd what ill a miser stata doth breed,
To lye, saie, groze, to stala, pry, and accuse.
Naught in himselfe ecb other to abuse.

Yet beares he still his parents stately gifts,
A hornd head, cloven foot, and thousand eyes,
Some gazing still, some winking wilde shifftes,
With long large eares where never rumour dyes.

His hornd head doth seeme the heauen to sight
His cloven foote doth never tredde aright.

Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,
Cloth'd in the shape which soonest may deceave,
Thus halfe a beast, ecb beastly vice he plants,
In those weake harts that his advice receave.

He poules ecb place still in new colours deckt,
Sucking ones ill, another to infect.

To narrow breaste he comes all wrapt in gaine,
To swelling harts he shines in honours fire:
To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;
Exceeding to ecb with flattering of desire.
But for that Loues desire most rules the eyes,
Therein his name, there his chiefe triumph lies.
Millions of yeares th' old driuell Cupid lives;
While still more wretch, more wicked he doth prove:
Till now at length that loue him office giues,
(At Iunos suite who much did Argus loue)
In this our world a hang-man for to bee,
Of all those fooles that will have all they see.

These Ladies made sport at the description and storie of Cupid. But Zelmane could scarce suffer those blaspheymes (as she tooke them) to be read, but humbly befought Pamela she would perfoarme her sisters request of the other part of the storie. Noble Lady (answered the, beautifying her face with a sweete smilling, and the sweetnes of her smilling with the beautie of her face) since I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not giue example of disobedience. My gouernesse will haue vs draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let vs do so: and so perhaps it will light vpoun you to entertaine this company with some storie of your owne; and it is reason our eares should be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliuer. I will thinke (answered Zelmane) excellent Princesse my tongue of some value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to fauour me. But Pamela pleasantely persifiting to have fortune their iudge, they fet hands, and Mopfa (though at the first for squamishnes going vp & downe, with her head like a boate in a storme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that saw not the coulor of them) gaue her the preheminence: and so being her time to speake (wiping her mouth, as there was good caufe) she thus tumbled
The Countesse of Pembroke

tumbled into her matter. In time past (sayd she) there was a King, the mightiest man in all his country, that had by his wife, the fairest daughter that euer did eate pappe. Now this King did kepe a greathouse, that evey body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was sittting in her window, playing vpon a harpe, as sweete as any Rose; and combing her head with a combe all of precious stones, there came in a Knight into the court, vpo a goodly horse, one haire of gold, & the other of siluer; and so the Knight casting vp his eyes to the window, did fall into such loute with her, that he grew not worth the bread he eate, till many a sory day going ouer his head, with Dayly Diligence and Grifly Grotes, he wan her affection, so that they agreed to run away togither. And so in May, when all true harte rejoyce, they stal out of the Castel, without stay- ing so much as for their breakfast. Now forsooth, as they went togither, often all to kissing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought vp among the water Nymphes, who had so bewitched him, that if he were euer askt his name, he must presently vanish away: and therefore charged her vpon his blessing, that she never askke him what he was, nor whether he would. And so a great while she kept his commandement, til once, paffing through a cruell wildernes, as darke as pitch; her mouth so watred, that she could not choose but askke him the quuestion. And then, he making the greeouesest coplaints that would haue melted a tree to haue heard them, vanish quite away; & she lay down, casting forth as pitifull cries as any shrich-owle. But hauing lain fo, (wet by the raine, and burnt by the Sun) five dayes, & five nights, she gat vp and went ouer many a high hil, &
many a deep river, till she came to an Aunts house of hers; and came, & cried to her for help: and she for pit-tie gave her a Nut, and had her never open her Nut, till she was come to the extremest misery that euer tongue could speake of. And so she went, & she went, & never rested the euening, wher she wet in the morning, till she came to a second Aunt; and she gave her another Nut:

Now good Mopsa (said the sweete Philocle) I pray thee at my request kepe this tale, till my marriage day, & I promise thee that the best gowne I weare that day shal be thine. Mopsa was very glad of the bargaine; especially that she shuld grow a festual Tale: so that Zelmaue, who defired to finde the yttermost what these Ladies understood touching her selfe, and having understood the danger of Erona (of which before she had never heard) purposing with her selfe (as soone as this pursuit she now was in, was brought to any effect) to succour her, entreated againe, that she might know as well the story of Plangus, as of Erona. Philoclea referred it to her sisters perfecter remébráce, who with so sweet a voice, and so winning a grace, as in themselves were of most forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earnest request soone condiscended.

CHAP. 15.

"Plangus his parentage. His trick of youth, espied, tur-ned over, and to his old father. An incagling-womans arts. A guilty stepmothers diuellish practises against Plangus. Her ministers false informations. Plangus perplexi-ties. His fathers jeolousies. The Queens complots to feede the ones suspicion, & work the others overthrow. Plangus taken, deliver'd, fled: is pursued with old hate, & new treason. Yet must he serve abroad, while a new heire is made at home. This story broken off by Basilius."

The
The Countesse of Pembroke

He father of this Prince Planus as yet liues, and is King of Iberia: a man (if the judgement of Planus may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing euill, without himselfe mistake the euill, seeing it disguised vnder some forme of goodnesse. This Prince, being married at the first to a Princess (who both from her auncesters, and in her selfe was worthy of him) by her had this son, Planus. Not long after whose birth, the Queene (as though she had performed the message for which she was sent into the world) returned again vnto her maker. The King (feeling vp all thoughts of loue vnder the image of her memorie) remained a widower many yeares after; recompening the griefe of that disioyning from her, in conioynynge in himselfe, both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, Planus. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may judge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excused by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault vpon it selfe) loued a private mans wife of the principal Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called loue, which he rather did take into himselfe willingly, then by which he was take forcibly. It sufficeth, that the yong man persuadde himselfe he loued her: she being a woman beautiful enough, if it be possibile, that the outside onely can iustly entitle a beauty. But finding such a chase as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince brought his affectio with her to that point, which ought to engrave remorse in her harte, & to paint shame vpon her.
her face. And so possess he his desire without any interruption, he constantly sauouring her, and she thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the spots of a broken wedlock. But as I haue seen one that was sick of a sleeping disease, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: so out of his sinfull slege his mindes (unworthie so to be lost) was not to be cald to it selfe, but by a sharpe accident.

It fell out, that his many-times leaving of the court (in vndue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes cares be manifolde) from one to another came vnto the King, who (carefull of his onely sone) sought, and found by his spies (the necessarie euill seruaantes to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights so diuerted.

Wherupon, the King (to giue his fault the greater blow) vsed such meanes, by disguising himselfe, that he found them (her husband being absent) in her house together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly ashamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatenings vpon her, and vpon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceuied with that young opinion, that if it be euery lawfull to lie, it is for ones Louer,) employed, all his witte to bring his father to a better opinion. And because he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wrested him, as much as he could possibly, to the other side: not stickeing with prodigall protestations to set foorth her chastitie, not denying his own attempts, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophistrie preyayled, his father beleued; and so beleued, that ere long (though he were already stept into the winter of his
The Countesse of Pembrookes

his age) he founde himselfe warme in those desires, which were in his sonne farre more excusable. To be short, he gaie himselfe ouer vnto it; and (because he would avoide the odious comparison of a yong riuall) sent away his sonne with an armie, to the subduing of a Province lately rebelled against him, which he knewe could not be a lesse worke, the of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaued him so worthilie, as euen to this country the fame therof came, long before his owne coming; while yet his father had a speedier succes, but in a far vnnobler conquest. For while Plangus was away, the old man (growing onely in age & affectio) followed his suite with all meanes of vnhonest servants, large promises, and each thing els that might help to counteruaile his owne vnlouelines.

And she (whose husband about that time died) forgetting the absent Plangus, or at leaft not hoping of him to obteaine so aspiring a purpose, lest no arte vnused, which might keepe the line from breaking, wherat the tune was already taken, not drawing him violently, but letting him play himself upon the hooke, which he had greedily swalowed. For accompanying her mourning with a dolefull countenaunce, yet neither forgetting handomnes in her mourning garments, nor sweetenes in her dolefull countenaunce; her wordes were eueraseasoned with sighes; and any favour she shewed, bathed in teares, that affection might see cause of pity; and pity might persuade cause of affection. And being growen skilfull in his humors, she was no lesse skilfull in applying his humors: neuer suffering his fear to fall to a depaire, nor his hope to haften to an assurance: she was content she should thinke that she loued him; and a certaine
taine stolne looke should sometimes (as though it were against her will) bewray it: But if thecupon he grewe bolde, he stright was encountred with a make of vertue. And that which seemeth most impossible vnto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as Plangus tolde it) she could not onely sigh when she would, as all can doo, & weep when she would, as (they say) some can doo; but (being most impudent in her hart) she could, when she would, teach her chekes blushing, and make shamesatnes the cloake of shamelesnes. In summe, to leave out many particularities which he recited, she did not onely vie fo the spurre, that his Desire ran on, but fo the bit, that it ran on, euë in such a careere as she would have it; that within a while, the king, seeing with no other eyes but such as she gaue him, & thinking no other thoughts but such as she taught him; having at the first liberal measure of favors, then shortned of the, when most his Desire was inflamed, he saw no other way but mariage to satisfie his longing, and her mind (as he thought) longing, but chastly loving. So that by the time Plangus returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he found his father, not only married, but already a father of a sonne & a daughter by this woma. Which though Plangus (as he had euery way inst cause) was grieved at; yet did his grief neuer bring forth ether cōtemning of her, or repining at his father. But she (who besides she was grown a mother, and a stepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conscience her guiltines) thought still that his presence caried her condénation: so much the more, as that she (unchastly attempting his wotred facies) fouëd (for the reuerence of his fathers bed) a bitter refuall: which breeding rather spite then shame in
in her, or if it were a shame, a shame not of the fault, but of the repulse, she did not only (as hating him) thirst for revenge, but (as fearing harm from him) endeavoured to do him harm. Therefore did she tie the uttermost of her wicked wit, how to overthrow him in the foundation of his strength, which was, in the favour of his father: which because she saw strong both in nature and desert, it required the more cunning to undermine it. And therefore shunning the ordinary trade of hireling fycophants she made her praises of him, to be accusations; and her aduancing him, to be his ruine. For first with words (neer admiration then liking) she would extoll his excellencies, the goodlines of his shape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his successes: so as the father might finde in her a singular love towards him: nay, she shunned not to kindle some fewe spares of elleusie in him. Thus having gotten an opinion in his father, that he was farre from meaning mischief to the sonne, then fell she to praise him with no lesse vehemencie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then she lets forth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the fittnesse in him to beare rule, the singular love the Subjectes bare him, that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their favours, or his courage in employing their favours: that he was not borne to live a subject-life, each action of his bearing in it Maistie, such a Kingly entertainment, such a Kingly magnificence, such a Kingly harte for enterprizes: especially remembering those vertues, which in a succelleror are no more honoured by the Subjectes, then suspected of the Princes. Then would she by
by putting of obiectios, bring in obiectios to her husband’s head, already infected with suspetio. Nay (would she say) I dare take it upon my death, that he is no such sonne, as many of like might have bene; who loved greatness to well, as to build their greatness upon their fathers’ ruin. Indeed Ambition, like Loue, can abide no lingering, & ever vergeth on his own success; hating nothing, but what may stop thee. But the Gods forbid, we should ever once dream of any such thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you & the world should know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurt, the more admirable is his praise, that he will not hurt. Then ever remembring to strengthen the suspetion of his estate with private jealousie of her loue, doing him excessive honour when he was in presence, and repeating his pretie speeches and graces in his absence; besides, causing him to be employed in all such dangerous matters, as either he should perish in them, or if he prevailed, they should increase his glory: which she made a weapon to wound him, until she found that suspetion began already to speake for it selfe, and that her husband’s ears were growne hungry of rumours, and his eyes prying into every accident.

Then tooke she the help to her of a servante neere about her husband, whom she knew to be of a hasty ambition, and such a one, who wanting true sufficiencie to raise him, would make a ladder of any mischief. Him she vseth to deale more plainly in alleaging causes of jealousie, making him know the fittest times when her husband already was stirred that way. And so they two, with divers wayes, nourished one humour, like Musitians, that singing divers parts, make one musicke. He sometime with fearfull countenaunce would de-
The Comtessé of Pembroke's fire the King to looke to himselfe, for that all the court and Cittie were full of whisperings, and expectation of some suddaine change, vpon what ground himselfe knew not. Another time he would counsell the King to make much of his sone, and holde his favoure, for that it was too late now to keepe him vnder. Now seeming to feare himselfe, because (he said) Plangus loved none of them that were great about his father. Lastly, breaking with him directly (making a sorrowful countenance, & an humble gesture beare false witness for his true meaning) that he fou'd not only souldiery, but people weary of his govtament, & all their affections bent vpon Plangus. Both he and the Queene concurring in strange dreames, & each thing else, that in a mind (already perplexed) might breed astonishment: so that within a while, all Plangus actions began to be translated into the language of suspition.

Which though Plangus fou'd, yet could he not avoide, euen eotaries being driuen to draw one yoke of argument: if he were magnificet, he spent much with an aspiring intent: if he spared, he heaped much with an aspiring intent: if he spake curteously, he angled the peoples harts: if he were silent, he mised vpon some daungerous plot. In summe, if he could haue turned himself to as many formes as Proteus, every forme should haue bene made tedious.

But so it fell out, that a meere trifile gaue the occasion of further proceeding. The King one morning, going to a vineyard that lay a long the hill where his castle stood, he saw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe broken, tooke a branch of the same bowe for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (said he) I make
make the sonne binde the father. This word (finding the King already superstitious through suspicio) amazed him right, as a presage of his owne fortune: so that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he misdoubted his estate, she made such gaine-saying answers, as while they straue, straue to be overcome. But euen while the doubtes most boiled, she thus nourished them.

She vnder-hand dealt with the principall me of that countrey, that at the great Parliament (which was then to be held) they should in the name of all the estates persuade the King (being now stept deeply into old age) to make Plangus, his associate in government with him: assuring the, that not only she would joine with them, but that the father himself would take it kindly; charging the not to acquaint Plangus withal; for that perhaps it might be harmful vnto him, if the King should find, that he were a party. They (who thought they might do it, not only willingly, because they loved him, & truly, because such indeed was the minde of the people, but safely, because she who ruled the King was agreed thereto) accomplished her counsel: she indeed keeping promise of vehement persuading the same: which the more she & they did, the more she knew her husband would fear, & hate the cause of his feare. Plangus founded this, & humbly protested against such desire, or wil to accept. But the more he protested, the more his father thought he disapproved, accounting his integritie to be but a cunning face of falsitie: and therefore delaying the desire of his subjects, attended some fit occasion to lay hands vnpon his sonne: which his wife thus brought to passe.

She caused that same minister of hers to go vnto Plangus.
The Comn^t of Femhoks

... (enabling his words with great shew of faith, & endearing them with desire of feerestie) to tell him, that he found his ruine conspir'd by his stepmother, with certain of the noble men of that country, the King himselfe giving his content, and that few daies should passe, before the putting it in practive: with all discouering the very truth indeed, with what cunning his stepmother had proceeded. This agreeing with Plangus his owne opinion, made him give him the better credit: yet not so far, as to fle out of his country (according to the naughty fellowes persuasion) but to attend, and to see further. Whereupon the fellow (by the direction of his mistress) told him one day, that the same night, about one of the clocke, the King had appointed to haue his wife, & those noble men together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding against Plangus: & therefore offered him, that if himselfe would agree, he would bring him into a place where he should heare all that passed; & so haue the more reason both to himselfe, and to the world, to seeke his safetie. The poore Plangus (being subject to that only disadvantage of honest hands, credulitie) was persuaded by him: & arming himself (because of his late going) was closely conveyed into the place appointed. In the meane time his stepmother making all her gestures cunningly counterfeit a miserable affliction, she lay almost grouling on the flower of her chamber, not suffering any body to comfort her; vntill they calling for her husband, and he held of with long enquiry, at length, she told him (even almost crying out every word) that she was wery of her life, since she was brought to that plunge, either to conceal her husband's murder, or accuse her sonne, who had euer bene more deare.
Then with many interruptions and exclamations she told him that her sonne Plangus (soliciting her in the old affection betwixt them) had besought her to put her helping hand to the death of the King; assuring her, that though all the laws in the world were against it, he would marrie her when he were King.

She had not fully said thus much, with many pitiful digressions, when in comes the same fellow, that brought Plangus: and running himself out of breath, fell at the Kings feet, beseeching him to save himself, for that there was a man with sword drawn in the next roome. The King affrighted, wet out, & called his gard, who entering the place, found indeed Plangus with his sword in his hand, but not naked, but slaying suspiciously enough to one already suspicious. The King (thinking he had put vp his sworde because of the noise) never took leisure to heare his answer, but made him prisoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the market place.

But the day had no sooner opened the eies & eares of his friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them, who came, and by force delivered him; although numbers on the other side (abused with the fine framing of their report) took arms for the King. But Plangus, though he might have used the force of his friends to revenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall love of his father, and hate to make their suspicion seeme just, caused him rather to choose a voluntary exile, the to make his fathers death the purchase of his life; & therefore went he to Tiridates, whose mother was his fathers sister, living in his Court eleuen or twelue yeares, ever hoping by his intercession, and his
owne desert, to recouer his fathers grace. At the end of which time the warre of Erone happened, which my sister with the cause thereof discouersd vnto you.

But his father had so deeply engraued the suspicion in his hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull guiltnes, then of an humble faithfulness; & thersore continued his hate, with such vehemencie, that he did euer hate his Nephew Tiridates, and afterwards his niece Artaxia, because in their Court he received countenance, leauing no means unattempted of destroying his son, among other, employing that wicked seruant of his, who vndertooke to employson him. But his cunning disguised him not so well, but that the watchful seruats of Plangus did discouer him. Wherupon the wretch was taken, & (before his wel-deserued execution) by torture forced to confesse the particularities of this, which in generall I haue told you.

Which confession autentically set downe (though Tiridates with solemne Embassage sent it to the King) wrought no effect. For the King hauing put the reines of the gouernment into his wifes hande, neuer did so much as reade it, but sent it streight by her to be considered. So as they rather heaped more hatred vpon Plangus, for the death of their seruant. And now finding, that his absence, and their reportes had much diminished the wavering peoples affection towards Plangus, with aduauncing fit persons for faction, and graulting great immunities to the commons, they preuailed so farre, as to cause the sonne of the second wife, called Palladius, to be proclaymed succeflour, and Plangus quite excluded: so that Plangus was driven to continue his seruing Tiridates, as he did in the warre
warre againft Erora, and brought home Artaxia, as my father tolde you; when Erora by the treason of Antiphilus. But at that word she stopped. For Basilius (notable longer to abide their absence) came sodainly among them, and with smiling countenance (telling Zelmane he was afraid she had stollen away his daughters) inuited them to follow the Sunnes counfel in going then to their lodging; for indeed the Sun was readie to set. They yeelded, Zelmane meaning some other time to understand the ftorie of Antiphilus treason, and Eronas daunger, whose case she greatly tendred. But Mife had no sooner espied Basilius, but that as spitefullly, as her rotten voice could utter it, she set forth the lawcineffe of Amphialis. But Basilius onely attended what Zelmanes opinion was, who though she hated Amphialis, yet the nobilitie of her courage prevailed ouer it, and she desired he might be pardoned that youthfull error; considering the reputation he had, to be one of the beft knights in the world; fo as hereafter he governed himselfe, as one remembering his fault. Basilius giuing the infinite tearmes of praifes to Zelmanes both valour in conquering, and pitifulnesse in pardoning, commanded no more words to be made of it, since such he thought was her pleasure.

CHAP. 16.


Z. 4 So
The Countesse of Pembrokes

O brought he them vp to visite his wife, where betweene her, & him, the poore Zelmane receaued a tedious entertainemt; oppressed with being loued, almost as much, as with louing. Basilius not so wise in couering his passion, could make his toong go almost no other pace, but to runne into those immoderate praises, which the foolish Louer thinkes short of his Mistres, though they reach farre beyond the heauens. But Gynecia (whome womanly modestie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes use the advantage of her sexe in kissting Zelmane, as she late vp on her bedde-side by her; which was but still more and more sweete incense, to cast upon the fire wherein her harte was sacrificed: Once Zelmane could not stirre, but that, (as if they had bene poppets, whose motion stooe onely vpon her pleasure) Basilius with serviceable steppes, Gynecia with greddie eyes would follow her. Basilius mind Gynecia well knew, and could haue found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could haue borne any proportion with her fortune. But all Gynecias actions were interpreted by Basilius, as proceeding from jealousie of his amoroulesesse. Zelmane betwixt both (like the poore childe, whose father while he beats him, will make him beleue it is for loue; or like the sicke man, to whom the Phisition sweares, the ill-tasting wallowish medicin be profers, is of a good taste) their loue was hatefull, their courtesie troublesome, their presence cause of her absence thence, where not onely her light, but her life consisted. Alas (thought she to herselue) deare
Dorus, what odds is there betwixt thy destiny & mine? For thou hast to do in thy pursuit but with shepherdish folkes, who trouble thee with a little envious care, and affected diligence. But I (besides that I have now Mifo, the worst of thy duels, let loose upon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Loue and Jealousie. Alas, incomparable Philoclea, thou euer seest me, but dost never see me as I am: thou hearest willingly all that I dare say, and I dare not say that which were most fit for thee to heare. Alas who euer but I was imprisoned in libertie, and banished being still present: To whom but me haue louers bene iailours, and honours a captuuitie?

But the night comming on with her silent steps upon the, they parted ech from other (if at last they could be parted, of whom euery one did liue in an other) and went about to flatter sleepe with their beds, that disdain'd to bestow it selfe liberally vpon such eies which by their will would euer be looking: and in lefte measure vpon Gynecia, who (when Basilius after long tossing was gotten a sleepe, and the cheereful comfort of the lights remoued from her) kneeling vp in her bed, began with a soft voice, and swolne hart, to renewe the curtes of her birth, & the in a maner embracing her bed, Ah chastest bed of mine (sawd she) which never heretofore couldst accuse me of one defiled thought, how canst thou now receaue this defaftred changeling? Happie, happie be they onely which be not: and thy blessednes onely in this respect thou maist feelé, that thou haft no feeling. With that she furiousely tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here 0 forgetten vertue (said she) this miserable sacrifice, while my sole was clothed with mode-
The Comtefse of Pembroke

that was a comely ornament: now why should natureowne that head, which is so wicked, as her only despair is, she cannot be enough wicked? More she would have said, but that Basilius (awaked with the noise) took her in his arms, & began to comfort her, the good-man thinking, it was all for a jealous love of him: which humor if she would a little have maintained, perchance it might have weakened his new concealed fancies. But he finding her answers wandering from the purpose, left her to herself (glad the next morning to take the advantage of a sleepe, which a little before day, overwatched with sorrow, her tears had as it were sealed vp in her eyes) to have the more conference with Zelmane, who baited on this fashion by these two lovers, & ever kept from any meaner to declare herself, found in herself a dayly encrease of her violent desires; like a river the more swelling, the more his current is stopped.

The chief recreation she could find in her anguish, was sometime to visit that place, where first she was so happy as to see the cause of her unhap. There would she kiss the ground, and thank the trees, bliss the aier, & do dutifull reverence to every thing that she thought did accompany her at their first meeting: then return again to her inward thoughts, sometimes despaire darkning all her imaginations, sometimes the active passion of Love Cheering and clearing her invention, how to unbar that comber some hinderance of her two ill-matched louers. But this morning Basilius himself gave her good occasion to go beyond them. For having combed and trickt himself more curiously, then any time fortie winters before, comming where Zelmane was, he found her giuen over to her muscall muses, to the great pleasure
fure of the good old Basilus, who retired himself behind a tree, while she with a most sweete voice did utter these passionate verses.

Loved I am, and yet complain of Love:
As loving not, accus'd, in Love I die.
When pittie most I crave, I cruell prove:
Still seeking Love, love found as much I flie.
Burnt in my selfe, I muse at others fire:
What I call wrong, I do the same, and more:
Bard of my will, I have beyond desire:
I waile for want, and yet am choke with store.
This is thy worke, thou God for ever blinde:
Though thousands old, a Boy entit'led still.
Thus children do the silly birds they finde,
With stroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
Yet thus much Love, O Love, I crave of thee:
Let me be lou'd, or els not loued be.

Basilus made no great haaste from behind the tree, till he perceived she had fully ended her musick. But then loth to loose the preitious fruite of time, he presented himselfe vnto her, falling downe vpon both his knees, and holding vp his hands, as the old gouernesse of Dama is painted, when she sodainly saw the goldé shoure, O heauély womá, or earthly Goddesse (laid he) let not my presence be odious vnto you, nor my humble suit seeme of small weight in your earcs. Vouchsafe your eies to descend vpon this miserable old-má, whose life hath hitherto bene maintained but to serue as an encrease of your beautiful triumphs. You only haue ouer throwne me, & in my bondage confess my glory. Suffer not.
not your owne worke to be despised of you: but looke
upon him with pittie, whose life serues for your praisse.
Zelmane (keeping a countenace as canses he understond
him not) told him, It became her euil to suffer such ex-
ce[lue reverence of him, but that it worse became her
to correct him, to whom she owed duetie: that the
opinion she had of his wisedome was such, as made
her efteme greatly of his words; but that the words
themselves founded so, as she could not imagine what
they might intend. Intends (said Baslius, proud that
that was brought in question) what may they intend,
but a refreshing of my soule, and a swaging of my heat,
and enjoying those your excellencies, wherein my life
is upheld, and my death threatned: Zelmane lifting vp
her face as if she had receaued a mortall injurie of him,
And is this the deuotion your ceremonies haue bene
bent vnto: said she: Is it the didaine of my estate, or
the opinion of my lightneffe, that haue emboldned
such base fancies towards me: enjoying quoth you?
now little joy come to them that yeeld to such en-
joying. Poore Baslius was so appalled, that his
legges bowed vnder him; his eyes lookt as though he
would gladly hide himself; and his old blood going to
his hart, a generall shaking all ouer his bodie posseted
him. At length with a wanne mouth, he was about to
gue a stammering answere, when it came into Zelmanes
head by this deuise to make her profite of his folly; and
therefore with a relenting countenance, thus said vn-
to him. Your words (mightie Prince) were vnfit either
for me to heare, or you to speake: but yet the large
testimonie I see of your affection makes me willing to
suppresse a great number of errors. Onely thus much
I thinke
I think good to say, that the same words in my Ladie Philoclea mouth, as from one woman to another (so as there were no other bodie by) might haue had a better grace; and perchance haue found a gentler receipt.

Basilius (whose senses by Desire were held open, and conceit was by Loue quickned) heard scarcely halfe her answere out, but that (as if speedie flight might saue his life) he turned away, and ran with all the speed his bodie would suffer him, towards his daughter Philoclea: whom he found at that time duetifuly watching by her mother, and Misero curiouslie watching her, hauing left Mopsa to doo the like seruice to Pamela. Basilius forthwith calling Philoclea aside, (with all the conjuring words which Desire could endite, and authoritie vter) besought her she would preferue his life, in whο her life was begonne; she would saue his graye haires from rebuke, and his aged mind from despaire; that if she were not cloyed with his companie, and that she thought not the earth ouer-burdened with him, she would coole his fierie griefe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatsoever he was, he was nothing but what it pleased Zelmane; all the powers of his spirite depending of her: that if she continued cruell, he could no more sustaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitefull in the Sunnes continual absence. He concluded, she should in one payment require all his deserts: and that she needed not dislaie any seruice (though never so meane) which was warranted by the sacred name of a father. Philoclea more glad then euer she had knowne her selfe, that she might by this occasion, enjoy the private conference of Zelmane, yet had
The Countesse of Pembroke's

had so sweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that she would not suffer a vile colour to be cast over her faire thoughts: but with humble grace answeredit her father: That there needed neither promise nor persuasione to her, to make her doo her uttermost for her fathers serve. That for Zelmanes favour, she would in all vertuous sort seeke it towards him: and that as she would not pearce further into his meaning, then herselfe should declare, so would she interprete all his doinges to be accomplished in goodnes: and therefore desired, (if otherwise it were) that he woulde not impart it to her, who then should be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a shew of disobedience: rather perfourming his generall commandement, which had ever beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, sprung out of passion, and contrarie to the former. Basilis content to take that, since he could have no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free access unto Zelmane) allowed her reasons, & took her proffer thankfully, desiring onely a speedie returne of comfort. Philoclea was parting, and Misfortright behind her, like Alceste following Proserpina. But Basilis forced her to stay, though with much a doo, she being sharp-set upon the fulfilling of a shrewde office, in ouer-looking Philoclea: and so said to Basilis, that she did as she was comanded, and could not answere it to Gynecia, if she were any whitle from Philoclea: telling him true, that he did euill to take her charge from her. But Basilis, (swearing he would put out her eyes, if she stird a foote to trouble his daughter) gave her a stoppe for that while.

CHAP.
Zelmanes tears, and tearfull dittie. Philoclea enters conference with her. She shues, and sheves her selfe Prince Pyrocles. Philoclea feares much, but loves more. Their conclusion, with reentrie to their intermitted historiologie.

O away departed Philoclea, with a new field of fancies for her trauayling mind. For well she sawe, her father was groven her aduertie partie, and yet her fortune such, as she must fauour her Riuall, and the fortune of that fortune such, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

But she walkt but a little on, before she saw Zelmane lying upon a banke, with her face so bent over Ladon, that (her teares falling into the water) one might have thought, that she began meltilyng to be metamorphosed to the vnder-running riuier. But by and by, with speech she made knownen, as well that she lued, as that she sorrowed. Taire stremes (said she) that do vouchsafe in your cleerenes to repesent vnto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares vnto you, procure your stay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at last, to finde some thing that pities me: and that all thinges of comfort and pleasure doo not filie away from me. But if the violence of your spring command you to haste away, to pay your dueties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carrie with you these fewe wordes, and let the yttremost ends of the world know them. A Loue
The Countesse of Pembrokes

Loue more cleer then your felues, dedicated to a Loue (I feare) more cold then your felues, with the cleerenes layes a night of sorrow upon me; and with the coldenes enflames a worlde of fire within me. With that she tooke a willowe stick, and wrote in a fandie banke these fewe verses.

O ver these brooke, trusting to eafe mine eyes,
(Mine eyes even great in labour with their teares)  
I layde my face; my face wherein there lyes  
Glafters of cloudes, which no Sunne ever clesares.
    In watry glaffe my matrie eyes I see:
    Sorrows ill easde, where sorrowes painted be.

My thoughts imprisonde in my secrete woes,
With flamie breathes doo issue oft in sound:
The sound to this strange aier no sooner goes,
But that it dooth with Echoes force rebound.
    And make me heare the plaints I would refraine:
    Thus outward helps my inward griefes maintaine.

Now in this sande I would discharge my minde,
And caft from me part of my burdous cares:
But in the sandle my tales forcolde I finde,
And see therein how well the writer fares.
    Since streame,aier,sand, mine eyes and eares conspire:
    What hope to quench, where each thing blowes the fire?

And afoon as she had written them (a new swarme of thoughts stinging her mind) she was ready with her foot to giue the new-borne letters both death and burrial. But Philoclea (to whom delight of hearing and see-
ing was before a stay from interrupting her) gave her self to be seen vnto her, with such a lightning of Beauty vpó Zel mane, that neither she could looke on, nor would looke of. At last Philoclea (having a little mused how to cut the threede cuen, betweene her owne hopelesse affection, and her fathers vnbridled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lippes, (whereof each sange their parte, to make vp the harmonie of bashfulness) began to say, My Father to whom I owe my self, & therefore, When Zel mane (making a womanish habite to be the Armour of her boldnese, giuing vp her life to the lippes of Philoclea, and taking it againe by the sweetenesse of those kissses) humbly besought her to keepe her speach for a while within the Paradife of her minde. For well she knew her fathers errad, who should soon receive a sufficient answere. But now she demanded leaue not to loose this long sought for commoditie of time, to case her harte thus farre, that if in her agonies her de-stinie was to be condemned by Philoclea's mouth, at left Philoclea might know, whom she had condemned. Philoclea easly yeelded to graunt her owne desire: and so making the greene banke the situation, and the riuer the prospect of the most beautiful buildings of Na-true, Zel mane doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the vnworthinesse of every worde that should be presented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

Most beloued Ladie, the incomparable excellen- cies of your selfe, (waited-on by the greatnesse of your estate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life consisteth) doth require both many ceremo-
The Countesse of Pembroke

nies before the beginning, and many circumstauces in the uttering my speech, both bolde, and fearefull. But the small opportunitie of envious occasion (by the malicious eie hateful Loue doth cast vpon me)and the extreme bent of my affection (which will eyther breake out in wordes, or breake my harte)compell me, not onely to embrace the smalles time, but to passe by respects due vnto you, in respect of your poore catifes life, who is now, or neuer to be preferued. I doe therefore vowe vnto you, hereafter neuer more to omit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchsafe to heare the matter of a minde most perplexed. If euer the sound of Loue haue come to your eares, or if euer you haue vnderstood, what force it hath had to con- quere the strongest hartes, and change the most set- led estates: receiue here an example of those straunge Tragedies; one, that in him selfe conteineth the particularities of all those misfortunes: and from henceforth beleue that such a thing may be, since you shall see it is. You shall see (I say) a liuing image, and a present storie of what Loue can doo, when he is bent to ruine.

But alas, whether goest thou my tongue: or how doth my harte consent to adventure the revealing his neerest touching secreete: But peace Feare, thou commest too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I say againe, O onely Princesse, attend here a mis- ferable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes Pyrocles, Prince of Macedon, whome you onely haue brought to this game of Fortune, and vnused Metamorphosis: whome you onely haue made neg- lect his countrie, forget his Father, and lastly, forsake to
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

The same Pyrocles, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ship, which being burned, Pyrocles was drowned. O most true presage: for these traytours, my eyes, putting me in a shippe of Desire, which dayly burneth, those eyes (I say) which betrayed me, will never leave till they have drowned me. But be not, be not, (most excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-starre of comfort, be not the Rocke of shipwracke: you whom vertue hath made the Princesse of felicitie, be not the minister of ruine: you, whom my choyse hath made the Goddess of my safetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred vpon me destruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my wordes: thinke then what his amazement is, from whence they come: since no wordes can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I desire, that my desire may be waied in the bальнances of Honour, and let Virtue hold them. For if the higheft Loue in no base person may aspire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be without pitte. If otherwise you be (alas but let it never be so) resolued, yet shall not my death be comfortles, receiuing it by your sentence.

The joy which wrought into Pygmalions mind, while he found his beloved image was softer, & warmer in his folded armes, till at length it accomplished his gladnes with a perfect womans shape (still beautified with the former perfections) was even such, as by each degree of Zelmanes wordes creepingly entred into Phileclea: till her pleasure was fully made vp with the manifesting of his being, which was such as in hope did ouer-come Hope. Yet Doubt would faine have played
his parte in her minde, and cai'd in question, how she should be assured that Zelmane was Pyrocles. But Loue 
estaight stood vp & depo'd, that a lie could not come from the mouth of Zelmane. Besides, a certain sparke of 
honour, which rose in her well-disposed minde, made her feare to be alone with him, with whom alone she 
desired to be (with all the other contradictions growing in those minds, which neither absolutely clime the rocke 
of Vertue, nor freely sink into the sea of Vanitie) but that sparke soon gaue place, or at left gaue no more 
light in her mind, then a candle doth in the Sunnes presence. But euen sike with a surfeit of joy, and fearfull 
of she knewe not what (as he that newly findes huge treasures, doubtes whether he sleepe or no; or like a 
fearfull Deere, which then looks most about, when he comes to the best feede) with a shrugging kinde of 
tremor through all her principall partes, she gaue these affectionate wordes for answere. Alas, how painefull 
a thing it is to a deuided minde to make a wel-loyned answere: how harde it is to bring inwarde shame to 
outward confession: and what handsomees trow you can be obserued in that speeche, which is made one 
knowes not to whom? Shall I say & Zelmane: Alas your wordes be against it. Shall I say Prince Pyrocles? wretch 
that I am, your shew is manifest against it. But this, this 
I may well say; If I had continued as I ought, Pyrocles; you had either never bene, or ever bene Zelmane: you 
had either never attempted this change, set on with hope, or ever discovered it, stoop with despaire. But I 
feare me, my behauiour ill governed, gaue you the first comfort: I feare me, my affection ill hid, hath giue you 
this last assurance: I feare indeed, the weakenesse of my gouern-
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

179
gouvernement before, made you thinke such a maske would be gratefull vnlo me: & my weaker governo
sence, makes you to pull of the vilair. What shall I doo
then? should I seeke far fetched inuentiones? shall I labour
to lay marble coulours ouer my ruinous thoughts: or
rather, though the purenes of my virgin-minde be stain-
ned, let me keepe the true simplicitie of my word. True
it is, alas, too true it is, O Zelmae (for so I loue to call
thee, since in that name my loue first began, and in the
shade of that name my loue shall best lie hidden,) that
euen while so thou wert, (what eye bewitched me I
know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be
desired. Shall I say then, I am fory, or that my loue must
be turned to hate, since thou art turned to Pyrocles? how
may that well be, since when thou wert Zelmae, the de-
spaire thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me.
Thou haft then the victorie: vse it with vertue. Thy
vertue vnan me; with vertue preferue me. Dooft thou
loue me? keepe me then still worthy to be beloued.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-ac-
cusing looke, finding, that in her selfe she had (as it
were) shot out of the bow of her affectio, a more quick
opening of her minde, then she minded to haue done.
But Pyrocles so caried vp with joy, that he did not enuy
the Gods felicitie, presented her with some iewels of
right princely value, as some little tokens of his loue, &
qualitie: and withall shewed her letters from his father
King Euarchus, vnto him, which even in the Sea had a-
mongst his iewels bene preserued. But little needed
those proofes to one, who would haue fallen out with
her selfe, rather then make any contrarie conicctures
to Zelmaes speeches; so that with such imbracements,
as it seemed their soules desired to meete, and their harts to kisse, as their mouthes did: which faine Pyrocles would have sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire, but Philocles commaunded the contrary; and yet they pass'd the promise of marriage.

And then at Philocles entreaty, who was willing to purloine all occasions of remaining with Zelmae, she tolde her the storie of her life, from the time of their departing from Erona, for the rest she had already understood of her sister. For (saide she) I have understand, how you first in the companie of your Noble cousin Musidorms parted from Thessalia, and of divers adventures, which with no more daunger then glory you pass'd through, till your comming to the succour of the Queene Erona; and the ende of that warre (you might perceiue by my selfe;) I had understood of the Prince Plangus. But what since was the course of your doings, untill you came, after so many victories, to make a conquest of poore me, that I know not, the fame thereof having rather shewed it by pieces; then delivered any full forme of it. Therefore, dece Pyrocles (for what can mine eares be so sweetly fed with as to heare you of you) be liberall vnto me of those things which have made you indeede precious to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for since I haue you here out of them, even the remembrance of them is pleaunt. Pyrocles easily perceiued she was content with kindnesse, to put of occasion of further kindnesse, wherein Loue shewed him selue a cowardly boy, that durft not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Loue prooued him selue valiant, that durft with the sworde of reuerent dutie gaine stand the
force of so many enraged desires. But so it was, that though he knewe this discourse was to entertaine him from a more streight parley, yet he durst not but kisse his rod, and gladly make much of the entertainement which she allotted vnto him: and therefore with a desirous sigh chastning his brest for too much desiring, Sweete Princesse of my life (said he) what Trophes, what Triumph, what Monuments, what Histories may ever make my fame yeeld so sweete a Musicke to my eares, as that it pleaseth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching Pyrocles, onely therefore of value, because he is your Pyrocles? And therefore grow I now so proud, as to thinke it worth the hearing, since you vouchsafe to giue it hearing. Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchsafe to know, that after the death of Tiridates, and setting Eronas in her gouernemen: for setled we left her, howsoever since (as I perceiued by your speech the last day) the vngrateful treason of her ill-chosen husband overthrew her (a thing in truth never till this time by me either heard, or suspected) for who could thinke without having such a minde as Antiphilus, that so great a beautie as Eronas (indeed excellent) could not haue held his affection? So great goodness could not haue bound gratefulness: and so high advancement could not haue satisfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickednesse may well be compared to a bottom-leth pit, into which it is farre easie to keepe ones selfe from falling, then being fallen, to giue ones selfe any stay from falling infinitely. But for my Cosen, and me, upon this cause we parted from Eronas.
CHAP. 18.

"Anaxius—his surceidrie, and challenge to Pyrocles, accepted."
"The execution of Ladies done on a Light-of-lone."
"Pyrocles—his intercession in the cause."
"The lewd parts of that light lecher."
"His scoffing excuses."
"Didos revenge on him stopped, and his revenge on her stayed by Pyrocles."

Yardes (the braue & mighty Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the cObat for Erone) had three Ne-
phewes, sonnes to a sister of his, all three set among the foremost rachs of Fame, for great minds to attépt,
and great force to perfourme what they did attempt; especially the eldest, by name Anax-
ious, to whom al men would willingly haue yeelded the height of praise, but that his nature was such, as to be-
flow it vpon himselfe, before any could gue it. For of so vnsupportable a pride he was, that where his deede
might well stirre enuie, his demeanor did rather breed disdain. And if it be true that the Cyants euer made war
against heauen, he had bene a fir ensigne-bearer for that company. For nothing seemed hard to him, though
impossible; and nothing vnuest, while his liking was his justice. Now he in these wars had flatly refused his aid,
because he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince Pligus was by his cofen Tiridates preferred before him.
For allowing no other weights, but the sword & speare in juding of desert, how much he esteemed himselfe
before
before Plangus in that, so much would he haue had his allowance in his service.

But now that he understood that his uncle was slaine by me, I thinke rather scorne that any should kil his uncle, then any kindnesse (an vn-vsed guest to an arrogat soule) made him seke his reuenge; I must confesse in manner gallant enough. For he sent a challenge to me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the kingdome of Lycia, where he would proue upon me, that I had by some trecherie overcome his uncle, whom els many hundreds such as I, could not haue withstood. Youth & succeffe made me willing enough to accept any such bargaine; especially, because I had heard that your cofen Amphialus (who for some yeares hath vniuersally borne the name of the best Knight in the world) had diuers times fought with him, & neuer bene able to master him, but so had left him, that every man thought Anaxius in that one vertue of curtefeie far short of him, in al other his match; Anaxius stil deeming himselfe for his superiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone, because so I understood for certaine, he was, and (I must confesse,) desirous to do something without the company of the incomparable Prince Mysidorus, because in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his presence, then to any thing in my selfe, whatsoeuer before I had done. For of him indeed (as of any worldly cause) I must grant, as receiued, what soever there is, or may be good in me. He taught me by word, and best by example, giuing me in him so lively an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not cast such mist over mine eyes, as not to see, and to loue it, and all with such deare friendship and care, as (3 heauens)
The Counteße of Pembroke

heauens) how ca my life euer requite vnlo him? which made me indeed finde in my selfe such a kind of depending vnpon him, as without him I found a weakenesse, and a distrustfulness of my selfe, as one strayed from his best strength, when at any time I mist him. Which humour perceiving to ouer-rule me, I straue against it; not that I was vnwilling to depend vnpon him in iudgement, but by weakenesse I would not; which though it held me to him, made me vnworthy of him. Therefore I desired his leave, and obtained it: such confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne tenderness, and so privately went from him, he determining (as after I knew) in secret maner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to meete, to prevent any foule play that might be offered vnlo me. Full loth was Eroma to let vs depart from her, (as it were) foreseeing the harms which after fell to her. But I, (ridde fully from those combers of kindnesse, and halfe a dayes journey in my way toward Anaxius) met an aduenture, (though in it selfe of small importance) I will tell you at large, because by the occasion thereof I was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might escape.

As I past through a Laund (ecke side whereof was so bordred both with high tymbre trees, and copses of fame more humble growth, that it might easily bring a solitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the wild burgeffes of the forrest) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawses to mine ears from within the wood of the right hand, made me well assured by the greatnesse of the crie, it was the voice of a man, though it were a verie vnmanlike voice, so to crie. But

making
making mine care my guide, I left not many trees behind me, before I saw at the bottom of one of them a gentlemam bound (with many garters) hand & foot, so as well he might tumble and toss, but neither runne nor resist he could. Upon him (like so many Eagles vpon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely such, as one might well enough say, they were handsome. Each of them helde bodkins in their handes, wherewith they continually pricked him, having bene before-hand vnarmed of any defence from the waft vpward, but onely of his shirte: so as the poore man wept and bled, cryed and prayed, while they sported themselues in his paine, and delighted in his prayers, as the arguments of their victorie.

I was moued to compassion, and so much the more that he straignt calde to me for succour, desiring me at left to kill him, to deliver him from those tormenters. But before my self could resolue, much lesse any other tell what I would resolue, there came in cholericke haft towards me about feue or eight knights; the foremost of which willed me to get me away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due reuenge, but with so ouer-mastrings a maner of pride, as truly my hart could not brooke it: & therefore answer ing them, that how I would have defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combate first with him particularly, and after his death with the others (that had lesse good maners) ioynently. But such was the end of it, that I kept the field with the death of some, and flight of others. In so much as the women (afraid, what angrie victorie would bring forth) ranne away; sauing onely one, who was so flest in malice, that
that neither during, nor after the fight, she gave any truce to her crueltie, but still vied the little instrument of her great spight to the well-witnessed paine of the impatient patient: and was now about to put out his eyes, which all this while were spared, because they should do him the discomfort of seeing who prevailed over him. When I came in, and after much ado, brought her to some conference, (for some time it was before she would harken, more before she would speake; & most, before she would in her speech leave off that remembrance of her bodkin,) but at length when I pul'd off my head-piece, and humbly entreated her pardon, or knowledge why she was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increas'd in his owne exercise) the with the paine she tooke, much to this purpose she gaue her griefe unto my knowledge. Gentleman (said she) much it is against my will to forbeare any time the executing of my just revenge upon this naughtie creature, a man in nothing, but in deceaving women; But because I see you are young, and like enough to have the power (if you would have the mind) to do much more mischief, then he, I am content upon this bad subject to read a lecture to your vertue.

This man called Pamphilus, in birth I must confesse is noble (but what is that to him, if it shal be a stain to his deade anseftors to have left such an offspring?) in shape as you see not vncomely (indeed the fit make of his disguised falsehood) in conversation wittily pleasant, and pleasantly gamesome; his eyes full of merie simplicie, his words of hartie companablenesse; and such a one, whose head one would not think so stayed, as to thinke mischieuosly; delighted in all such things, which
which by imparting their delight to others, makes the user thereof welcome; as, Musicke, Daunting, Hunting, Feasting, Riding, & such like. And to conclude, such a one, as who can keepe him at armes ende, neede neuer with a better companion. But vnder these qualities lies such a poysonous addar as I will tell you. For by those gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to say truely) he flies so into the fauour of poore sllie women, that I would be too much ashamed to confesse, if I had not revenge in my hande, as well as shame in my checkes. For his hart being wholly delighted in deceiuing vs, we could neuer be warned, but rather, one bird caught, serued for a stale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the more still he shewed, that he (as it were) gaue away to his new mistresse, wher he betrayed his promises to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes of his vowes, were but among the weakest theedes of his nette. But the stirring our owne passions, and by the entrance of them, to make himselfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Masters part of cunning, making vs now jealous, now enuous, now proud of what we had, desirous of more, now giving one the triumph, to see him that was Prince of many, Subject to her; now with an estranged looke, making her seare the losse of that minde, which indeede could neuer be had: neverceasing humblenes and diligence, till he had imbarked vs in some such disaduantage, as we could not return dryshod; and then suddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For so would he vs his imperiousnes, that we had a delightfull seare, and an awe which made vs loath to lose our hope. And, which is strangest (when somet
The Countesse of Pembrookes

dimes with late repentance I thinke of it: I must con-
tesse, euen in the greatest tempest of my judgmemet was I never druen to think him excellent, and yet so could set my minde, both to gette and keepe him, as though herein had lain my felicitie: like them I haue seene play at the ball, growe extremely earnest, who shoulde haue the ball, and yet every one knew it was but a ball. But in the end, the bitter sauce of the sport was, that we had ether our hartes broken with sorrow, or our estates spoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for eu er lost, partly by our owne faults, but principally by his faultie vuling of our faults. For eu er was there man that could with more scornefull eyes beholde her, at whose teete he had lately laine, nor with a more vn-
manlike brauerie vs his tongue to her disgrace, which lately had long Sonets of her praiies: being so naturally inconstant, as I maruell his soule findes not some way to kill his bodie, whereto it had beene so long v-
nited. For so hath he deale with vs (vnhappie fooles,) as we could eu er tell, whether he made greater haste after he once liked, to enjoy, or after he once enjoie-
ed, to forfake. But making a glorie of his own shame, it delighted him to be challenged of vnkindnesse: it was a triumph vnto him to haue his mercie called for: and he thought the fresh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing so well, as in the ruines of his Lo-
uers: yet so farre had we engaged our selues, (unfortunate soules,) that we lifted not complaine, since our complaintes could not but carrie the greatest accuses-
tion to our selues. But euerie of vs (each for her selfe,) laboured all meanes how to recouer him, while he rather daily sent vs companions of our decei p, then eu er
ever returned in any sound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himselfe to one (I must confesse) worthie to be liked, if any worthinesse might excuse so vnworthie a changeableness; leaung vs nothing but remorse for what was past, and despaire of what might followe. Then indeede, the common injurie made vs all ioyne in friendshippes, who till that time, had employed our eneauours one against the other. For, we thought nothing was a more condemning of vs, then the justifying of his loue to her by mariage: then Despaire made Feare valiant, and Reuenge gaue Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you saw here) devised how to get him among vs alone: which he (suspecting no such matter of them, whom he had by often abuses he thought made tame to be still abused) easilie gaue vs opportunitie to doo.

And a man may see, euen in this, how sone Rulers growe proud, and in their pride foolish: he came with such an authoritie among vs, as if the Planets had done inough for vs, that by vs once he had beene delighted. And when we began in courteous manner, one after the other, to lay his vnkindnesse vnto him, he seeing himselfe confronted by so many (like a resolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to justifie his cruell fallhoode, and all with such ieftes, and disdainfull passages, that if the injurie could not be made greater, yet were our conceiptes made the apter to apprehende it.

Among other of his answeres (forsooth) I shall neuer forgette, how he woulde prooue it was no inconstancie to chaunge from one Loue to an other, but
but a great constancie; and contrary, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I ever loued my Delight, & delighted always in what was Louely: and where-soever I founde occasion to obtaine that, I constantly followed it. But these constant fooles you speak of, though their Mistres grow by sicknesses foule, or by fortune miserable, yet still will loue her, and so commit the absurdest constancie that may be, in changing their loue from faireness to soulenesse, and from soulenesses to his contrarie, like one not content to leave a friend, but will straight giue over himself to his mortal enemy: where I (whom you call inconstant) am ever constant, to Beautie, in others, and Delight in my self. And so in this iollie scoffing brauerie he went over vs all, saying, He left one, because she was over-waiwarde; another, because she was too soone woon; a third, because she was not merie enough; a fourth, because she was over-gamesome; the fifth, because she was growen with grief subject to sicknesses; the sixt, because she was so foolish, as to be ielous of him; the seuenth, because she had refused to carie a letter for him, to another that he loued; the eight, because she was not secrete; the ninth, because she was not liberal; but to me, who am named Dido, (andindeede haue mette with a false Aeneas) to me, I say, (o the vn-gratefull villaine) he could finde no other fault to object, but that (perdie) he met with many fayrer.

But when he had thus plaide the carlesse Prince, we (having those servants of ours in readines, whom you lately so manfully overcame) laide holde of him; beginning at first but that trifling reuenge, in which you found vs buifie; but meaning afterwardes to have
haue mangled him so, as should haue lost his credit for euer abusing more. But as you haue made my fellowes flie away, so for my part the greatnesse of his wrong ouershadowes in my judgement the greatnesse of any daunger. For was it not enouth for him, to haue deceived me, & through the deceit abused me, & after the abuse forfaken me, but that he must now, of all the company, & before all the company lay want of beautie to any charge? Many fairer: I trow euie in your judgement, Sir, (if your eies do not beguile me) not many fairer, & now (whosoeuer faies the contrary) there are not many fairer. And of whom should I receive this reproch, but of him, who hath best cause to know there are not many fairer? And therefore how soever my fellowes pardon his injuries, for my parte I will euer remember, & remember to reuenge this scorne of all scornes. With that the to him afresh; & surely would haue put out his eies (who lay muet for shame, if he did not sometimes erie for feare) if I had not leapt from my horse, & mingling force with intreaty, staied her furie.

But, while I was persuading her to meekenes, comes a number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they should kill that woman, that had thus betraied and disgraced him. But then I was faine to forfake the ensigne, ynder which I had before seuered, and to spend my uttermost force in the protecting of the Ladie; which so well preuailed for her, that in the ende there was a faithfull peace promised of all sides. And so I leading her in a place of securitie (as she thought) went on my journey towards Anaxius, for whom I was faine to stay two daies in the apointed place, he disdainning to waite for me, till he was sure I were there.
The monomachie betweene Anaxius and Pyrocles; The course of Didos daunger; The miserablenesse of her father; His earliest entertainment to Pyrocles; and his treason against him. Pyrocles hard bestead. succour'd by Musidorus: both saved by the King of Iberia. The execution of the traitors, and death of Dido.

Did patientlie abide his angrie pleasure, till about that space of time he came (indeede, according to promise) alone: and (that I may not say too little, because he is wont to say too much) like a man whose courage was apt to clime over any daunger. And assoone as ever he came neere me, in fit distance for his purpose, he with much fury, (but with fury skilfully guided) ran vpon me, which I (in the best sort I could) resisted, having kept myselfe ready for him, because I had understood, that he obserued but few complements in matters of armes, but such as a proud anger did indite vnto him. And so putting our horses into a full careere, we hit each other vpon the head with our Launces: I think he felte my blowe; for my parte (I must confess) I never receiued the like: but I thinke though my senses were astonisht, my minde forced them to quicken themselves, because I had learned of him, how little favor he is wont to shewe in any matter of aduantage.
And indeede he was turned, and comming vpon me with his sworde drawne, both our staues hauing bene broken at that encounter. But I was so ready to an-
swere him, that truely I know not who gaue the first blowe. But whosoeuer gaue the first, it was quickly se-
conded by the second. And indeed (excellentest La-
die) I must say truely, for a time it was well fought be-
tweene vs, he undoubtedly being of singular valour, (I would to God, it were not abased by his too much lofinessse) but as by the occasion of the combate, win-
nig and loosing ground, we chaunged places, his horfe happened to come vpon the point of the bro-
en speare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to stand vpward; so as it lighting vpon his hart, the horfe died. He driuen to dismount, threatened, if I did not the like, to doo as much for my horfe, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or because I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victo-
tic, I descended.

So began our foote-fight in such fort, that we were well entred to bloud of both sides, when there comes by, that vnconstant Pamphilus, whom I had deliuered (easie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a do-
zen armed men after him; but before him he had Dido (that Ladie, who had most sharpeely punifhed him) riding vpon a palfrey, he following her with most vn-
manlike crueltie, beating her with wandes he had in his hande, she crying for sense of payne, or hope of succour: which was so pittifull a fight vnto me, that it mooued me to require Anaxius to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to perfourme the duties of Knighthood in helping this distrefsted Ladie.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

But he that disdaines to obey any thing but his passion (which he calls his mind) bad me leave of that thought, but when he had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her succour. But I well finding the fight would belong betwixt us (longing in my hart to deliuer the poore Dido) giving him so great a blowe, as somewhat slaided him, (to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him toward my horse, who trotting after the company, in mine armour I was put to some paine, but that vse made me nimble vnto it. But as I followed my horse, Anaxius followed me: but his pride harte did so disdain that exercise, that I had quickly ouer-run him, & ouer-taken my horse, being (I must confesse) ashamed to see a number of country folks, who happened to passe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arrantest coward, that euery shewed his shoulders to his enimie. But when I had leapt on my horse (with such speedy agility, that they all cried, O see how feare gies him wings) I turned to Anaxius, & aloud promised him to return theether again, as soone as I had releaved the injured Lady. But he railing at me, with all the base wordes angry contempt could endire; I said no more, but, Anaxius, assure thy self; I neither feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And so vsing no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my spurre, I ranne in my knowledge after Pamphilus, but in al their conceipts from Anaxius, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare testifed with such laughters and games, that I was some few times moved to turne backe againe.

But the Ladies misery ouer-balanced my reputation so that after her I went, & with six houres hard riding (through so wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my
my horse sometimes, then of myself, so tightly to hit the way) I ouergat the a little before night, near to an old il-fauoured castle, the place where I perceived they meant to performe their vnknightly errand. For there they began to strip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, & running through the first with a launce, the instanee of the cause so enabled me against the rest (falsharted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as short time almost as I had bene fighting with only Anaxius, delivered her from those injurious wretches: most of whom carried newes to the other world that amongst men secret wronges are not alwaies left unpunished. As for Pamphilus, he having once scene, & (as it should see me) remembered me, even from the beginning began to be in the rewarde, and before they had left fighting, he was too far of to giue them thanks for their paines. But when I had delivered to the Lady a ful libertie, both in effect, & in opinion, (for some time it was before she could assure her selfe she was out of their handes, who had laid so vehement apprehension of death vpon her) she then tolde me, how as she was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too soone trusting to the falshood of reconcilement) Pamphilus had set vpon her, and killing those that were with her, carried her selfe by such force, and with such manner as I had seen, to this place, where he meant in cruell and shamefull manner to kill her, in the sight of her owne Father, to whom he had already sent worde of it, that out of his caste windowe (for this caste, she said, was his) he might haue the prospect of his onely childes destruction, if my comming, whom (she said) he feared (as soone as he knew me by the Bb 3 armour)
armour) had not warranteed her from that neere approaching crueltie. I was glad I had done so good a deede for a Gentlewoman not vnhandsome, whome before I had in like sorte helped. But the night beginning to perswade some retiring place, the Gentlewoman, even out of countenaunce before she began her speach, much after this manner inuited me to lodge that night with her father.

Sir (said she) how much I owe you, can be but a-based by wordes, since the life I haue, I holde it now the second time of you: and therefore neede not offer service vnto you, but onely to remember you, that I am your servant: and I would, my being so, might any way yeeld any small contentment vnto you. Now onely I can but desire you to harbour your selue this night in this castle; because the time requires it, and in truth this countreie is very dangerous for murthering theeues, to trust a sleeping life among them, And yet I must confesse, that as the loue I beare you makes me thus inuite you, so the same loue makes me ashamed to bring you to a place, where you shalbe so (not spoké by ceremonie but by truth) miserably entertained. With that she told me, that though the spake of her father (whom she named Chremes) he would hide no truth from me, which was in summe, that as he was of all that region the man of greatest possessions, and riches, so was he either by nature, or an euill receiued opinion, given to sparing, so vnmeasurable a forte, that he did not onely barre him selue from the delightfull, but almost from the necessarie use thereof; scarcely allowing him selue suffice sustenaunce of life, rather then he would spende of those goods, for whose sake

only
onely he seemed to ioye in life. Which extreame dealing (descending from himselfe vpon her) had driuen her to put her selfe with a great Lady of that countrie, by which occasion she had stumbled vpon such mischance, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But so wise had he shewed himselfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his cost, he was content to be deafe to any noife of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then she deferred, yet she could not denie, but she was driuen thereby to receive more then decent sauours. She concluded, that there at last I should be free from injuries, & should be assured to her-wards to abound as much in the true causes of welcomes, as I should want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my selfe to measure the delicacie of foode and rest, by hunger and wearinesse, at that time well stord of both, did not abide long entreatie; but went with her to the Castle: which I found of good stength, having a great mote rounde about it, the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whose vnthriftie sonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne vp, where we were faine to cry a good while before we coulde haue answære, and to dispute a good while before answære would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingnesse, rather then a ioy to receaue his daughter, whom hee had lately seene so neere death, and an opinion rather brought into his head by course, because he heard himselfe called a father; rather then any kindnesse that hee found in his owne harte, made him take vs in; for my part by that time growne so weareie of such entertainement, that no
regard of my selfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this Chremes, a driueling old fellow, leane, shaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then most greediof Earth: who scarcely would give me thankes for that I had done, for feare I suppose, that thankfulness might haue an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giuing me a false welcome, I might perceave in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to say, whether the displeasure of her company did not ouer-way the pleasure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into so bare a house, that it was the picture of miserable happinesse, and rich beggerie (served onely by a company of rusticall villaines, full of sweate and dust, not one of them other, then a labourer) in summe (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging such, as would make one detest nigardnesse, it is so fluttish a vice. His talke nothing but of his pouertie, for feare belike left I should haue proued a young borrower. In summe, such a man, as any enemy could not wish him worse, then to be himselfe. But there that night bidde I the burthen of being a tedious guest to a loathsome host; ouer-hearing him sometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing such costly mates vnder his roofe: which she grieving at, desired much to know my name, I thinke partly of kindness to remember who had done some-thing for her, and partly because she assured her selfe I was such a one as would make eu en his miser-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly she demanded my name, and estate, with such earnestnesse, that I whom Loue had not
not as then so robbed me of my selfe, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: whereof she was no more gladde then her father, as I might well perceave by some ill-fauoured cheerefulnesse; which then first began to wrinkle itselfe in his face.

But the causes of their ioyes were farre different; for as the shepheard and the butcher both may looke upon one sheepe with pleasing conceipts, but the shepheard with minde to profite himselfe by preseruing, the butcher with killing him: So she rejoyced to finde that mine owne benefits had tyed me to be her friend; who was a Prince of such greatnesse, and louingly rejoyced: but his ioy grew, (as I to my danger after perceued) by the occasion of the Queene Artaxias setting my head to sale, for having slaine her brother Tetrades; which being the summe of an hundred thousand crownes (to whosoever brought me alieue into her hands) that old wretch, (who had ouer-liued all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet aboue all things louing money, for monies owne sake determined to betray me, so well deseruing of him, for to haue that which he was determined neuer to vse. And so knowing that the next morning I was resolved to go to the place where I had left Anaxius, he sent in all speed to a Captaine of a Garrison hard by; which though it belonged to the King of Iberia, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight so in riotous spending; as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it) doubted not, that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in the treason. And therefore that night agreeing of
of the fittest places where they might surprize me in the morning, the old caitiff was growne so ceremonious, as he would needs accompanie me some myles in my way; a sufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apte to suspect; since a charles curtesie rathely comes but either for gaine, or falshood. But I suffered him to stumble into that point of good manner: to which purpose he came out with all his clownes, both upon such cart-iades, and so furnished, as in good faith I thought with myself, if that were thrift, I wisset none of my friends or subiectes ever to thrive. As for his daughter (the gentle Dido) she would also (but in my conscience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

7 So we went on togethers he so old in wickednes, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whose life he had alreadie contracted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde vs into a place, of each-sidewhereof men might easiely kepe themselfes undiscovered, I was encompassed sodainly by a great troupe of enimies, both of horse and foot, who willed me to yeelde my selfe to the Queene Artaxia. But they could not haue vsed worse eloquence to haue perfwaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will Artaxia bare me. And therefore making necessitie and justice my best sword and sheild, I vsed the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am sure to the little eafe of a good number, who trufiting to their number more then to their valure, and valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guildefnesse is not alwayes with eafe oppressed. As for Chromes, he withdrew himselfe, yet so building
his wicked conccipts with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I should be taken to make his pray.

But I was growne so wearie, that I supported my felfe more with anger then strength, when the most excellent Musidorus came to my succour; who haung followed my trace as well as he could, after he had found I had left the fight with Anaxius, came to the niggards Caftell, where he found all burnd and spoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that couetous man, and now tooke the time, when the caftell was left almost without garde, to come in, and leave monuments of their malice therein: which Musidorus not staying either to further, or impeach, came vpon the spurre after me (because with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant vnto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I saw that Cofen of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath Musidorus by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not stranger for the number, then for the strange blowes wherwith he sent them to a wel-deserved death, might well delight me to speake off, but I shou’d so holde you too long in euery particular. But in trueth, there if eu’er, and eu’er, if eu’er any man, did Musidorus shew himselfe second to none in able valour.

Yet what the vnmeasurabe excess of their num-
ber woulde have done in the ende I knowe not, but the triall thereof was cutte off by the chaunceable com-
The Countess of Pembroke's

comming thither of the King of Iberia, that same father of that worthy Plangus, whom it hath pleased you sometimes to mention, who, (not yeelding over to old age his country delights, especially of hauing) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to see this inuiurie offered unto vs: and hauing great numbers of Courtiers waiting vpon him, was straight known by the soldiers that assaulted vs: to be their King, and so most of them with-drew themselues.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne constrained confession, what was the motiue of this mischievous practife, misliking much such violéce should be offered in his countrie to men of our ranke: but chiefly disdaining it should be done in respect of his Niece, whom (I must confess wrongly) he hated, because he interpreted that her brother and she had maintained his sonne Plangus against him, caused the Captaines head presently to be striken off, and the old bad Chremes to be hanged: though truely for my part, I earnestly laboured for his life, because I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a conclusion of his miserable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas the poore Gentlewoman) was by chaunce slaine among his clownes, while she ouer-boldly for her weake sexe sought to hold the from me, nor yet his owne shamefull ende was so much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the losse of his goods, and burning of his house: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations vpon.
CHAP. 20.

The two Princes passage to the Iberian Court. Andromanas omniregencie. Her parti-love to them both. Her faire and soule means to inuigle them. Palladius love to Zelmane. Zelmanes love to Pyrocles, and practise with her Lourer to release her beloved.

His iustice thus done, and we deliuered, the King indeede in royall forte inuited vs to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaiuing vs so, as truely I must ever acknowledge a beholdingnesse vnto him: although the streame of it fell out not to be so sweet as the spring. For after some dayes being there (curing our selves of such wounds as we had receiued, while I, causing diligent search to be made of Anaxius, could learn nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrie, boastling in euerie place, how he had made me run away) we were brought to receiue the fauour of acquaintance with this Queene Andromana, whom the Princeffe Pamela did in so liuely colours describe the last day, as still me-thinke the figure therof possesseth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my selfe had.

And therefore I shall neede the lesse to make you know what kinde of woman she was; but this onely, that first with the rares of affections, and after with the very vs of directing, she had made her selfe so absolute a maister of her husbands minde, that a while he would
The Countesse of Pembroke's would not, and after, he could not tell how to govern, without being governed by her: but finding an ease in not understanding, let loose his thoughts wholly to pleasure, entrusting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affairs. A thing that may luckily fall out to him that hath the blessing, to match with some Heroicall minded Ladie. But in him it was neither guided by wisdome, nor followed by Fortune, but thereby was slippe insensible into such an estate, that he liued at her undiscreete discretion: all his subiectes having by some yeares learned, so to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely fro her, that it should haue neded a stronger vertue the his, to haue vnwound so deeply an entred vice. So that either not striving (because he was contented) or contented (because he would not strive) he scarce knewe what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleased her Instrumentes to frame the relation.

Now we being brought knowen vnto her (the time that we spent in curing some very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were sooner then our felues expected) she continuallie almost haunted vs, till (and it was not long a doing) we discovered a most violent bent of affection: and that so strangely, that we might well see, an euill minde in authority, dooth not onely follow the sway of the desires alreadie within it, but frames to it selfe new desires, not before thought of. For, with equall ardour she affected vs both: and so did her greatnes disdain shamefastnes, that she was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (hauing many times torne the vaile of modestie) it seeemed, for a late delight, that she delighted in infamy: which often she had vised to her husbands shame, filling all
Arcadia. Lib. 2. 192

all mens cares (but his) with reproch; while he (hood-wink't with kindnes) left of al mē knew who strake him. But her first degree was, by setting foorth her beauties, (truely in nature not to be misliked, but as much adua-ced to the eye, as abased to the judgemēt by arte) there-by to bring vs (as willingly-caught fishes) to bite at her baite. And thereto had she that scutchion of her desires supported by certain badly-diligēt ministors, who ofte cloyd our cares with her praiifes, & would needs teach vs a way of felicitie by seeking her fauor. But when she found, that we were as deaf to the, as dumb to her; then she lifted no lōger stay in the suburbs of her foolish de-sires, but directly entred vpō the; making her selfe an im-pudent futer, authorizing her selfe very much with making vs see that all fauor & power in that realm, so depė-ded vpon her, that now (being in her hands) we were ether to keep, or loose our liberty, at her discretion; which yet she so tēpred, as that we might rather suspect, the she threatē. But whē our wouds grew so, as that they gaue vs leave to trauell, & that she found we were purposed to vse all meanes we could to depart thence, she (with more & more importunatnes) craued that, which in all good maners was ether of vs to be desir'd, or not gran-ted. Truely (most faire & every way excellēt Lady) you would haue wondred to haue seene, how before vs she would confes the contentiō in her own mind, between that louely (indeed most louely) brownes of Musidorus his face, & this colour of mine, which she (in the deci-uable title of affection) would intide beautifull: how her eyes wandered (like a glutton at a feast) from the one to the other; and how her wordes would beginne halfe of the sentence to Musidorus, & end the other half
The Countesse of Pembroke

to Pyrocles: not ashamed (seeing the friendship between us) to desire either of us to be a mediator to the other; as if we should have played a request at Tennis between us: and often wishing, that she might be the angle, where the lines of our friendship might meet, and be the knot which might tie our hearts together. Which proceeding of hers I do the more largely set before you (most deare Lady) that by the foyle thereof, you may see the nobleness of my desire to you, & the warrantableness of your favour to me.

At that Philocles smiled, with a little nod. But (saide Pyrocles) when she perceived no hope by suit to prevail, then (perswaded by the rage of affection, and encouraged by daring to do any thing) she found means to haue vs accused to the King, as though we went about some practise to overthowe him in his owne estate. Which, because of the straunge successess we had in the kingdomes of Phrigia, Pontus & Galatia) seemed not unlikely to him, who (but skimming anything that came before him) was discipled to leave the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who forthwith caused vs to be put in prison, having (while we slept) depriv'd vs of our armour: a prison, indeede iniurious, because a prison, but else well testifying affection, because in all respects as commodious, as a prison might be: and indeede so placed, as she might at all hours, (not scene by many, though she cared not much how many had scene her) come vnto us. Then fell she to haue her desires with threatnings, so that we were in a great perplexitie, restrained to so vnworthie a bondage, and yet restrained by Loue, which (I cannot tell how) in noble mindes, by a certain duey, claims an
an answering. And how much that love might move vs, so much, and more that faultines of her mind removed vs; her beautie being balanced by her shamelesnes.

But that which did (as it were) tie vs in captiuitie, was, that to graunt, had ben wickedly injurious to him, that faued our liues: and to accuse a Ladie that loued vs, of her loue vnto vs, we esteemed almost as dishonorabe: & but by one of those waies we sawe no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be injurious to your eares, which should expresse the manner of her suite: while yet many times earnestnes died her cheekes with the colour of shamefastnes, and wanton languishing borrowed of her eies the downe-cast looke of modestie. But we in the mean time far from loving her, and often assuring her, that we would not so recompense her husbandes fauing of our liues; to such a ridiculous degree of trusting her, she had brought him, that she caused him sende vs worde, that upon our liues, we should doe whatsoever she commande vs: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleasures bent to the preseruation of his estate. But when that made vs rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fell she to seruile entreating vs, as though force could haue bene the schoole of Loue, or that an honest courage would not rather strive against, then yeelde to injurie. All which yet could not make vs accuse her, though it made vs almost pine away for spight, to loose any of our time in so troublesome an idlenesse.

But while we were thus full of wearinesse of what was past; and doubt of what was to follow, Loue (that I thinke in the course of my life hath a sporte sometimes sometimes
to poison me with roses, sometimes to heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedy unto vs: which though it helped me out of that distres, alas the conclusion was such, as I must euer while I liue, think it worse then a wracke, so to haue bene preferued. This King by this Queene had a sonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought vp in the hope of themselves, & already acceptance of the inconstant people, as succes-four of his fathers crowne: whereof he was as worthy, considering his partes, as vnworthie, in respect of the wrong was therby done against the most worthy Plan-gus: whose great defertes now either forgotten, or vn-gratefully remembred, all men set their sayles with the fauourable winde, which blew on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but surely not in their mouths, now giving Plan-gus (who some veares before was their only chapion) the poore efort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that regio, by name Palladim, did with vehement afection love a young Ladie, brought vp in his fathers court, called Zelmame, daughter to that mischie-vously unhappie Prince Pciexitus (of whom already I haue, and sometimes must make, but neuer honorable mention) left there by her father, because of the intricate changeablenes of his estate; he by the motherside being halfe brother to this Queene Andromane, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Loue (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it selfe, so fel it out that this Zelmame, (though truely reason there was enougb to love Palladim) yet could not euer per-suade her hart to yeelde thereunto: with that paine to Palladim, as they feele, that feele an vnloved loue. Yet
Yet loving indeede, and therefore constant, he used still the intercession of diligence and faith, ever hoping, because he would not put him selve into that hell, to be hopeless: untill the time of our being come, and captiued there, brought forth this ende, whiche truly desuyes of me a further degree of sorrow then teares.

Such was therein my ill destinie, that this young Ladie Zelmane (like some unwisely liberall, that more delight to giue presentes, then pay debtes) she chose (alas for the pittie) rather to bestowe her loue (so much vndeferued, as not desired) vpon me, then to recipence him, whose loue (besides many other things) might seeme (even in the court of Honour) justly to claime it of her. But so it was (alas that so it was) whereby it came to passe, that (as nothing doth more naturally follow his caufc, then care to preferue, and benefite doth follow vnstained affection) she felt with me, what I felt of my captiuitie, and straigh laboured to redresse my paine, which was her paine: which she could do by no better meanes, then by vsing the helpe therein of Palladius: who (true Louer) considering what, and not why, in all her commandements; and indeed the concealing from him her affection (which she intituled compassion,) immediately obeyed to impoy his vntermost credite to relieue vs: which though as great, as a beloued son with a mother, faulty otherwise, but not hard harted toward him, yet it could not preuaile to procure vs libertie. Wherefore he sought to haue that by practife, which he could not by prayer. And so being allowed often to visit vs (for indeed our restrains were more, or leffe, according as the ague of
The Countesse of Pembroke's

her passion was either in the fit, or intermission; he vised the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliver vs.

CHAP. 21.

The cause of the Iberian yearly inrestes. Queen Helens prayses. The prize borne by her Knights, which Palladius and the Princes set them to reverse. The inventions and actions of seven tilters. Palladius and the Princes entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it. Andromanas pursiute of them, to the death of her sonne and her selfe.

He time of the marryinge that Queene was every year, by the extreme love of her husband, & the serviceable love of the Courtiers, made notable by some publicke honours, which indeede (as it were) proclaymed to the world, how deare she was to the people. Among other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then Iufts, both with sword and launce, maintained for a seuen-night together: wherein that Nation dooth so excell, bothe for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarily come, some to triue, some to learne, and some to behold.

This day it happened that divers famous Knights came thither fro the court of Helen, Queene of Corinth. a Ladie, whom Fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens mouthes to ioyne with
with the sounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize from all women, that stande in degree of comparison (for as for the two sisters of Arcadia, they are farre beyond all concept of comparison) so hath her government bene such, as hath bene no lesse beautifull to mens judgements, then her beautie to the eiesight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to gouerne a people, in nature mutinously prowde, and alwaies before so vied to hard gouernours, as they knew not how to obey without the sword were drawne. Ye could she for some yeares, so carry her selfe among them, that they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of contempt: & which was notable, euen in the time that many countries were full of wars (which for old grudges to Corinth were thought still would conclude there) yet so handled she the matter, that the threats euersmarted in the threatners; she vling so strange, and yet so well-succeeding a temper, that she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by spors, learned, her Ladies by Loue, chast. For by continually martial exercises without bloud, she made them perfect in that bloudy art. Her sporses were such as caried riches of Knowledge vpó the streame of Delight: & such the behauiour both of her selfe, and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie, not vpon waywardnes, but by choice of worthines: So as it seemed, that court to have bene the mariage place of Loue and Vertue, & that her selfe was a Diana appareled in the garments of Venus. And this which Fame onely deliuered vnto me, (for yet I haue never seene her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (I knowe) knowe her better, being your neere neigh-
neighbour, because you may see by her example (in her selfe wise, and of others beloved) that neither follie is the cause of vehement Loue, nor reproch the effect. For neuer (I thinke) was there any woman, that with more unremoueable determination gaued her self to the coucell of Loue, after she had once set before her mind the worthines of your cousin Amphialus; & yet is neither her wisedome doubted of, nor honour blemished. For (O God) what doth better become wisedome, then to discerne, what is worthy the louing? what more agreeable to goodnes, then to loue it so discerned? and what to greatness of hart, then to be constant in it once loved? But at that time, that Loue of hers was not so publiquely knowne, as the death of Philoxenus, and her search of Amphialus hath made it: but then seemed to haue such leasure to sende thither diverse choyse Knights of her court, because they might bring her, at left the knowledge, perchaunce the honour, of that Triumph.

Wherein so they behauned themselues as for three daies they caried the prize; which being come from so farre a place to disgrace her seruaunts, Palladius (who himselfe had neuer vsed armes) persuaded the Queene Andromana to be content (for the honour sake of her court) to suffer vs two to haue our horse and armour, that he with vs might undertake the recouerie of their lost honour: which she graunted, taking our oth to go no further then her sonne, and neuer to abandon him. Which she did not more for sauing him, then keeping vs: and yet not satisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horsemen to haue eye, that we should not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie the
the young Prince, who (we saw) loued vs. And so the fourth day of that exercise we came into the field: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they should run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battell, till either the strangers, or that countie Knights wan the field.

The first that ran was a braue Knight, whose devise was to come in, all chayned with a Nymph leading him: his Impresa was Against him came forth an Iberian whose manner of entring was, with bagpipes in steed of trumpets; a shepeards boy before him for a Page, and by him a dozen apparelled like shepherds for the fashion, though rich in fluffe, who caried his launces, which though strong to give a launcely blow indeed, yet so were they couloured with hooks neere the mound, that they pretily represeeted shephookes. His own furniture was dreft ouer with wooll, so enriched with Jewels artificially placed, that one would haue thought it a mariage betwene the lowest and the highest. His Impresa was a sheepe marked with pitch, with this word Spotted to be knowne. And because I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among them there was one (they say) that was the Star, wherby his course was only directed. The shepherds attending vpō PHILISIDES went among the, & fag an eclogue, one of the answering another, while the other shepherds pulling out recorders (which poisseft the place of pipes) accorded their musick to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praise:
The Countesse of Pembroke's

I only remember six verses, while having questioned one with the other, of their fellow-shepherds so dainely growing a man of arms, and the cause of his so doing, they thus said.

Me thought some staves he mist: if so, not much amisse:
For where he most would hit, he ever yet did miss.
One said he brake across: full well it so might be.
For never was there man more crossely croft then he.
But most cried, O well broke: O foole full gaily blest.
Where failing is a shame, and breaking is his best.

Thus I have digrest, because his maner liked me well:
But when he began to run against Lelius, it had neere growne (though great loue had ever bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For Philisides breaking his staves with great commendation, Lelius (who was knowne to be second to none in the perfection of that Art) ranne euer ouer his head, but so finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might well see, he shewed more knowledge in missing, then others did in hitting. For with so gallant a grace his stilde came swimming close ouer the crest of the Helmet, as if he would represent the kisse, and not the stroke of Mars. But Philisides was much moved with it, while he thought Lelius would shew a contempt of his youth: till Lelius (who therefore would satisfie him, because he was his friend) made him known, that to such bondage he was for so many courses tyed by her, whose disgraces to him were graced by her excellency, and whose injuries he could never otherwise returne, then honour.

But so by Lelius willing-missing was the odds of the Iberian
Arcadia. Lib. 2. 197

Iberian side, and continued so in the next by the excellent running of a Knight, though fostred so by the Muses, as many times the verie rustick people left both their delights and profits to harken to his songs; yet could he so well performe all armed sports, as if he had never had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wild man; but such a wildnes, as shewed his eye-sight had tamed him, full of withered leaves, which though they fell not, still threatened falling. His Impresa was, a mill-horse still bound to goe in one circle, with this word, Data fata sequentus. But after him the Corinthian Knights absolutely prevailed, especially a great noble man of Corinth, whose deuise was to come without any deuise, all in white like a new knight, as indeed he was; but so new, as his newnes shamed most of the others long exercise. Then another from whose tent I remember a birde was made flie, with such art to carry a written embassage among the Ladies, that one might say, If a liue bird, how so taught: if a dead bird, how so made: Then he, who hidden, man and horse in a great figure liuely representing the Phoenix: the fire tooke so artificially, as it consumed the birde, and left him to rife as it were, out of the ashes thereof. Against whom was the fine frozen Knight, frozen in despair, but his armor so naturally representing Ice, and all his furniture so liuely answering therto, as yet did I neuer see any thing that pleased me better.

But the delight of those pleasing sights have carried me too farre in an unneceffary discourse. Let it then suffice (most excellent Ladie) that you know the Corinthians that morning in the exercise (as they had done the dayes before) had the better; Palladius neither suffering
The Countesse of Pembroke

nor himselfe to take in hand that partie till the afternoon, when we were to fight in troopes, not differing otherwise from earnest, but that the sharpenesse of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall Palladius, especially led by Musidorus, and somewhat aided by me, himselfe truly behauing himselfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honor to rest it selfe that night of the Iberian side: And the next day, both morning, and afternoon being kept by our party. He (that law the time fitte for that delivery he intended) called vnto vs to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and willing by good-will, obeyed: and so the gard not daring to interrupt vs (he commanding passage) we went after him vpon the spur to a little house in a forrest neere by: which he thought would be the fittest resting place, till we might go further from his mothers fury, whereat he was no lesse angry, & ashamed, then desirous to obey Zelmane.

But his mother (as I learned since) understanding by the gard her sonnes conuaying vs away (forgetting her greatnes, & refining modesty to more quiet thoughts) flew out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for she her-selfe would follow vs. But what she did (being rather with vehemency of passion, then conduct of reason) made her stumble while she ran, & by her owne confusion hinder her owne desires. For so impatiently she commanded, as a good while no body knew what she commanded; so as we had gotten so far the start, as to be already past the confines of her kingdome before she ouertooke vs: and ouertake vs she did in the kingdome of Bythinia, not regarding shame, or daunger of hauing entred into anothers dominions: but (hauing with her about
about a three score horsemen straight commanded to take vs alive, and not to regard her sonnes threatening therein: which they attempted to do, first by speech, & then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor fearing their might, we esteemed few swordes in a just defence, able to resist any vnjust assaulter. And so Musidorus incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and Palladius, so good way, that we had little to do to overcome weake wrong.

And now had the victorie in effect without blood, when Palladius (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) so pursu’d our affaylers, that one of them (who as I heard since had before our comming bene a special minion of Andromanas, and hated vs for hauing disposi’d him of her hart) taking him to be one of vs, with a traiterous blow flew his yong Prince; who falling downe before our eyes, whom he specially had deliuered, judge (sweetest Lady) whether anger might not be called iustice in such a case: once, so it wrought in vs, that many of his subiects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world.

All this while disdaine, strengthened by the furie of a furious loue, made Andromana stay to the last of the combat: & whé she saw vs light down, to see what help we might do to the helpless Palladius, she came runing madly vnfo vs, then no lesse threatening, when she had no more power to hurt. But when she perceiued it was her onely sonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was so deadly, as that already his life had lost the vse of the reasonable, and almost sensible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owne ouglineffe upon his faulte, and make her see what she had done, and to what she was come: especiallie, finding in vs rather detestation then
then pitty (considering the losse of that young Prince)
and resolution pretendly to depart, which stil the laboured
to stay. But depriv’d of all comfort, with eyes full
of death, she ranne to her sonnes dagger, and before we
were aware of it (who else could have stay’d it) strike
her selfe a mortall wound. But then her loue, though
not her person, awaked pitty in vs; and I went to her,
while Musidorus labored about Palladius. But the wound
was past the cure of a better surgeon than myself, so as
I could but receaue some few of her dying words;
which were curlings of her ill set affection, and wishing
unto me many crosse & mischances in my loue, whether
soever I should loue, wherein I seare, and only seare that
her prayer is from aboue granted. But the noifce of this
fight, & issue thereof being blazed by the country peo-
ple to some noble men thereabouts, they came thither,
and finding the wrong offered vs, let vs go on our jour-
ney, we having recommended those royal bodies unto
there to be conveyed to the King of Iberia. With that Phi-
locles, seeing the teares stand in his eyes with remem-
brance of Palladius, but much more of that which ther-
vpon grew, she would needs drinke a kisse from those
eyes, and he sucke another from her lippes; whereat she
blushed, & yet kiss’d him againe to hide her blushing.
Which had almost brought Pyrocles into another dis-
course, but that she with so sweete a rigor forbad him,
that he durst not rebell, though he found it a great war
to keepe that peace, but was faine to go on his storie:
for so she absolutely badde him, and he durst not know
how to disobey.

CHAP.
A new complaint of Pamphilus new change, to a graceless curtisen. Zelmand loyse, and as a Page serves Pyrocles. The two Princes policie to reconcile two warring brothers. The unbrotherly brave combat of Tydeus and Telenor. Plexitus his viperine unkindnes to the kindest Leonatus. His conquest by the two brothers, and his dogtrick to destroy them by themselves. The regrets of the dying brothers.

O (said he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abased himselfe of his greatest height, we sawe sittting upon the drie sandes (which yeelded at that time a verie hote reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whose gesture accused her of much sorow; & every way shewed she cared not what paine she put her body to, since the better parte (her minde) was laide under so much agonie: and so was she dulled withall, that we could come so neare, as to heare her speeches, and yet she not perceive the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might understand her at times, say, Thou doost kill me with thy vnkind falshood: and if it greeues me not to die, but it greeues me that thou art the murtherer: neither doth mine owne paine so much vexe me, as thy errour. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be slaine for thee, but much it tormets me to be slain by thee. Thou art vntrue, Pamphilus, thou art vntrue, and woe is me there-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

therefore. How oft didst thou sweare unto me, that the Sun should looke his light, and the rocks runne vp and down like little kiddles, before thou wouldst falsifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy shining, & rockes runne mad for sorrow, for Pamphilus is false. But alas, the Sun keepes his light, though thy faith be darckned; the rockes stand still, though thou change like the wethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I coulde grasppe water, and binde the winde. I might well have knowe thee by others, but I would not; & rather wished to learne poison by drinking it my selfe, while my loue helped thy wordes to deceuie me. Well, yet I would thou hadst made a better choise, when thou didst forsake thy vnfortunate Leucippe. But it is no matter, Baccha (thy new mistres) will reuenge my wrongs. But do not Baccha, let Pamphilus liue happie, though I die.

And much more to such like phrase she spake, but that I (who had occasion to know some-thing of that Pamphilus) stept to comfort her: & though I could not doe that, yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the fame Leucippe, to whom the vnconstant Pamphilus had betrothed himselfe, which had moued the other Ladies to such indignation as I tolde you: neither her woorthinesse (which in truthe was great) nor his owne sufferinge for her (which is woont to endeare affection) could fetter his fikklenes, but that before his mariage-day appointed, he had taken to wife that Baccha, of whom she complayne; one, that in divers places I had heard before blazed, as the most impudentlie vnchaste woman of all Asia; and withall, of such an imperiousnes therein, that she would not stick to employ them (whom she made vnhappie with her favoure) to draw
draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whom she did no lesse glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by braue souldiers: wardly proud, and therefore bold, because extremely faultie: and yet having no good thing to redeeme both these, and other vnlovely parts, but a little beautie, disgraced with wandring eyes, and vnwaied speeches; yet had Pamphilus (for her) left Leucippe, and withall, left his faith: Leucippe, of whom one looke (in a cleere judgement) would haue bene more acceptable, then all her kindenesse so prodigallie bestowed. For my selfe, the remembrance of his crueltie to Dido, joyned to this, stirred me to seeke some reuenge vpon him, but that I thought, it shoulde be a gayne to him to lose his life, being so matched: and therefore (leauing him to be punished by his owne election) we conveyed Leucippe to a house thereby, dedicated to Vesta all Nunnes, where she resolued to spende all her yeares (which her youth promised shoule be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong-dooper.

But the next morning, we (hauing striuen with the Sunnes earlines) were scarcely beyond the prospect of the high turrets of that building, when there ouertooke vs a young Gentleman, for so he seemed to vs, but indeede (sweete Ladie) it was the faire Zelmae. Plexvitus daughter, whom vnconsulting affection (vnfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe so much or her naturall modestie, as to leauing her more-decent rayments, and taking occasion of Andromanas tumultuous pursuuing vs, had apparrelled her selfe like a Page, with a pittifull crueltie cutting of her golden haire, leauing nothing, but the short curles, to couer that noble head,
but that she ware vpon it a faire head-peeces, a shielde at her back, and a launce in her hand, els disarmed. Her apparrell of white, wrought vpon with broken knots, her horse, faire & luftie, which she rid so, as might shew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which she knew that she knew not how to doo: and the sweetnes of her countenance did giue such a grace to what she did, that it did make hansome the vnhansemnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleue, that there was a praise in that vnskilfulnesse. But she straight approached me, and with fewe words (which borrowed the help of her countenance to make themselves understood) she defire me to accept her in my seruice; telling me, she was a noble-mans sonne of Iberia, her name Daiphantus, who having seene what I had done in that court, had stolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particulars of the maner of Andromanes following me, which by her I understood, she hiding nothing (but her sexe) from me. And still me thought I had seen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far distant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (such I tooke her to be,) admitted this Daiphantus about me: who well shewed, there is no seruice like his, that serues because he loues. For, though borne of Princes bloud, brought vp with tenderest education, vnapt to seruice (because a woman) & full of thoughts (because in a strange estate,) yet Loue enioyed such diligence, that no apprentice, no, no bondslawe could ever be by feare more readie at all commandements, then that yong Princesse was. How often (alas,) did her eyes lay vnto me, that they loued: and yet, I (not looking for such a matter,) had not my conceipt open, to vnder-
vnderstand them. How ofte would she come creeping to me, betweene gladnes to be neere me, & seare to of- senc me? Truly I remember, that then I maruailing, to see her receive my commandements with sighes, & yet do them with cheerefulnes: sometimes answering me in such riddles, as I then thought childish in experience: but since returning to my remembrance, they have come more neere vnto my knowledge: & pardon me (only deare Lady) that I use many words: for her affection to me deserues of me an affectionate speach.

In such sort did she serue me in that kingdom of Bythi- nia, for two moneths space. In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintainted betweene the King of Bythinia and his brother. For my excellent cousin, and I (dividing our felues to either side) found meanes (after some triall we had made of our felues) to get such credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene thes felues, as loue towards vs, for having made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the kingdom of Galatia, towards Thrace, to eafe the care of our father and mother, who (we were sure) first with the shipwracke, and then with the other dangers we dayly past, should have little rest in their thoughts, till they saw vs.

But we were not entred into that Kingdome, whē by the noise of a great fight, we were guided to a pleasaunt valey, which like one of those Circusses, which in great cities some-where doth giue a pleasaunt spectable of running horses; so of either side stretching it selfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by woody hilles; as if indeed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we behelde one of the cruellest fights
The Countesse of Pembroke's

fights betwene two Knights, that ever hath adorned the martial storie. So as I must conte, a while we stood wonderinge, another while delighted with the rare brauyy thereof; till seing such streames of bloud, as threatened a drowning of life, we galloped towarde them to part them. But we were prevented by a dozen armed Knights, or rather villains, who vsing this time of their extreame feebleness, all together set vpon them. But common daunger brake of particular discorde, so that (though with a dying weakencs) with a liuely courage they resisted, and by our help draue away, or slue those murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take alie the principall. But going to disarme those two excellent Knights, we found with no lesse wonder to vs, then astonishment to themselues, that they were the two valiaunt, and indeede famous Brothers, Tydeus and Telenor, whose adventure (as afterwarde we made that vngratious wretch confesse) had thus fallen out.

After the noble Prince Leonatus had by his fathers death succeeded in the kingdome of Galatia, he (forgetting all former injuries) had receiued that naughtie Plexirtus into a straighth degree of favour, his goodness being as apt to be deceived, as the others crafts was to deceiue. Till by plain proofe finding, that the vngratefull man went about to poysone him, yet would not suffer his kindnesse to be over come, not by  outher it selfe: but calling him to him, vsed worde to this purpose. Plexirtus (said he) this wickednesse is founde by thee. No good deeds of mine haue bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men counsell me to take away thy life, likely to bring foorth nothing, but as daunge-
dangerous, as wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in my barte, remembering what fathers sonne thou arte. But since it is the violence of ambition, which perchaunce pul's thee from thine owne judgement, I will see, whether the satisfying that, may quiet the ill working of thy spirites. Not farre hence is the great citty of Trebisonde; which, with the territorie about it, aunciently pertained vnto this crowne, now vniustly possest, and as vniustly abused by those, who haue neither title to holde it, nor vertue to vse it. To the conquest of that for thy selfe I will lende thee force, and giue thee my right. Go therefore, and with lesse vnnaturalnesse glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it be possible, lesse vertue.

Plexirus: mingling forsworne excuses with falsemeant promises, gladly embraced the offer: and hastily yending backe for those two Brothers (who at that time were with vs succouring the gratious Queen Erone) by their vertue chiefly (if not onely) obtayned the conquest of that goodly dominion. Which indeede done by them, gaue them such an authoritie, that though he reigned, they in effect ruled, most men honouring them, because they onely deserued honour; and many, thinking therein to please Plexirus, considering how much he was bound vnto them: while they likewise (with a certaine sincere bolenesse of selfe-warranting friendship) accepted all openly and plainely, thinking nothing should euer by Plexitus be thought too much in them, since all they were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his owne mind, could construe no other end of mēs doings, but selfe-seking) sodely feared,
feared what they could doo; and as sodainely suspec-
ted, what they would doo, and as sodainely hated
them, as hauing both might, and minde to doo. But
dreading their power, standing so strongly in their
owne valour, & others affection, he durst not take open
way against them: and as harde it was to take a secrete,
they being so continually followed by the best, & eue-
ry way hablest of that region: and therefore vsed this
dielish sleight (which I wil tel you) not doubting (most
wicked man) to turne their owne frindship toward him
to their owne destruction. He, (knowing that they wel
knew, there was no friendship betwene him and the
new King of Pontus, neuer since he succoured Leonas-
tus and vs, to his overthrow) gane them to understand
that of late there had passed secrete defiance betwene
them, to meete priuately at a place apointed. Which
though not so fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet
was his honour so engaged, as he could not go backe.
Yet faining to find himself weake by some counterfeit
infrimitie, the day drawing neere, he requestred each of
them to go in his stead, making either of the sweare, to
keep the matter secrete, euery eache from other, deliuering the
selfe same particularities to both, but that he told Tyde-
ws, the King would meet him in a blew armour; & Tele-
nor, that it was a black armour: & with wicked subtiltie
(as if it had bene so apointed) caused Tydew to take a
black armour, & Tele nor a blew: appointing them waies
how to go, so as he knew they should not meet, til they
came to the place apointed, where each had promis-
ed to keep silence, left the King should discouer it was
not Plixvirtus: and there in await had he laied these mur-
therers, that who ouerliued the other, should by them
be dispatched: he not daring trust more then those, with that enterprize, and yet thinking them too few, till themselves by themselves were weakened.

This we learned chiefly, by the chief of those way-beaters, after the death of those worthie brothers, whose love was no lesse then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull lamentation, when they knew their mismeeting, and saw each other (in despite of the Surgerie we could doo vnto them) struing who should runne fastest to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himselfe: cursing their owne hands for doing, and their breasts for not sooner suffering: detesting their unfortunatly spent time in haung feru-de so vngrateful a Tyrant: and accusing their folly in haung beneued, he could faithfully loue, who did not loue faithfullnes: wishing vs to take heed, how we placed our good wil vp on any other ground, then profe of vertue: since length of acquaintance, mutuall secrecies, nor height of benefits could binde a sauage harte; no man being good to other, that is not good in himself. Then (while any hope was) beêeching vs to leaue the cure of him that besought, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themselves, and vs, no possibilitie, they desired to be joined, and so embracing and crauing that pardon each of other, which they denied to themselves, they gaue vs a most sorowfull spectacle of their death, leaving fewe in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had soone enough known the ground and limits of friendship. But with wofull hartes, we caused those bodies to be conveyed to the nexte towne of Bythina, where we learning
The Countesse of Pembroke

Learning thus much (as I have tolde you) caused the wicked Historian to conclude his history, with his owne well-deserved death.

CHAP. 23.

1 Zelmanes griefe for Plexirius fault. 1 Otaues, and his Gyaunts warre on Pontus. 1 Plexirius endeavoured, needes helpe of the dead brothers. 1 Zelmane thought-sick, unmaskes her selfe. 1 Her dying teares and last requestes. 1 Musidorus to Pontus, Pyrocles hardly partes to save Plexirius. 1 The soure and course of his deaths-doome, stayed by Pyrocles. 1 The combat of Pontus well ended. 1 The Asian Princes meeting, to honour the two Greekes.

B

Ver then (I must tell you) I found such woeful countenances in Daphntus, that I could not but much marvel (finding them continew beyond the first affault of pittie) how the cause of strangers (for further I did not conceiue) could so deeply parea. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the shame & sorrow she tooke of her fathers faultiness, partly with the feare, that the hate I conceiued against him, would utterly disgrace her in my opinion, whensoever I should know her, so vehemently perplexed her, that her fayre colour decaied; and dayly, and hastily grew into the very extreme working of sorrowfullnesse: which oft I sought to learne, & helpe. But she, as fearefull as louing, still concealed it, and
and so decaying still more and more, in the excellence of her faireness, but that whatsoever weakenesse took away, pitie seemed to add: yet still she forced her selfe to waite on me, with such care and diligence, as might well shew had bene taught in no other schoole, but Loue.

While we returning againe to embarke our felues for Greece, understood that the mighty Otauæs (brother to Barzanes slaine by Mysidorus, in the bataile of the six Princes) had entered vpó the kingdome of Pontus, partly upon the pretences he had to the crowne, but principally, because he would revenge vpon him (whom he knew we loued) the losse of his brother: thinking (as indeede he had cause) that whilesoeuer we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieue him; in spite whereof he doubted not to preuaile, not onely upon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but especially because he had in his company two mighty Giants, sonnes to a couple whom we flue in the same realme: they, hauing bene absent at their fathers death, and now returned, willingly entered into his service, hating (more then he) both vs, and that King of Pontus. We therefore withall speede went thetherwarde, but by the way this fell out, which whensoeuer I remembre without sorrow, I must forget withall, all humanitie.

Poore Daiphantus fell extreme sick, yet would needs conquer the delicacie of her constitution, and force her selfe to waite on me: till one day going towarde Pontus, we met one, who in great hast went seeking for Tydeus & Telenor, whose death as yet was not knowne vnto the messenger, who (being their servaunt and knowing,
The Countesse of Pembroke

knowing how dearly they loued Plesiturus) brought them word, how since their departing, Plesiturus was in present danger of a cruel death, if by the valiantnesse of one of the best Knightes of the world, he were not refreshed: we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he should now to his loffe finde what an unprofitable treason it had bene vnto him, to dismember himselfe of two such friends) and so let the messenger part, not sticking to make him know his masters destruction, by the falsehood of Plesiturus.

But the griefe of that (finding a bodie alreadie brought to the last degree of weakenesse) so overwhelmed the little remnant of the spirits left in Daiphantus, that he fell sodainely into deadly soundings; never comming to her selfe, but that withall she returned to make most pittifull lamentations; most strange vn-to vs, because we were farre from gheesing the ground thereof. But finding her sicknesse such, as beganne to print death in her eyes, we made al haste possible to convey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a bed, both we, & she might finde in herselfe, that the harbinger of ouer-hastie death, had prepared his lodging in that daintie body, which she undoubtedely feeling, with a weak chearfulnes, shewed comfort therin, and then desiring vs both to come neere her, & that no bodie els might be present, with pale, and yet (euen in palenes) louely lippes. Now or never, and never indeed, but now it is time for me (saide she) to speake: and I thanke death which gaue me leave to discouer that, the suppressing whereof perchance hath bene the sharpest spur, that hath hasted my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and especially you my Lord and ma-
fter, Pyrocles, that your page Daiphantius is the vnfortunat Zelmane, who for your sake caused my (as vnfortunate) louer, and cofen, Palladian, to leaue his fathers court, and cofequently, both him & my Aunt his mother, to loofe their liues. For your sake my felfe haue become, of a Princesse a Page: and for your sake haue put off the apparell of a woman, & (if you judge not more mercifully) modestie. We were amazed at her speach, and thé had (as it were) new eyes giue vs to perceue that which before had bene a present straiger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of Zelmane, who before we had knownen in the court of Iberia. And forrow and pittie laying her paine vpon me, I comforted her the beft I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recovery.

But she that had inward ambassadors from the tyrat that should shortly oppresse her. No, my deere master (said she). I neither hope nor desiere to liue. I know you would neuer haue loued me (& with that she wept) nor, alas, had it bene reason you should, considering manie wayes my vnworthines. It sufficeth me that the strange course I haue také, shall to your remembrance, witnesse my loue: and yet this breaking of my harte, before I would discouer my paine, will make you (I hope) think I was not altogether vnmodest. Thinke of me so, deare Master, and that thought shal be my life: and with that, languishingly looking vpon me; And I pray you (said she) euyn by these dying eies of mine (which are onely forrie to dye, because they shal lose your sight) and by these pouled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my fex, now in their short curles
curles, the testimonie of my servitude) and by the ser-
vice I haue done you (which God knowes hath beene
full of loue) thinke of me after my death with kindnes,
though ye cannot with loue. And whensoever ye shall
make any other Ladie happie with your placed affec-
tion, if you tell her my folly, I pray you speake of it, not with
scorne, but with pitie. I asseure you (deare Princesse of my
life, for how could it be otherwise) her words and her
manners, with the liuely consideration of her loue, so
pearced me, that I, though I had divers griefes before,
yet me thought I never felt till then, how much sorrow
enfeecth all resolution. For I could not chuse, but
yeld to the weaknesses of abundant weeping; in trueth
with such griefe, that I could willingly at that time haue
chaunged liues with her.

6 But when she saw my teares, O God (said she) howe
largely am I recompenced for my losses: why then (said
shee) I may take boldnesse to make some requests vnto
you. I besought her to doo, vowing the performance,
though my life were the price therof. She shewed great
joy: The first (said shee) is this, that you will pardon my
father the displeasure you haue justly conceiued against
him, and for this once succour, him out of the daunger
wherin he is: I hope he will amende: and I pray you,
whensoever you remember him to be the faultie Plexir-
tus, remember withall that he is Zelmanes father. The se-
cond is, that when you come into Greece, you will take
vnto your selfe this name (though vn lucky) of Daiphant-
tus, and vouchsafe to be called by it; for so shal I be sure,
you shall have cause to remember me: and let it please
your noble cousin to be called Palladius, that I doo that
right to that poore Prince, that his name may yet liue
upon
upon the earth in so excellent a person; and so betwene
you, I trust sometimes your vnluckie page shall be (per-
haps with a sigh) mentioned. Lastly, let me be buried
here obscurely, not sufferinge my friends to knowe my
fortune, till (when you are safely returned to your own
countrie) you cause my bones to be conuoyed thither,
and laid (I beseech you) in some place, where your selfe
vouchsafe sometimes to resort. Alas, small petitions for
such a fute, which yet she so earnestly craued, that I was
faine to sweare the accomplishment. And then kissing
me; & often desiring me not to condemn her of light-
nesse, in mine armes she deliuered her pure soule to the
purest place: leauing me as full of agonie, as kindnes,pitie,and sorrow could make an honest harte. For I must
confesse for true, that if my starres had not wholy refe-
rued me for you, ther els perhaps I might have loued,
& (which had bene most strange) begun my loue after
death: whereof let it be the leffe maruaile, because som-
what shee did resemble you: though as farre short of
your perfectio, as her selfe dying, was of her flourishing;
yet some thing there was, which (when I saw a picture of
yours) brought againe her figure into my remembrance;
and made my harte as apte to receiue the wounde, as
the power of your beauty with unresistable force to
pearce.

But we in wofull (& yet priuat) maner buryinge her,
performing her commandement: & then enquiring of
her fathers estate, certainly learned that he was present-
lie to be succourred; or by death to passe the neede of
succour. Therefore we determined to diuide our selues;
I, according to my vowe, to helpe him, and Musidorus
toward the King of Pontus, who stood in no leffe need
The Countess of Pembroke's

then immediate succour, and even ready to depart one from the other, there came a messenger from him, who after some enquiry found vs, giving vs to understand, that he trusting upon vs two, had apointed the combat betweene him & vs, against Ottanes, and the two Cyants. Now the day was so accorded, as it was impossible for me both to succour Plexirtus, & be there, where my honour was not onely gaged so far, but (by the strangee working of vniust fortune) I was to leave the standing by Musidorus, whom better then my selfe I loued, to go saue him whom for iust causes I hated. But my promise giuen, & giuen to Zelmane, & to Zelmane dying, prevailed more with me, then my friendship to Musidorus: though certainly I may affirm, nothing had so great rule in my thoughts as that. But my promise caried me the easier, because Musidorus himselfe would not suffer me to breake it. And so with heavy minds (more careful each of others successe, the of our owne) we parted; I towarde the place, where I understood Plexirtus was prisoner to an auncient Knight, absolutely gouerning a goodly Castle, with a large territory about it, whereof he acknowledged no other soueraigne, but himselfe: whose hate to Plexirtus grew for a kinffman of his, who he malitiously had murdered, because in the time that he reigned in Galatia, he found him apt to practise for the restoring of his vertuous brother Leonatus. This old Knight, still thirsting for revenge, used (as the way to it) a pollicie, which this occasion I will tell you, prepared for him. Plexirtus in his youth had married Zelmane's mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widdower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of Armenia; where (as he was comming to winne fa-
he obtained great good liking of Artaxia, which
he pursued, till (being called home by his father) he
fallly got his fathers kingdom; and then neglected his
former love: till thrown out of that (by our means)
before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by again
placed in Trebisonde, understanding that Artaxia by her
brothers death was become Queen of Armenia, he was
hotter then ever, in that pursuit, which being under-
stood by this olde Knight, he forged such a letter, as
might be written from Artaxia, entreating his present
(but very priuie) repair to ther, giving him faithfull
promise of present marriage: a thing farre from her
thought, having faithfully, and publiquely protested,
that she would never marry any, but some such Prince
who would giue sure proofe, that by his means we
were destroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then
blinde to judge hopes) hastily at the bait, and in
private manner posteth toward her, but by the way he
was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who
quickly laid holde of him, & condemned him to death,
cruell enouh, if any thing may be both cruell and juist.
For he caused him to be kept in a miserable prizon, till a
day appointed, at which time he would deliver him to
be devoured by a monstrous beast, of most vgly shape,
armed like a Rhinoceros, as strong as an Elephant, as
fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a Leopard, and as cruell as
a Tigre: whom he having kept in a strong place, from
the first youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then
such a beastly monster with a monstrous Tyrant: pro-
claiming yet withall, that if any so well loued him, as to
venture their lives against this beast, for him, if they o-
ercame, he should be saued: not caring how many
they were (such confidence he had in the monsters strength) but especially hoping to entrappe therby the great courages of Tydeus and Telenor, whom he no lesse hated, because they had bene principal instruments of the others power.

I dare say, if Zelmane had known what daunger I should have passed, she would rather have let her father perish; then me to have bidden that aduenture. But my word was past, and truely, the hardnes of the enterprise was not so much a bite, as a spurre vnto me, knowing well, that the iorney of high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking sufficient securitie, that Plexirtus should be deliuered if I were victorious, I undertooke the combatt: and (to make shorthe, excellent Ladie, and not trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) so was my weakenes blessed from aboue, that without dangerous wounds I flewe that monstre, which hundreds durste not attempt: to so great admiration of many (who from a safe place might looke on) that there was order giuen to have the fight, both by sculpture and picture, celebrated in most parts of Asia. And the olde nobleman so well liked me, that he loued me; onely bewayling, my vertue had bene imployed to saue a worse monstre then I killed: whom yet (according to faith giuen) he deliuered, and accompanied me to the kimgdome of Pontus, whether I would needes in all speede go, to see whether it were possible for me (if perchance the day had bene delayed) to come to the combat. But that (before I came) had bene thus finished.

The vertuous Leonius understanding two so good friends of his were to be in that danger, would perforce be
be one him selfe: where he did valiantly and so did the
King of Pontus. But the truth is, that both they being
fore hurt, the incomparable Musidorus finisht the
combat by the death of both the Giants, and the ta-
kings of Oanes prisoner. To whom as he gaue his life, so
he gotte a noble friend: for so he gaue his worde to be,
and he is well knowne to thinke him selfe greater in be-
ing subject to that, then in the greatnes of his principa-
litie.

But thither (understanding of our being there) dook
ed great multitudes of many great persons, and e-
en of Princes, especially those, whom we had made
beholding vnfo vs: as, the Kings of Phrygia, Bythinia,
with those two hurt,of Pontus and Galatia, and Oanes
the prisoner, by Musidorus set free; and thither came
Plexuris of Trebisonde, and Antiphilus, then King of
Lyca; with as many more great Princes, drawn ether by
our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge them
selues obliged vnfo vs, for what we had done for the
others. So as in those partes of the world, I thinke, it
many hundreds of yeares, there was not seene so royall
an assemblie: where nothing was let passe to doo vs the
highest honors, which such persons (who might com-
mand both purses and intentions) could performe.
All from all sides bringing vnfo vs right royall presents
(which we to aoid the vnkindnes, and importuni-
tie, liberally received,) & not content therewith, would
needes accept, as from vs, their crownes, and acknowl-
dedge to hold them of vs: with many other exceed-
honors, which would not suffer the measure of this
short leasure to describe vnfo you.

CHAP.
CHAP. 24.

The causes and provisions of the Princes embarking for Arcadia. * Plexirtus his treason against them disclosed by one, 1 attempted by another of his ministers. * Sedition and slaughter in the shippe about it. * Their shipwrack by fire. * Pyrocles fight with the Captaine, and escape from sea. * The amorous concluding the olde, and beginning a newe storie, both broken of by Milo.

Vt wee quickly aweary thereof, haste to Greece-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our parents, but hastened principally, because I understoode that Anaximus with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke mee, and was nowe come to Peloponnesus where from Court to Court he made enquerye of me, doing yet himselfe so noble deeds, as might hap to authorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore suffred but short delayes, desiring to take this countrey in our way, so renowned ouer the world, that no Prince coulde pretend height, nor begger lownesse, to barre him from the sound thereof: renowned indeede, not so much for the ancient prayses attributed thereunto, as for the hauing in it Argalus and Amphialus (two knights of such rare prowes, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre, not so much for that, as without suffering of comparison for the beautie of you and your sister, which makes all indifferent judges, that speake
speake thereof, account this country as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed moving vs to come by this land, we embarked our selues in the next porte, whether all those Princes (fauing Antiphilus, who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry long from Brone) conuicis vs. And there found we a ship most royally furnished by Plexirus, who made all things to proper (as well for our defence, as eafe) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repence and in his eies, friendship in his gesture, & vertue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweete Zelmane to pardon him, now not onely forgaue, but began to fauour; persuading our selues with a ythfull credulitie, that perchance things were not so cuil as we tooke them, & as it were desiring our owne memorie, that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, truly not without teares, especially of the vertuous Leonatus, who with the king of Potus, would haue come with vs, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, & both their new settled kingdoms) would not suffer it. Then would they haue sent whole fleets to guard vs: but we, that desired to passe secretly into Greece, made them leave that motion, when they found that more ships, then one, would be displeasing vnto vs. But so omitting our selues to the uncertaine discretion of the wind, we (then determining as foone as we came to Greece, to take the names of Daiphantus and Palladius, as well for our owne promise to Zelmane, as because we desired to come vnowne into Greece) left the Asian shore full of Princely persons, who euen vpon their knees, recommended our safeties to the devotion of
Their chief desires: among whom none had been so officious (though I dare affirm, all quite contrarie to his unfaithfulness) as Plexirus.

So having failed almost two daies, looking for nothing but when we might looke upon the land, a graue man (whom we had feene of great trust with Plexirus, and was sent as our principall guide) came vnto vs, and with a certaine kinde manner, mixt with shame, and repentance, began to tell vs, that he had taken such a loue vnto vs (considering our youth and fame) that though he were a seruaunt, and a seruaunt of such trust about Plexirus, as that he had committed vnto him euen those secretes of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to reuale at this time a most pernicious counsell, then by concealing it bring to ruin those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and tolde vs, that Plexirus (in hope thereby to haue Artaxia, endow'd with the great Kingdome of Armenia, to his wife) had gien him order, when we were neere Greece, to finde some opportunitie to murder vs, bidding him to take vs a sleepe, because he had seene what we could do waking. Now firs (said he) I would rather a thousand times loose my life, then haue my remembrance (while I liued) poison'd with such a mischiefe: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then should my disobedience be a warrant of your safetie. But to one more (said he) namely the Captaine of the shippe, Plexirus hath open'd so much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think, laying the cause rather vpon old grudge, then his hope of Artaxia. And my selfe, (before the consideration of
of your excellencies had drawne loue and pittie into minde) imparted it to such, as I thought fittest for such a mischiefe. Therefore, I wishe you to stand upon your garde, assuring you, that what I can doo for your safetie, you shall see (if it come to the pufhe) by me perfourmed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deserved, and from that time would no more disarme our felues, nor the one sleepe without his friendes eyes waked for him: so that it delayed the going forwarde of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then providence, which made vs to be- haue our felues.

But when we came within halfe a daies laying of the shore, soone they saw it was speedily, or not at all to be done. Then (and I remember it was about the first watch in the night) came the Captaine and whifpered the Councellour in the eare: But he (as it should seem) disswading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice sware, that if Plexirtus bad him, he would not sticke to kill God him selfe. And therewith cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take vs, alue or dead; encouraging the with the spoile of vs, which he said, (& indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich jewels. But the Councellour (according to his promise) commanded them they should not comit such a villany, protesting that he would staid betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Where- with the Captaine enraged: Nay (said he) the we must begin with this traitor him selfe: and therewith gaue him a fore blow vpon the head, who honestly did the best he could to reuenge himselfe.
But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for mischicte. And so against the Captaine we went, who straight was environned with most parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the truth is, there were some, whom either the authoritie of the councellour, doubt of the Kings minde, or liking of vs, made draw their swors if our side: so that quickly it grew a most confused fight. For the narrownesse of the place, the darkenesse of the time, and the uncertainty in such a tumult how to know frieuds from foes, made the rage of swordes rather guide, then be guided by their maisters. For my cousin and me, truly I thinke we never perfourmed leffe in any place, doing no other hurte, then the defence of our selues, and succouring them who came for it, drave us to: for not discerning perfectlie, who were for, or against vs, we thought it leffe euill to spare a foe, then spoyle a friend. But from the hieft to the lowest parte of the shippe there was no place lefte, without cries of murdring, and murdered persons. The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was druen to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who received a mortall wounde, mistaken of one of his owne side. Some of the wiser would call to parley, & with peace, but while the wordes of peace were in their mouthes, some of their auditours gane them death for their hire. So that no man almost could conceiue hope of living, but being lefte aliue: and therefore every one was willing to make himselfe roome, by dispatching almost any other: so that the great number in the ship was reduced to exceeding few, when of those few the most part weary of those troubles leapt into the boate, which
which was fast to the ship: but while they that were first were cutting off the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, so disorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themselves.

But while euen in that little remnant (like the children of Cadmus) we continued still to slay one an-ther, a fire, which (whether by the desperate malice of some, or intention to separate, or accidentally while all things were cast up and downe) it should seeme had taken a good while before, but neuer heeded of vs, (who onely thought to preferue, or reuenge) now violently burst out in many places, and began to maister the principall partes of the ship. Then necessitie made vs see, that a common enimie sets at one a civill warre: for that little all we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) straight went to refieth that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was too late, for already it did embrace and devoure from the sterne, to the waft of the ship: so as labouring in vaine, we were driuen to get vp to the prow of the ship, by the worke of nature seeking to preferue life, as long as we could: while truely it was a straunge and ougly fight, to see so huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light vs to death. And by and by it had burned off the maste, which all this while had proudly borne the Sayle (the winde, as might seeme, delighted to carrie fire and blood in his mouth) but now it fell ouer boord, and the fire growing neerer vs, it was not onely terrible in respect of what we were to attend, but insupportable through the heat of it.

So that we were constrained to bide it no longer; but
but disarming and stripping our felues, and laying our
felues vpon such things, as we thought might help our
swimming to the lande (too far for our owne strength
to beare vs) my cousin and I threw our felues into
the Sea. But I had swomme a very little way, when I felt
(by reason of a wound I had) that I should not be able
to bide the trauaile, and therefore seeing the maste
(whose tackling had bene burnt of ) flote cleare from
the ship, I swamme vnto it; and getting on it, I found
mine owne sworde, which by chaunce, when I threw
it away (caught by a pece of canuas) had honge to the
maste. I was glad, because I loued it well; but gladder,
when I saw at the other end, the Captaine of the ship,
and of all this mischiefe; who hauing a long pike, be-
like had borne him selfe vp with that, till he had set
him selfe vpon the maste. But when I perceiued him,
Villaine (laid I) doost thou thinke to ouerliue so many
honest men, whom thy falsehhood hath brought to de-
straction? with that bestriding the maste, I gat by little
and little towards him, after such a manner as boies are
wont (if euer you saw that sport) when they ride the
wild mare. And he perceiuing my intention, like a fel-
low that had much more courage then honestie, let
him selfe to resift. But I had in short space gotten with-
in him, and (giving him a found blowe) sent him to
feede fishe. But there my selfe remainde, vntill by py-
rates I was taken vp, and among them againe taken pri-
soner, and brought into Laconia.

7 But what (said Philocles) became of your cousin My-
dorus? loth said Pyrocles. Ah my Pyrocles, said Philioples,
I am glad I haue take you. I perceiue you louers do not
always say truely: as though I know not your cousin

Dorus.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Doros, the sheepeheard: Life of my desires (saide Pyrocles) what is mine, even to my soule is yours: but the secret of my friend is not mine. But if you know so much, then I may truely say, he is lost, since he is no more his owne. But I perceiue, your noble sister & you are great friends, and well doth it become you so to be. But go forward deare Pyrocles, I log to heare out till your meeting me; for there to me-warde is the best part of your storie. Ah sweet Philoclea (saide Pyrocles) do you thinke I can thinke so precious leyasure as this wel spent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thinke you) to reade a tale upon? Is my loue quiet enough to be an historian? Deare Princesse, be gracious vnto me. And then he faine would haue remembred to haue forgot himselfe. But she, with a sweetly disobeying grace, desired that her desire (once for euer) might ferue, that no spotte might disgrace that loue which shortly she hoped shold be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not haue heard, till she threatned anger. And then the poore louer durst not, because he durst not. Nay I pray thee, deare Pyrocles (saide she) let me haue my story. Sweet Princesse (saide he) giue my thoughts a little respite: and if it please you, since this time must so be spoiled, yet it shall suffer the lesse harms, if you vouchsafe to bestow your voice, and let me know, how the good Queene Erona was betrayed into such dager, and why Plangus sought me. For in deede, I should pitie greatly any mishchance fallen to that Princesse. I will, said Philoclea smiling, so you giue me your worde, your handes shall be quiet auditors. They shal, said he, because subiect. Then began she to speake, but with so prettie and delightfull a maieftie, when she set her countenaunce to tell the matter, that Pyrocles could not chuse but rebell so far, as to kisse her.

Ee 4 She
The Countesse of Pembroke

She would have pulled her head away, and spoke, but while she spake he kissed, and it seemed he fedde upon her words: but she gate away. Howe will you haue your discourse (said she) without you let my lips alone? He yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (said he) will I revenge my wrong: and so began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by Mifo: who taking her time, while Basilius backe was turned, came vnto them: and told Philoclea, she desuere she knew what, for leaving her mother, being euill at ease, to keepe companie with strange persons. But Philoclea telling her, that she was there by her fathers commandement, she went away muttering, that though her back, and her shoulders, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wagge, it should do her errand to her mother.

CHAP. 25.


O went vp Mis to Gynecia, who was at that time miserably vexed with this manner of dreame. It seemed vnto her to be in a place full of thornes, which so molested her, as she could neither abide standing still, nor treade safely going forward. In this case she thought Zel
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

mane, being upon a faire hill, delightful to the eye, and easie in apperance, called her thither: whither with much anguish being come, Zelmane was vanished, and she found nothing but a dead bodie like unto her husband, which seeming at the first with a strange smell to infect her, as she was redie likewise within a while to die, the dead bodie, she thought, tooke her in his armes, and said, Gynecia, leave all, for here is thy onely rest.

With that she awaked, crying very loud, Zelmane, Zelmane. But remembring her selfe, and seeing Basilius by, (her guiltie conscience more suspecting, then being suspected) she turned her call, and called for Philoclea. Miso forthwith like a valiant shrew, (looking at Basilius, as though she would speake though she died for it) tolde Gynecia, that her daughter had bene a whole houre together in secrete talke with Zelmane: And (layes she) for my part I could be not be heard (your daughters are brought vp in such awe) though I tolde her of your pleasure sufficiently. Gynecia, as if she had heard her last doome pronounced agaynst her, with a side-looke and changed countenance, O my Lord (said she) what meane you to suffer these yong folkes together? Basilius (that aymed nothing at the marke of her suspicion) smilingly tooke her in his armes, sweete wife (said he) I thank you for your care of your childe: but they must be youthes of other mettall, then Zelmane, that can enaduenger her. O but, cryed Gynecia, and therewith she stayed: for then indeede she did suffer a right conflict, betwixt the force of loue, and rage of iaelousie. Manie times was she about to satisfie the spite of her minde, and tell Basilius, how she knewe Zelmane to be farre otherwise then the outward
warde appearance. But those many times were all put backe, by the manifolde objections of her vehement loue. Faine she would have barde her daughters happe, but loth she was to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene set vpon a wager of quicke rying, as weake as she was, she gat vp; though Basilius, (with a kindnesse flowing onely from the fountaine of vnkindnesse, being in deede desirous to winne his daughter as much time as might be) was loth to suffer it, swearing he sawe sickenesse in her face, and therefore was loath she should adventure the ayre.

But the great and wretched Ladie Gynecia, possessed with those deuils of Loue and Iealousie, did rid herself from her tedious husbande: and taking no body with her, going toward the; O Iealousie (laid she) the phrensie of wise folkes, the well-wishing spite, and vnkinde carefulnesse, the selfe-punishment for others faults, and selfe-miserie in others happiness, the cousin of enuie, daughter of loue, & mother of hate, how couldest thou so quietly get thee a seate in the vnquiet hart of Gynecia, Gynecia (laid she) fighing thought wise, and once veruous: Alas it is thy breeders power which plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that works the chilling accesse of thy feuer, in such sort, that nature giues place; the growing of my daughter seemes the decay of my selfe; the blessings of a mother turne to the curses of a competitor; and the faire face of Philoclea, appears more horrible in my sight, then the image of death. Then remembred she this song, which she thought tooke a right measure of her present mind.

With
With two strange fires of equall heate possesse,
The one of Loue, the other Jealousie.
Both still do worke, in neither finde I rest:
For both, alas, their strengthes together tie:
The one aloft doth holde, the other hie.
Loue wakes the jealous eye least thence it moves.
The jealous eye, the more it lookes, it loyts.

These fires increase: in these I dayly burne:
They seade on me, and with my wings do flye:
My lovely joyes to dolesfull ashes turne:
Their flames mount up, my powers prostrate lie:
They live in force, I quite consumed die.
One wonder yet farre passeth my conceate:
The deceit small: how be the fires so great?

But her vnleasurethoughtes ran not ouer the ten
first wordes; but going with a pace, not so much too fast
for her bodie, as flowe for her minde, she found them
together, who after Misos departure, had left their
tale, and determined what to say to Basilius. But full
abashed was poore Philoclea, ( whose conscience
now began to knowe cause of blushing) for first fa-
lutation, receyuing an eye from her mother, full of
the same disdainefull scorne, which Pallas shewed to
poore Arachne, that durst contende with her for
the prize of well weaung: yet did the force of loue
so much rule her, that though for Zelmanes sake she did
detest her, yet for Zelmanes sake she vsed no harder
words to her, then to bid her go hom, and accompany
her solitarie father.
Then began she to display to Zelmane the storthome of her deadly desires, when sodainly the confused rumor of a mutinous multitude gave iust occasion to Zelmane to breake of any such conference, (for well she found, they were not friendly voices they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conueniently they could, towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne the lodge by twentie paces, they were ouertaken by an unruly sort of clownes, and other rebels, which like a violent floud, were caried, they themselves knewe not whether. But asloone as they came within perfect discerning these Ladies, like enraged beaustes, without respect of their estates, or pitie of their sexe, they began to runne against them, as right villaines, thinking ability to doo hurt, to be a great aduancement: yet so many as they were, so many almost were their mindes, all knitte together onely in madnes. Some cried, Take some, Kill some, Saue: but euern they that cried Saue, ran for companie with them that meant to kill. Every one commaunded, none obeyed, he only seemed chief Captain, that was most ragefull.

Zelmane (whose vertuous courage was euer awake) drew out her sword, which vpon those ill-armed churls giving as many wounds as blowes, & as many deathes almost as wounds (lightning courage, and thundering smart vpon them) kept them at a bay, while the two Ladies got the selues into the lodge: out of the which, Basilius (hauing put on an armour long vntried) came to proue his authoritie among his subjects, or at leaft, to aduenture his life with his deare mistresse, to whom he brought a shield, while the Ladies tremblingly attended the issue of this dangerous aduenture. But Zel
made them perceive the odds between an Eagle and a Knight, with such a nimble stayednes, and such an assured nimblenes, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow had her sword in his guts.

And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreased by the comming of Dorus, who haung been making of hurdles for his masters sheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and haung strecth represtented before the eies of his carefull loue, the perill wherein the foule of his foule might be, he went to Pamela's lodge, but found her in a caue hard by, with Mopsa and Dametas, who at that time would not haue opened the entrie to his father. And therefore leaung them there (as in a place safe, both for being strong, and unknowen) he ranne as the noise guyded him. But when he saw his friend in such danger among them, anger and contempt (alkeing no counsell but of courage) made him roome among them, with no other weapon but his sheephooke, and with that overthrowing one of the villaines, took away a two-hand sword from him, and withall, helpt him from euer being ashamed of losinge it. Then lifting vp his braue head, and flashing terror into their faces, he made armes & legs goe complaine to the earth, how euill their masters had kept them. Yet the multitude still growing, and the verie killing weaering them (fearing, left in long fight they should be conquered with coquering) they drew back toward the lodge, but drew back in such fort, that still their terror went forwarde: like a valiant mastiffe, whom when his master pulles backe by the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull embracement) though his pace be backwarde, his
The Countesse of Pembroke's

his gesture is forward, his teeth and eyes threatening more in the retiring, then they did in the advancing: so guided they themselves homeward, never stepping steppe backward, but that they proved themselves masters of the ground where they stept.

Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a tailor by occupation, who fetching his courage onse from their going back, began to bow his knees, & every fencer-like to draw neere to Zelmaine. But as he came within her distance, turning his sword very nicely about his crown, Basilius, with a side blow, stroke of his nose. He (being a suiter to a seimsters daughter, and therefore not a little grieved for such a disgrace) stooped downe, because he had hard, that if it were fresh put to, it would cleave on againe. But as his hand was on the grounde to bring his nose to his head, Zelmaine with a blow, sent his head to his nose. That saw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was sworn brother to him in a cup of wine) & lifted vp a great leauer, calling Zelmane all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But she (letting slippe the blowe of the leauer) hitte him so surely on the side of his face, that she lefte nothing but the nether jawe, where the tongue still wagged, as willing to say more, if his masters remembrance had servied. O (saide a miller that was halfe dronke) see the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, tan with a pitchforke at Dorus: but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head so fast, that it made it over-runne his feet, so that he fell withall, just betwene the legs of Dorus: who setting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milchekine, and foure fatte hogs for his life) thrust his sword quite through, from one eare to the other; which toke it very
unkindlie, to seele such newes before they heard of them, in stead of hearing, to be put to such feeling. But
*Dorus* (leaving the miller to vomit his soul out in wine
and bloud) with his two-hand sword strake of another
quite by the waste, who the night before had dreamed
he was grown a couple, and (interpreting it he should
be married) had bragd of his dreame that morning a-
mong his neighbours. But that blow astonissed quite a
poore painter, who stood by with a pike in his handes.
This painter was to counterfette the skirmishing be-
twene the Centaures and Lapithes, and had bene very de-
sirous to see some notable wounds, to be able the more
liuely to expresse them, and this morning (being caried
by the streame of this companie) the foolish fellow was
euen delighted to see the effect of blowes. But this last,
(hapning neere him) so amazed him, that he stood still,
while *Dorus* (with a turne of his sword) strake of both
his hands. And so the painter returned, well skilled in
wounds, but with never a hand to performe his skill.

CHAP. 26.

Zelmanes confident attempt to appease the mutinie.  * A
bone of division cast by her;  * and caught by them.  * Her
pacificatoris oration.  * The acceptation and issue of it.

In this manner they recovered the lodge, and gaue the rebels a face of wood of the
out-side. But they then (though no more
furious, yet more courageous when they
saw no resister) went about with pikeaxe to
the wall, and fire to the gate, to gette themselfes en-
trance.
Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with loue, especially *Philoclea*, who euer caught hold of *Zelmane*, so(by the follie of loue) hindering the help which she desired. But *Zelmane* seeing no way of defence, nor time to de iberate (the number of those villains still encreasing, and their madness still encreasing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an vnused boldenesse, and with danger to auoide danger: and therefore opened againe the gate, and (*Dorus* and *Basilius* standing redie for her defence). She issued againe among them. The blowes she had dealt before (though all in generall were haftie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them sodainly ouer-neere her, so that she had time to gette vp to the judgement-feate of the Prince, which (according to the guife of that countrie) was before the gate. There she paused a while, making signe with her hand vnto them, & with all speaking aloud, that she had something to say vnto them, that would please them. But she was answered a while with nothing but shouts and cries, and some beginning to throw stones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a young farmer (who might do most among the countrie) fort, and was caught in a little affection towards *Zelmane*) hoping by this kindenesse to have some good of her, desired them, if they were honest men, to heare the woman speake. Fie fellowes, fie, (said he) what will all the maides in our towne say, if so many tall men shall be afaide to heare a faire wench: I sweare vnto you by no little ones, I had rather giue my teeme of oxen, then we shoule shewe our selues fo vnciuill wights. Besides, I tell you true, I haue heard it of
of old men counted wisdome, to heare much, & say little. His sententious speech so preuailed, that the most parte began to listen. Then she, with such efficacie of gracefulnes, & such a quiet magnanimitet represented in her face in this uttermost peril, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks upon her, in this forte began vnto them.

It is no small comfort vnto me (said she) having to speake something vnto you for your owne behoofs, to find that I haue to deale with such a people, who shew indeed in the selues the right nature of valure, which as it leaues no violence vnattempted, while the choller is nourished with resistance; so when the subiect of their wrath, both of it selfe unloked for offer it selfe into their hands, it makes the at left take a pause before they determine cruelty. Now then first (before I come to the principall matter) haue I to say vnto you, that your Prince Basilius him selfe in person is within this Lodge, & was one of the three, who a few of you went about to fight withall: (& this she said, not doubting but they knew it well inough, but because she would haue them imagine, that the Prince might think that they did not know it) by him am I sent vnto you, as fro a Prince to his well approoued subiects, nay as from a father to beloved children, to know what it is that hath breed unjust quarrell among you, or who they be that haue any way wronged you: what it is with which you are displeased, or of which you are desirous? This he requires: and indeed (for he knowes your faithfulnes) he commands you presently to set downe, & to choose among your selues some one, who may relate your griefes or demaundes vnto him.
This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) asswaged well their furie, & many of them consented (especially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demands that he might have Zelmae for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieues, neuer Bees made such a confused huming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of imposts: the country felowes laying out of commons: some would have the Prince keepe his Court in one place, some in another. Al cried out to have new coicellors: but when they should think of any new, they liked the as well as any other, that they could remeber, especially they would haue the treasure so looked vnto, as that he should never neede to take any more subsidies. At length they fel to direct contrarieties. For the Artisans, they would haue corne & wine set at a lower price, and bound to be kept so still: the plowmen, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The countrimen demanded that every man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgess like of. The peastats would haue the Gentlemé destroi'd, the Citizens (especially such as Cookes, Barbers, & those other that liued most on Gentlemen) would but have them reform'd. And of ech side were like diuisions, one neighbourhood beginning to find fault with another. But no confusion was greater then of particular mens likings and dislikings: one dispraising such a one, who another praifed, & demanding such a one to be punished, whom the other would haue exalted. No leffe ado was there about chooing him, who should be their spokes-man. The fineer sort of Burgess, as Marchants Prentisés, & Clothworkers, because of their riches, disdaining the baser occupations, & they because of their number as much disdaining
disdaining them: all they scorning the countrimens ignoraunce, & the countrymen suspecting as much their cunning: So that Zelmae (finding that their united rage was now growne, not only to a diuiding, but to a crossing one of another, & that the mislike grown amongst these furies did well allay the heat against her) made tokés againe vnto the (as though she tooke great care of their well doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that she would speake vnto the. They now grown jealous one of another (the stay hauing ingédred diuísio, & diuísio hauing manifested their weaknes) were willing enough to heare, the most part struing to show themselves wil· linger then their fellowes: which Zelmae (by the ac· quaintance she had had with such kinde·of humors) loone perceiving, with an angerles bruery, & an un··· baathed mildnes, in this manner spake vnto them.

An vnus·ed thing it is, & I think not heretofore seene, & Arcadians, that a woman should give publike cou* sel to men, a stranger to the coutry people, & that lastly in such a presence by a private person, the regall throne should be possessed. But the straungenes of your action makes that v·ed for vertue, which your violent necessitie im· poseth. For certainly, a woman may well speake to inch men, who have forgotte a manlike government: a straunger may with reason instruct such subiects, that neglect due points of subjection: and is it marvaile this place is entred into by another, since your owne Prince (after thirtie yeares governement) dare not shew his face vnto his faithfull people: Heare therefor·e & Arc· dians, & be ashamed: against whó hath this rage bene.. stirred? whether haue bene bent these mài·ull weapons of yours? In this quiet harmles lodge are harboured no
The Countesse of Pembroke's

...your ancient enimies, nor Laconians your now feared neighbours. Here be nether hard landlords, nor biting vlurers. Here lodge none, but such as either you have great cause to loue, or no cause to hate: here being none, besides your Prince, Princesse, and their children, but myself. Is it then, ò Arcadians, against whom your anger is armed? Am I the marke of your vehemet quarrel: if it be so, that innocencie shall not be a stop for furie; if it be so, that the law of hospitality (so long & holily observed among you) may not defend a stranger fled to your armes for succour: if in fine it be so, that so many valiant mens courages can be enflamed to the mischiefe of one silly woman; I refuse not to make my life a sacrifice to your wrath. Exercise in me your indignation, so it go no further, I am content to pay the great favours I haue received among you, with my life, not ill deferving. I present it here vnsto you, ò. Arcadians, if that may satisfy you; rather the you (called out of the world the wise and quiet Arcadians) should be so vaine, as to attempt that alone, which all the rest of your countrie wil abhor; the you should shew your selues so vngratefull, as to forget the fruite of so many yeres peaceable government, or so unnaturall, as not to haue with the holy name of your naturall Prince, any surie ouer-maistred. For such a hellish madness (I know) did never enter into your harts, as to attempt any thing against his person; which no successor, though never so hatefull, will ever leaue (for his owne sake) vnreuenged. Neither can your wanted valour be turned to such a basenes, as in stead of a Prince, delivered vnto you by so many roiall ancestors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow subjict, in whom the innate means will bring forth raucous
uenous couetousnes, and the newnes of his estate, susp ectfull cruelty. Imagine, what could your enimies more with vnto you, then to see your owne estate with your owne handes undermined? O what would your fore-fathers say, if they lined at this time, & saw their offpring desaving such an excellent principalitie, which they with so much labour & bloud so wisely have esta bliht? Do you thinke them foole, that saw you should not enioy your vines, your cattell, no not your wifes & children, without government; and that there could be no government without a Magistrate, and no Magi strate without obedience, and no obedience where every one vpon his owne private passion, may interprete the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your present exaple to you. What sweetnes (in good faith) find you in your present condition? what choise of choise finde you, if you had lost Basilium? vnder whose ensigne would you go, if your enimies should invade you? If you cannot agree vpon one to speake for you, how wil you agree vpo one to fight for you? But with this feare of I cannot tel what, one is troubled, and with that paffed wrong another is grieued. And I pray you did the Sunne euer bring you a fruitfull haruett, but that it was more hote then pleasant? Haue any of you childre, that be not sometimes cumbersome? Haue any of you fa thers, that be not sometime weerish? What, shall we curse the Sonne, hate our children, or disobey our fa thers? But what need I vfe these wordes, since I see in your countenances (now vertuously fettled) nothing els but loue and dutie to him, by whom for your only fakes the government is embraced. For al what is done, he doth not only pardon you, but thanke you, judging the action by the minds, & not the minds by the actio.
The Countesse of Pembroke

Your grieues, and desires, whatsoever you lift, he will consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to conclude, the uncertainty of his estate made you take armes; now you see him well, with the same loute lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must conclude over-vehement affection: the only continuance might proove a wickednes. But it is not so, I see very wel, you beg with zeale, & wil end with reuerence.

The action Zelmane vst, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her gestures byng such, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, so they serued as a shadow, to make the picture more lively and sensible, with the sweete cleerness of her voice, rising & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felte, whose beautie did perce through the thicke dulnes of their sences, gau such a way vnto her speach through the rugged wildernesse of their imaginations, who (besides they were stticken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leasure, that instead of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a confused muttering, whether her sayeing were to be followed, betwixt feare to pursue, & lothnesse to leaue: most of them could have bene content, it had never bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tie then to loose knots. But Zelmane thinking it no euil way in such mutinies, to giue the mutinous some occasiō of such service, as they might thinke (in their own judgement)
ment would counteruaille their trespass, withal, to take the more assured possession of their mindes, which he feared might begin to waue, Loi all Arcadians (said she) now do I offer vnto you the manifesting of your duties: all those that haue taken armes for the Princes safe-
tie, let the turne their backs to the gate, with their weapons bent against such as would hurt his sacred person. O weak trust of the many-headed multitude, whom in-
constancie onely doth guide to well doing: who can set confidence there, where company takes away shame, and ech may lay the fault of his fellow: So said a craftie fellow among them, named Clinias, to himselfe, when he saw the worde no sooner out of Zelmanes mouth, but that there were some shouts of joy, with, God save Bagn-
lius, and divers of them with much iollity growne to be his guard, that but little before met to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

A verball craftie coward portrayed in Clinias. * His first raising, and with the first relenting in this mutinie, punished by the farmer. * The uprose reenforced, & weakened by themselves. * Clinias-his Sion-like narration of this druen rebellions original. * The kings order in it. 

His Clinias in his youth had bene a scholar to farre, as to learne rather wordes then maners, and of words rather plente then order; and oft had vled to be an acter in Trage-
dies, where he had learned, besides a slidingnesse of language, acquain-
The Countesse of Pembroke

The Countesse of Pembroke

tance with many passions, and to frame his face to bear the figure of them: long vied to the eyes and eares of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastness; in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in pruine practises.

This fellowe was become of neere trust to Cecropia, Amphialus, his mother, so that he was priuy to all the mischieuous deuises, wherewith she went about to ruine Basilius, and his children, for the aduauncing of her sorne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his loue to be doing, taught him in any euill to be secret, and had by his mistresse bene vied (euer since the strange retiring of Basilius) to whisper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that let them in the vprore (though quite without the consent of Amphialus, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world so haue aducted the life of Philoclea.) But now perceiving the flood of their furie began to ebebe, he thought it policie to take the first of the tide, so that no man cried lowder then he, vpon Basilius. And som of the lustiest rebels not yet agreeing to the rest, he caused two or three of his mates that were at his comandement to lift him vp, & then as if he had had a prologue to vter, he began with a nice grauitie to demand audience. But few attending what he said, with vehement gesture, as if he would teare the stars from the skies, he fell to crying out so lowde, that not onely Zelmane, but Basilius might heare him. O vn happie men, more madde then the Giants that would haue plucked Jupiter out of heaven, how long shal this rage continue, why do you not all throw downe your weapons, and submit your selues
felues to our good Prince, our good Basilius, the Pelops of wisdom, & Minos of all good gouernment: when will you begin to beleue me, and other honest and faithfull subiects, that have done all we could to stop your furie?

The farmer that loued Zelmane could abide him no longer. For as at the first he was willing to speake of conditions, hoping to have gotten great fourainties, & among the rest Zelmane: so now perceiuing, that the people, once any thing downe the hill from their furie, would never stop till they came to the bottom of absolute yeelding, and so that he should be nearer feares of punishment, then hopes of such aduancement, he was one of them that stood most against the agreement: and to begin withall, disdaining this fellow should play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefeft make-bates, strake him a great wound vpon the face with his sword. The cowardly wretch fell down, crying for succour, & (scrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the throne, where Zelmane tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was past, and quaking for feare of more.

But as soone as that blow was giuen (as if Æolus had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, eche one killing him that was next, for feare he should do as much to him. For being diuided in minds, & not diuided in copanies, they that would yeeld to Basilius were intermingled with the that would not yeeld. These men thinking their ruine stood vpo it, those men to get favor of their Prince, converted their vngracious motion into their owne bowels, & by a true judgement grew their owne punishers. None was sooner killed the those that had bene leaders in the disobedience: who by
by being so, had taught them, that they did leade disobedience to the same leaders. And many times it fell out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger whetting, and doubt hastening their fingers. But then came downe Zelmana; and Baslius with Dorus issued, and somtimes seeking to draw together those of their party, somtimes laying indifferently among them, made such haucck (among the rest Zel-mane striking the farmer to the hart with her sworde, as before she had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary side were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods upon the frontiers, where feeding coldly, and drinking onely water, they were disciplined for their drunken riots; many of them being slaine in that chase, about a score onely escaping. But when these late rebels, nowe fouldiers, were returned from the chase, Baslius calling them togethers, partly for policy sake, but principally because Zelmana before had spoken it (which was to him more the a divine ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to their houses, and therafter be more circuispect in their proceedings: which they did most of them with share-marks of their folly. But imagining Clinias to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gaue him particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know, how this frenzie had entred into the people.

Clinias purposing indeede to tell him the truth of all, fauing what did touch himselfe, or Cecropia, first, dipping his hand in the blood of his wou'd, Now by this blood (said he) which is more deare to me, then all the rest that is in my body, since it is spent for your safety: this togue (perchance vnfortunate, but never falle) shall not now begin to lie vnto my Prince, of me most beloued. Then tret-
stretched out his hand, and making vehement counte-
nances the vsers to his speches, in such maner of tears
recounted this accident. Yesterday (said he) being your
birth-day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before
the city of Eniphus, to do honour to the day, were a four
or flue thousand people (of all conditions, as I thinke)
gathered together, spending al the day in dancings and
other exercises: and when night came, ynder tents and
bowes making great cheare, and meaning to obtayne a
wassailing watch all that night for your sake. Bacchus (the
learned lay) was begot with thunder: I think, that made
him euer since so full of stir & debate. Bacchus indeed it
was which soued the first trumpet to this rude alarum. For
that barbarous opinion being generally among them, to
thinke with vice to do honor, & with actuitie in beast-
lines to shew abundance of loue, made most of the seake
to shew the depth of their affectio in the depth of their
draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (having
spent al the night, & some peece of the morning in such
reuciling) & imboldned by your absentended maner of li-
uing, there was no matter their eares had euer heard of
that grew not to be a subiect of their winie conference.
I speake it by proffe: for I take witnes of the gods (who
neuer leaue periuries unpunished) that I ofte cried out
against their impudency, & (whé that would not serene)
stoppt mine eares, because I wold not be partaker of their
blasphemies, till with buffets they forced me to haue
mine eares & eies defiled. Publike affairs were munged
with private grudges, neither was any man thought of
wit, that did not pretende some cause of mislike. Ray-
ling was counted the fruite of freedome, and sayng
nothing had his vtermoste prayse in ignorance.
At the length, your sacred person (alas why did I
live
The Countess of Pembroke

live to here it; alas how do I breath to utter it? But your commandement doth not onely enioine obedience, but give me force: your sacred person (I say) fell to be their table-talke: a proud word swelling in their stomacks, & disdainfull reproches against so great a greatnes, having put on the shew of greatnes in their little minides: till at length the very unbridled use of words having increased fire in their mindes (which God knowes thought their knowledge notable, because they had at all no knowledge to cōdemne their own want of knowledge) they descended (O neuer to be forgotten presumption) to a direct mislike of your liuing from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched constructions. But the summe was, you disdained them: and what were the pompes of your estate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who woulde call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wretched estates, and worse mindes (whose fortunes, change could not impaire) began to say, that your gouernment was to be looked into; how the great treasures (you had loued among the) had bene spent; why none but great men & gentlemen could be admitted into counsel, that the comons (forsooth) were to plain headed to say their opinions: but yet their blood & sweat must maintain all. Who could tell whether you were not betrayed in this place, where you liued? nay whether you did liue or no? Therefore that it was time to come & see, and if you were here, to know (if Arca- dia were growne lothsome in your sight) why you did not ridde your selfe of the trouble? There would not want those that would take so faire a cumber in good part. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the gouerne-
ment an adherent to the country, why should they not consider of the one, as well as inhabite the other? Nay rather (said they) let us beginne that, which all Arcadia will follow. Let us deliver our Prince from danger of practises, and our felues from want of a Prince. Let vs doo that, which all the rest thinke. Let it be said, that we onely are not astonished with vaine titles, which haue their force but in our force. Lastly, to haue saide & heard so much, was as dangerous, as to haue attempted: & to attempt they had the name of glorious liberty with them. These words being spoké (like a furious storme) presently caried away their wel inclined braines. What I, and some other of the house after fort could do, was no more, then if with a pufhe of breath, one should go about to make a faile goe against a mightie winde: or, with one hand, stay the ruine of a mightie wall. So generally grewe this madness among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each spake to other that spake as fast to him, and the disagreeing sound of so many voices, was the chiefe token of their unmeet agreement. Thus was their banquette turned to a battle, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the hap-pie prayers for your life, to monstroous threatening of your estate, the solemnizing your birth-day, tended to haue been the cause of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (besides his wickednes) that follie, that the more it seekes to hurt, the leffe it considers how to be able to hurt: they neuer weyed how to arme thes felues, but tooke up every thing for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many swordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, conueriting husbandrie to fouldierie: some caught hold of
The Countesse of Pembroke's

offspites (things serviceable for life) to be the instruments of death. And there was some such one, who held the same pot wherein he drank to your health, to use it (as he could) to your mischief. Thus armed, thus governed, forcing the unwilling, and hardening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreasing rage with running, they came headlong toward this lodge: no man (I dare say) resolued in his own hart, what was the uttermost he would doo when he came thereto. But as mischief is of such nature, that it cannot stand but with strengthening one cuill by an other, and so multiply in it selfe, till it come to the highest, and then fall with his owne weight: so to their mindes (once passed the bounds of obedience) more and more wickednes opened it selfe, so that they who first pretended to preserve you, then to reforme you, (I speak it in my conscience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no safetie for them, without murdering you. So as if the Gods (who preserve you for the preservation of Arcadia) had not shewed their miraculous power, and that they had not uséd for instruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be spoken of by so mean a mouth as mine) and some (I must confess) honest minds, (who alas why should I mention, since what we did, reached not the hundred part of our dutie?) our hands (I tremble to think of it) had destroyed all that, for which we have cause to rejoice that we are Arcadians.

6 With that the fellow did wring his hands, & wrang out teares: so as Basilius, that was not the sharpest pencer into malked minds, took a good liking to him, & so much the more as he had tickled him with praise in the hearing of his mistres. And therefore pitying his wou'd, willed
willed him to get him home, and looke well vnto it, &c make the best search he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he should be well rewarded. But before he went away, certain of the shepheardes being come (for that day was appointed for their pastorals) he sent one of them to Philanax, and an other to other principal noble-men, and cities there abouts, to make through-inquirie of this vprore, and withall, to place such garrisons in all the townes & villages neere vnto him, that he might thereafter keep his solitary lodge in more security, vpo the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, hauing them in a redines for him.

CHAP. 28.

*The praiies of Zelmanes ad.* *Dametas his caroll for sauing himself, and his charge.* *Basilius his conference with Philanax of the Oracle (the ground of all this storie.)* *His wrong-construction of it.* *His hymne to Apollo.* *His courting turnde ouer to tale-telling.*

His, Clinias (hauing his eare one way when his eye was an other) had perceived, & therefore hafted away, with mind to tell Cecropia that she was to take some speedie resolution, or els it were daunger those examinations would both discouer, & ruine her: and so went his way, leauing that little companie with embracements, and praisifing of Zelmanes excellent proceeding, to shew, that no decking sets forth any thing so much, as affection. For as, while she floode at the discretion of those indiscreete rebelles, euerie angry
The Countesse of Pembrokes

angrie countenance any of them made, seemed a knife
layde upon their owne throates; so unspeakable was
now their joy, that they saw (besides her safetie & their
owne) the same wrought, and safely wrought by her
means, in whom they had placed all their delightes.
What examples Greece could ever alledge of witte and
fortitude, were set in the ranke of trifles, being compared
to this action.

But as they were in the midst of those vnfained cer-
emonies, a Gitinne, ill-played on, accompanied with
a hoarse voice (who seemed to sing maugre the Muses,
and to be merie in spite of Fortune) made them looke
the way of the ill-noyfed song. The song was this.

A Hatesfull cure with hate to heale:
A bloody helpe with blood to saue:
A foolish thing with fooles to deale:
Let him be bold that bobs will haue.
But who by meanes of wisdome bie
Hath fai'd his charge? it is euen I.

Let other deck their pride with skarres,
And of their wounds make braine lame bowes:
First let them die, then passe the starres,
When rotten Fame will tell their blows.
But eye from blade, and ear from crie:
Who hath faied all? it is euen I.

They had soone found it was Dametas, who came
with no leste lifted vp countenance, then if he had pass-
ed ouer the bellies of all his enemies: so wise a point
he thought he had performed, in vsing the naturall
strength
strength of a cause. But neuer was it his dooing to come so soone thence, till the coast were more assuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a great storme there euer fell a fewe droppes before it be fully finished. But Pamela (who had now experienced how much care doth sollicite a Louers hart) vfed this occasion of going to her parents and sister, indeed aswel for that cause, as being vnquiet, till her eye might be assured, how her shepheard had gone through the daunger. But Basilius with the sight of Pamela (of whom almoft his head otherwise occupied, had left the wonded remembrance) was sodainly striken into a devout kind of admiration, remembring the oracle, which (according to the stuning humour of false hope) he interpreted now his owne to his owne best, and with the willing blindness of affection (because his minde ran wholly vpon Zelmane) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deepely thinking of the matter, one of the shepheards tolde him, that Philanax was already come with a hundred horese in his company. For haueing by chaunce rid not farre of the little desert, he had heard of this vprore, and so was come vpon the spurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as fast as he could) to the succour of his Master. Basilius was glad of it, but (not willing to haue him, nor any other of the Noble men, see his Mistresse) he himselfe went out of the Lodge, and so giving order vnto him of placing garrisons, and examining these matters, and Philanax with humble earnestnesse beginning to entreate him to leaue of his solitarie course (which already had bene so daungerous vnto him) Well (said Basilius) it may be...
The Countesse of Pembroke

e're long I will codiscend vnto your desire. In the meane time, take you the best order you can to keepe me safe in my solitarinesse. But, (said he) doo you remember, how earnestly you wrote vnto me, that I should not be moued by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this resolution? Full well Sir (answered Philanax) for though it pleased you not as then to let me knowe, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceit) one degree of reputatiō, it suffisėd me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you fro your owne course. Well (said Basilius) I will now tell you the wordes, which before I thought not good to doe, because when all the euents fall out (as some already haue done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this forte.

Thy elder care shal from thy carefull face
By princely meane bestolne, and yet not lost.
Thy yonger shal with Natures blisse embrace
An uncouth love, which Nature hateth most.
Both they themselves vnto such two shall wed,
Who at thy beer, as at a barre, shall pleade,
Why thee (a liuing man) they haue made dead.
In thy owne seate a forraine state shall sit.
And ere that all these blowses thy head doo hit,
Thou, with thy wife, adultry shall commit.

For you forsoth (said he) when I told you, that some supernaturall cause sent me strange vifiers, which being confirmed with presagious chainces, I had gone to Delphos,
there receiued this answere: you replied to me, that the onely supernaturall causes were the humors of my body, which bred such melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind full of conceipts, apt to make presages of things, which in these flues were meerely changeable: & with all as I say, you remember what you wrot unto me, touching authoritie of the Oracle: but now I haue some notable triall of the truth therof, which herafter I wil more largely comunicate vnto you. Only now, know that the thing I most feared is alreadily performed; I mean that a foraine state should posseffe my throne. For that hath ben done by Zelmane, but not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my preseruation. But where he had once named Zelmane, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praises run on in such sort, that (Philanax found) was more exquisite then the only admiration of vertue brendeth: which his faithful hart inwardly repining at made him shirinke away as soone as he could, to go about the other matters of importance, which Basilius had enioyned vnto him.

Basilius returned into the Lodge, thus by himselfe construing the oracle, that in that he said, his elder care should by Princely meane be stolne away from him, and yet not lost, it was now perfourmed, since Zelmane had as it were rob'd from him the care of his first begotten childe, yet was it not lost, since in his harte the ground of it remained. That his younger shoulde with Natures blisse embrace the loue of Zelmane, because he had so commaundd her for his sake to doo; yet shoulde it be with as much hate of Nature, for being so hatefull an opposite to the jealousie hee thought her mother had of him. The sitting in his
The Countesse of Pembroke's

feate he deemed by her already perfourmed: but that which most comforted him, was his interpretation of the adulterie, which he thought he should commit with Zelmanc, whom afterwards he should have to his wife. The point of his daughters marriage, because it threatened his death withall, he determined to prevent, with keeping them unmarried while he lived. But having as he thought gotten thus much understanding of the Oracle, he determined for three days after to performe certaine rites to Apollo: and even then began with his wife and daughters to singe this Hymne, by them yearly vfed.

A Pollo great, whose beames the greater world do light,
And in our little world do cleare our inward sight,
Which ever shine, though hid from earth by earthly shade,
Whose lights do ever line, but in our darkness fade.

Thou God, whose youth was deckt with spoiles of Pythos skin:
(So humble knowledge can throw downe the snakes kinne)

Latonas sonne, whose birth in paine and travaile long
Doth teach, to learne the good what travailes do belong:

In travaile of our life: (a short but tedious space)
While brickie houres glas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:
Give us foresight full minds: give us minds to obaye
What foresight tells, our thoughts upon thy knowledge paye.

Let so our fruites grow up, that nature be maintaine:
But so our harte keepe downe, with vice they be not stainde.

Let this assured holde our judgements ourtake,

That nothing winnes the heauen, but what doth earth forfake.

As he had ended his devotion (all the priviledged shepheardes being now come) knowing well
inough he might lay all his care vpon Philanax, he was willing to sweeten the ta\,t of this passed tumult, with some rurall pastimes. For which while the shepheard prepared themselfes in their best maner, Baslius take\,de his daughter Philoclea aside, and with such haste, as if his cares hunted for wordes, desired to know how she had found Zel\,mane. She humbly answered him, according to the agreement betwixt them, that thus much for her sake Zel\,mane was content to descend from her former resoluti\,o, as to heare him, wheresoeuer he would speake; \\
& further then that (she said) as Zel\,mane had not grunted, so she neither did, nor euer would desire. Baslius kist her with more then fatherly thanks, and straight (like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine haue vsed the benefite of that graunt, in laying his sick\,nes before his onely physition. But Zel\,mane (that had not yet fully determined with her selfe, how to beare her selfe toward him) made him in a few words understand, that the time in respect of the company was vnfit for such a parley, \\
& therfore to keep his braines the busier, letting him understand what she had learned of his daughters, touching Eronas distresse (whom in her travaile she had knewne, and bene greatly beholding to) she desired him to finis\,h the rest, for so far as Plagus had told him; Because she said (if she said truly) she was full of care for that Ladie, whose de\,\,fart (onely except an o\,uer-base cho\,ise) was nothing agreable to misfortune. Baslius glad that she would command him any thing, but more glad, that in excusing the vnfitnesse of that time, she argued an intention to graunt a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.

Gg 3

CHAP.
CHAP. 29.

Antiphilus his base-borne pride borne high by flatterie. His unkinde hating the loving Erona, and fond loving of hating Artaxia. Artaxias trap to take them both. The mans weakenesse, and the womans strength in bearing captuitie. Plangus love to her, employed by her to save Antiphilus, who againe betraies himselfe and them. His execution by women. Plangus hardy attempts to save Erona. The conditions of her death. Her sorrow for Antiphilus, and Plangus travaile for her: with his crosses and course therein.

Adame (saide he) it is very true, that since yeares enabled me to judge what is, or is not to be pitied, I never saw anything that more moued me to justify a vehement compassion in my self, then the estate of that Prince, whom strong against all his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceave you haue heard) yet true and noble loue had so pulled downe, as to lie vnder sorrow for another. In so much as I could not temper my long idle pen in that subject, which I perceve you haue seene. But then to leaue that vnrepeated, which I finde my daughters haue told you, It may please you to understand, since it pleaseth you to demand, that Antiphilus being crowned, & so left by the famous Princes Musidorus & Pyrocles (led thece by the challenge of Anaxius, who is now in these provinces of Greece, making a dis-honorable
honorable enquirie after that excellent prince Pyrocles alreadie perish'd) Antipilus (I say) being crowned, and delivered from the presence of those two, whose virtues (while they were present, good schoolmisters) suppressed his vanities, he had not strength of mind enough in him to make long delay, of discovering what manner of man he was. But fright like one carried up to so high a place, that he looseth the discerning of the ground over which he is; so was his mind lifted so far beyond the level of his owne discourse, that remembering only that himselfe was in the high seat of a King, he could not perceive that he was a king of reasonable creatures, who would quickly scorne follies, and repine at injuries. But imagining no so true propertie of souereignty, as to do what he list, and to lift whatsoever pleased his fanstie, he quickly made his kingdom a Tennis court, where his subjects should be the balles; not in truth cruelly, but licenciously abusing them, presuming so far upon himselfe, that what he did was liked of every bodie: nay, that his disgraces were fauours, and all because he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyue the bonds of great matters (suddenly borne into an unnowne Ocean of absolute power) he was swayed withall (he knewe not howe) as euery winde of passions puffed him. Where to nothing helped him better, then that poisonous sugar of flatterie: which some vsed, out of the innate basenesse of their hart, straight like dogges fawning ypon the greatest; others secretly hating him, and disdainning his great rising so suddenly, so undeservedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him only to his overthrow, like the bird that caries the shell-fish high, to brake him the easer with his fall.
The Countesse of Pembroke

But his minde (being an apt matter to receive what form each amplifying speeches would lay upon it) daunced so prettie a musicke to their false measure, that he thought himselfe the wysest, the woorthyest, and best beloved, that ever gaine honour to a royall tytle. And being but obscurely borne, he had found out vn-blushing pedegrees, that made him not onely of the blood royall, but true heyre, vniustly dispossesse by Eronas auncestours. And like the foolish birde, that when it so hides the heade that it sees not it selfe, thinkes no bodie else sees it: so did he imagine, that no bodie knew his bafenesse, while he himselfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vainenesse (a meager friend to gratefulnesse) brought him so to despise Eronas, as of whom he had receiued no benefit, that within halfe a yeerees mariage he began to pretend barrennesse: and making first an unlawfull law of having mo wives then one, he still keeping Eronas, vnder-had, by message fought Artaxia, who no lesse hating him, then louing (as unluckie a choise) the naughtie King Plexirus, yet to bring to passe what he purposed, was content to train him into false hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of Armenia, & had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monarchies; as if fortune had only gotte eies to cherish him. In which time a great assembly of most part of all the Princes of Asia being to do honour to the newer sufficiently praised Pyrocles & Musidorus, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to haue bonyng matter among those great estates, as he was among his abusling vnderlings. But so many valorous Princes,
in-deed farre neerer to disdaine him then otherwise, he was quickly (as standing ypon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himselfe, till his seldom-cofortlesse flatterers (perswading him, it was enuiie & feare of his expected greatnes) made him haste away fro that company, & without further delay appointed the meeeting with Artaxia: so incredibly blinded with the ouer-bright shining of his roialty, that he could thinke such a Queene could be content to be joined-patent with an other to haue such an husband. Poore Erona to all this obeyed, either vehemency of affection making her stoop to so ouerbate a servitute, or astonished with an unlooked-for fortune, dull to any behoofeful resolutio, or (as many times it fallles out euon in great harts when they can accuse none but theselues) desperatly bent to maintaine it. For so went she on in that way of her loue, that (poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-set affection, she was brought to write to Artaxia, that she was content for the publike good, to be a second wife, and yeeld the first place to her: nay to extoll him, and euon woo Artaxia for him.

But Artaxia (mortally hating them both for her brethrens sake) was content to hide her hate, til she had time to shewe it: and prettending that all her grudge was against the two paragons of vertue, Musidorus & Pyrocles, euen met them halfe way in excusing her brothers murder, as not being principal actors, and of the other-side, druen to what they did by the euer-pardonable necessitie: and so well handled the matter, as, though she promised nothing, yet Antiphilus promised himselfe all that she woulde haue him thinke. And so a solemne enteruiew was appointed. But (as the Poets say) Hymen had
The Countesse of Pembroke's

had not there his saffron-coloured cote. For Artaxia laying men secretly (and easily they might be secret, since Antiphilus thought she ouerran him in loue) when he came even readie to embrace her, shewing rather a countenaunce of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (having much aduauntage both in number, value, and force-preparation) put all his companie to the sword, but such as could fly away. As for Antiphilus she caufed him and Erona both to be put in irons, hafting backe toward her brothers toume, vpo which she meant to sacrifice them, making the loue of her brother stand betweene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature she was alienated.

But great diuertitie in them two quickly discovered itselfe for the bearing of that affliction. For Antiphilus that had no greate but outwarde, that taken away, was readie to fall faster then calamitie could thrust him; with fruitleffe begging (where reason might well assure him his death was resolued) and weake bemoning his fortune, to give his enemies a most pleasing musique, with manie promises, and protestations, to as little purpose, as from a little minde. But Erona sadde in-deede, yet like one rather vised, then new fallen to sadnesse (as who had the joyes of her hart alreadie broken) seemed rather to welcome then to shunne that ende of miserie, speaking little, but what she spake was for Antiphilus, remembering his guiltlesnesse, being at that time prisoner to Tiridates, when the valiant princes flue him: to the disgrace of men, shewing that there are women more wise to judge what is to be expected, and more constant to beare it, when it is happened.

But her witte endeared by her youth, her affliction by
by her birth, and her sadnesse by her beautie, made
this noble prince Plangus, who (neuer almost from his
cousin Artasia) was nowe present at Eroneas taking, to
perceyue the shape of louelinesse more perfectly in wo,
then in joyfulnessse (as in a picture which receiuies
greater life by the darkenesse of shadowes, then by
more glittering colours) and seeinge to like; and liking
to loue; and louing straight to seele the most incident
effectes of loue, to teare and preserue. So borne by the
hastie tide of short leyseure, he did hastily deliuer togeth-
er his affection, and affectionate care. But she (as if he
had spoken of a small matter, when he mentioned her
life, to which she had not leuisure to attend) desiered him
if he loued her, to shew it, in finding some way to saue
Antaphilus. For her, she found the world but a weari-
som stage vnto her, where she played a part against her will:
and therefore besought him, not to cast his loue in so
unfruitfull a place, as could not loue it selfe: but for a
testimonie of constancie, and a surablenes to his word,
to do so much comfort to her minde, as that for her
fake Antaphilus were saue. He tolde me how much he
argued against her tendering him, who had so vnsrate-
fully betrayed her, and foolishly cast away himselfe. But
perceiving she did not only bend her very goodwits to
speake for him against her selfe, but when such a cause
could be allied to no reasoonable loue would needs make
it self a cause, & barre her rather from hearing, then yeeld
that she should yeeld to such arguments: she likewise in
whoso the power of Loue(as they say of spirits) was sub-
ject to the loue in her, with grieue confirmed, & (though
backwardly) was diligent to labor the help of Antaphilus:
a man whom he not onely hated, as a traitour to Erone,
but
but envied as a possessor of Erona. Yet Loue swore, his hart, in spite of his hart, should make him become a servant to his riuall. And so did he, seeking all the meanes of perswading Artaxia, which the authority of so neere, and so vertuous a kinismā would giue vnto him. But she to whom the eloquence of Hadred had giuen reuenge the face of delight, rejected all such motions, but rather the more closely imprisoning them in her chiefe citie, where she kept them with intention at the birth-day of Tividates (which was very nere) to execute Antiphilus, & at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere after) to vse the same rigor towards Erona. Plangus much grieved (because much loving) attempted the humors of the Lycians, to see, whether they would come in with forces to succor their Princesse. But there the next inheritor to the crowne (with the true play that is vsed in the game of kingdōs) had no sooner his mistres in captiuitv, but he had usurped her place, & making her odious to her people, because of the vnfit elecction she had made, had so left no hope there: but which is worse, had sent to Artaxia, perswading the justicing her, because that vnjustice might giue his title the name of justice. Wating that way, Plangus prattled with some deere friends of his, to save Antiphilus out of prison, whose day because it was much neerer then Eronaes, & that he wel found, she had twisted her life vpō the same threed with his, he determined first to get him out of prison: & to that end having prepared al matters as wel as in such case he could, where Artaxia had set many of Tividates old servants to haue well-marking eyes, he conferred with Antiphilus, as (by the authoritie he had) he found meanes to do, & agreed with him of the time and maner, how he should
by the death of some of his taylors escape.

But all being well ordered, and Plangus willingly putting himselfe into the greatest danger, Antiphils (who, like a bladder, sweld redie to breake, while it was full of the winde of prosperitie, that being out, was so abicted, as apt to be trode on by every bodie) when it came to the point, that with some hazard, he might be in appara, still and liable to aoid the uttermost harm, his harte fainted, and (wise fowle, neither hoping, nor fearing as he should) get a conceife, that with bewraying his pratice, he might obteine pardon; and therefore, even a little before Plangus should have come to him, opened the whole pratice to him, that had the charge, with vnpietyed tears idly protesting, he had rather die by Artaxias commaundement, then against her will escape: yet begging life vpon any the hardest, and wretchedest conditions that she woulde lay vpon him. His keeper provided accordingly, so that when Plangus came, he was like, himselfe to haue bene entrapped: but that finding (with a luckie in-sight) that it was discovered, he retired; and (calling his friends about him) stood vpon his guard, as he had good cause. For, Artaxias (accounting him most vngrateful considering that her brother and she, had not onely preferred him against the malice of his father, but ever vset him much like his birth, then his fortune) sent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten so great loue, that he could not onely keep himselfe from the malice, but worke in their mindes a compassion of Eronas audentfite.

But for the succour of Antiphils he could gette no bodie to ioyne with him, the contempt of him having
The Countesse of Pembrokes

using not bemeable to qualify the hatred; so that Artaxias might easilie upon him perfioure her will, which was (at humble suite of all the women of that citie) to deliuer him to their censure, who mortally hating him for hauing made a lawe of Polygamie, after many tortures, forthe him to throwe himselfe from a high Pyramis, which was built ouer Tiridates tombe, and so to end his false-harted life, which had planted no strong thought in him, but that he could be vnkinde.

But Plangus well perceiving that Artaxias stayed onely for the appointed day, that the faire Eronas bodie, (consumed to ashes) should make a notorious testimonie, how deeplie her brothers death was engraven in her brest, he assembled good numbers of friends, who his vertue (though a stranger) had tied vnto him, by force to giue her libertie. Contrariwise, Artaxia, to whom Anger gave more courage then her sexe did feare, vfed her regall authoritie (the most she could) to supprese that sedition, and haue her will: which she thought is the most princely thing that may be. But Plangus, who indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the best captains (both for policie and valour) that are taine in the schoole of Mars, in a conflict overthrow Ar- taxias power, though of far greater number: and there toke prifoner a base sonne of her brothers, whom she deeply affected, & then sent her word that he should run the same race of fortune (whatsoever it was) that Erona did: & happy was that threatening for her; for els Artaxia had hastened the day of her death, in respecte of those tumults.

But now (some principal noble-men of that countrie interposing the selues) it was agreed, that all persons eas fallie
fullie pardoned, and all prisoners (except Erona) delivered, she should be put into the hands of a principall nobleman, who had a castle of great strength, vpon oath, that if by the day two yeare from Tirdates death, Pyrocles and Musidorus did not in person combat, & overcome two knights, who she appointed to maintain her quarrell against Erona and them, of having by treason destroyed her brother, that she should be that same day burned to ashes: but if they came, and had the victorie, she should be delivered; but vpon no occasion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both sides, all took a solemn oath, and so the peace was concluded, they of Plangus partie forcing him to agree, though he himselfe the sooner condiscended, knowing the courtesie of those two excellent Princes, not to refuse so noble a quarrell, and their power such, as two more (like the other two) were not able to resift. But Artaxias was more, and vpon better ground, pleased with this action; for she had euene newly receiued newes from Plexirus, that vpon the sea he had caused them both to perish, and therefore she held herselfe sure of the match.

But poore Plangus knew not so much, and therefore seeing his partie (as most times it falles out in like case) hungry of conditions of peace, accepted them, & then obtained leave of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to visite Erona, whom he founde full of desperate forowe, not suffering, neither his unwoorthinesse, nor his wronges, nor his death (which is the natural conclusion of all worldly acts) either to cover with forgetfulness, or diminish with consideration, the affection she had borne him: but euene gloyng in affliction, and shunning all comforte, she seemed to have no delight, but in making her selfe the picture of miserie. So
So that when Plangus came to her, she fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him she had scene the death of Antiphilus, because he had not succoured him: and yet (her vertue striuing) she did at one time acknowledge her selfe bound, and professe her selfe injure, in stead of allowing the conclusion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wisht her to doo) craving nothing but some speedie death to followe, her (in spite of iust hate) beloued Antiphilus.

So that Plangus hauing nothing but a rauisht kisse from her hande at their parting, went away towarde Greece, whetherward he understoode the Princes were embarked. But by the way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by Artaxia to Plexirus: wherein she signified her accepting him to her husband, whom she had euer fauoured, so much the rather, as he had performed the conditions of her mariage, in bringing to their deserued end, her greatest enemies: withall, thanking the sea, in such tearmes, as he might well perceiue, it was by some treason wrought in Plexirus shippe. Whercupon (to make more diligent search) he tooke shippe himselye, and came into Laconia, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that such a shippe was indeede with fight, and fire, perished, none (almost) escaping. But for Pyrocles and Musidorus, it was assurely determined that they were cast away: for the name of such Princes (especially in Greece) would quickly els have bene a large witnesse to the contrarie. Full of griefe with that, for the losse of such, who left the world poor of perfection: but more sorie for Bronas sake, who now by them could not be relieued. A new aduertisement from Armenia outtooke him, which multiplied the force
force of his anguish. It was a message from the Nobleman who had Erona in ward, giving him to understand, that since his departure, Artaxia (vying the benefit of time) had besieged him in his castle, demanding present delivery of her, whom yet for his faith given, he would not, before the day appointed, if possibly he could resist, which he forewarned he should not do for want of victual, which he had not so wisely provided, because he trusted upon the general oath taken for two years space: and therefore willed him to make haste to his succour, and come with no small forces; for all they that were of his side in Armenia, were consumed, & Artaxia had increased her might by marriage of Plexirtus, who now crowned King there, stick not to glory in the murder of Pyrocles and Musidorus, as having just cause thereto, in respect of the deaths of his sister Andromana, her sonne his nephew, and his own daughter Zelmae, all whose losse he vniustly charged them withal, & now openly stuck not to coseffe, what a revenge his wit had brought forth. Plangus, much astonish'd herewith, be thought himselfe what to doe. For to returne to Armenia was vaine, since his friends there were utterly overthrown. The thought he of going to his father but he had already (euen since the death of his stepmother, & brother) attempted the recovering his favour, & all in vain. For they, that had before joined with Andromana to do him the wrong, thought now no life for the if he returned, & therefore kept him still (with new forged suspicions) odious to his father. So that Plangus referring that for a worke of longer time, then the passing of Erona could beare, determined to go to the mighty and good King Enarchus, who lately having (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enemies, but establisht
The Counte of Pembroke

blished good government in their countries, he hoped he might haue present succour of him, both for the justnes of the cause, & revenge of his childrens death, by so hainous a treason murdere. Therefore with diligence he went to him, & by the way (passing through my country) it was my hap to find him, the most overthrown mad with grief, that euer I hope to see againe. For stil it seemed he had Erona at a stake before his eies; such an apprehension he had taken of her danger, which in despite of all the comfort I could give him, he poured out in such lamentations, that I was moued not to let him passe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters & I haue deliuered vn-to you. Fayne he would haue had succour of my selfe, but the course of my life being otherwise bent, I onely accompanied him with some that might safely guide him to the great Euarchus: for my parte hauing had some of his speeches so feelingly in my memory, that at an idle time (as I tolde you) I set them downe Dialogue-wishe, in such manner as you haue seene. And thus, excellent Ladie, I haue obeyed you in this storie; wherin if it well please you to consider, what is the strange power of Loue, and what is due to his autho-
ritie, you shall exercize therein the true noblenesse of your judgement, and doe the more right to the vnfor-
tunate Historian. Zelmaue (fishing for Eronaes sake, yet inwardly comforted in that she assured her selfe, Euar-
chus would not spare to take in hande the just deliw-
ing of her, joyned with the just revenge of his childrens losse) hauing now what she desired of Basilius, to auoide his further discourses of affection, encouraged the shepheards to begin, whom she saw all ready for them.

The
The second Eclogues.

He rude tumulte of the Enispians gaue occasion to the honest shepheards to beginne their pastorals this day with a daunce, which they called the skirmish betwixt Reason and Passion. For seuen shepheards (which were named the Reasonable shepheards) joined theselues; foure of them making a square, and the other two going a little wide of either side, like winges for the maine battell; and the seuenth man formost, like the forlorne hope to begin the skirmish. In like order came out the seuen appassionated shepheards; all keeping the pafe of their foote by their voice, and sundry comforted instruments they held in their armes. And first, the formost of Reasonable side began to sing.

R. Thou Rebell vile, come to thy master yelde. And the other that met with him anwered.

P. No, Tyrant, no mine, mine shall be the fielde.

Reason. Can Reason then a Tyrant counted be?

Passion. If Reason will, that Passions be not free.

R. But Reason will, that Reason govern most.

P. And Passion will, that Passion rule the rost.

R. Your will is will; but Reason reason is.

P. Will hath his will, when Reasons will doth misse.

R. Whom Passion leades unto his death is bent.

P. And let him die, so that he die content.

R. By nature you to Reason faith have sivorne.

Hh 2

P. Not
The Countesse of Pembroke

P. Not so, but fellowlike together borne.
R. Who Passion doth ensue, lines in annoy.
P. Who Passion doth forsake, lines void of joy.
R. Passion is blinde, and treads an unknowne trace
P. Reason hath eyes to see his owne ill case.

Then as they approched neerer, the two of Reasons fides, as if they shot at the other, thus fange.
R. Dare Passions then abide in Reasons light?
P. And is not Reason dimde with Passions might?
R. O foolish thing, which glory dath destroye.
P. A glorious title of a foolish toy.
R. Weakenes you are, dare you with our strength fight?
P. Because our weaknes weakeneth all your might.
R. O sacred Reason, helpe our ventuous toiles.
P. O Passion, passe on feeble Reasons spoiles.
R. We with ourselves abide a daily strife.
P. We gladly use the sweetnes of our life.
R. But yet our strife sure peace in end doth breede.
P. We now have peace, your peace we doo not neede.

Then did the two square battailes meete, & in stead of fighting embrace one another, singing thus.
R. We are too strong: but Reason seekes no blood.
P. Who be too weake, do feigne they be too good.
R. Though we cannot orcome, our cause is just.
P. Let vs orcome, and let vs be unjust.
R. Yet Passion, yeeld at length to Reaons stroke.
P. What shal we winne by taking Reaons yoke?
R. The ioyes you have shall be made permanent.
P. But so we shall with griefe learne to repent.
R. Repent indeed, but that shall be your blisse.
P. How know we that, since present ioyes we missee?
R. You know it not: of Reason therefore know it.
No Reason yet had ever skill to show it.

Then let us both to heavenly rules give place,
Which Passions skill, and Reason do deface.

Then embraced they one another, and came to the
King, who framed his praises of the according to
Zelmanes liking, whose unrestrained parts, the minde &
eie, had their free course to the delicate Philoclea, whose
looke was not short in well requiting it, although she
knew it was a hatefull fight to her jealous mother. But
Dicus (that had in this time taken a great liking of Dorus
for the good partes he found above his age in him)
had a delight to taste the fruites of his wit, though in a
subject which he him selfe most of all other despised:
and so entred to speach with him in the manner of this
following Eclogue.

Dicus. Dorus.

Dorus, tell me, where is thy wonted motion
To make these woods resounde thy lamentation?
Thy sainte is dead, or dead is thy devotion.
For who doth holde his love in estimation,
To witnesse that he thinkes his thoughts delicious,
Thinks to make each thing badge of his sweet passion.

But what doth make thee Dicus so suspicous
Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?
Who others vertue doubt, themselves are vicious.
Not so, although my mettall were most mutable,
Her beames have wrought therin most faire impression:
To such a force some change were nothing suitable.

The
The Counte$ of Pembroke's

Dorus. If Sunnie beames shame heavenly habitation; If three-lea'd graffe seeme to the sheepe unsavourie, Then base and sower is Loues most high vocation. Or if shep's cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie, Then may I hope, my pipe may haue abilitie, To helpe her praise,who decks me in her flauerie. No, no, no wordes ennable selfe-nobilitie. As for your doubts, her voice was it deceaued me, Her eye the force beyond all possibiistiie.

Dorus. Sight is his roote, in thought is his progression, His childhood moonder, prenticeship attention, His youth delight, his age the soules oppression: Doubte is his sleepe, he waketh in invention, Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefullnes;
But the shephe may thy good wishes satisfie
With large increase, and wooll of fine perfection.
So she thy love, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
As thou wilt give our soules a deare refection,
By telling how she was, how now she framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.

But so thy shephe may thy good wishes satisfie
With large increase, and wooll of fine perfection.
So she thy love, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
As thou wilt give our soules a deare refection,
By telling how she was, how now she framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.

Blest be the name, wherewith my mistres named is:
Whose wounds are salves, whose yokes please more than pleasure
Her stains are beams, vertue the fault she blamed is. (doth:
The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treasure doth:
All numbring artes her endless graces number not:
Time, place, life, wit scarcely her rare gifts measure doth.
Is she in rage? so is the Sunne in sommer hot,
Yet harvest brings. Dost she alas absent herself?
The Sunne is hid; his kindly shadows cumber not.
But when to give some grace she doth content herself,
O then it shineth, then are the heav'ns distributed,
And Venus seems, to make up her, she spent herself.
Thus then (I say) my mischieses bane contributed
A greater good by her divine reflection,
My harmes to me, my blisse to her attributed,
Thus she is framde; her eyes are my direction,
Her love my life; her anger my destruction.

Arcadia. Lib. 2. 236

Dicus.

Dorus.
The Countesse of Pembroke's
Lastywhatsois,thatismyprotection.

Dicus. Thy safetie sure is wrapped in destruction:
For that construction thine owne wordes do beare.
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,
Makes Reason lie a slane to servile Sense.
A weake defence where weakensse is thy force:
So is remorse in solle dearely bought.

Dorus. If I had thought to heare blasphemous wordes,
My breaste to swords, my soule to hell have sold
I rather would, then thus mine eares desile
With wordes so vile, which viler breath doth breed.
O heards take heed; for I a woolls have found;
Who hunting round the strongest for to kill,
His breaste doth fill with earth of others ioyes,
And lovd so pils downe, pild downe destroyes.
O sheepeheards boyes, eschew these tongues of venome,
Which do envenome both the soule and senses.
Our best defenses are to fle these adders.
O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,
Who judg[e that honour,] which hath scope to slander.

Dicus. Dorus you wander farre in great reproches,
So love encroches on your charmed reason,
But it is season for to end our singing.
Such anger bringing: as for me, my fancie
In sicke-mans frenzie rather takes compassion,
Then rage for rage: rather my wish I send to thee,
Thou soone may have some helpe, or change of passion.
She oft her looks she starres her savour bend to thee:
Fortune store, Nature health, Love grant perswasion.
A quiet mind none but thy selfe can lend to thee,  
Thus I commend to thee all our former love,

Well do I prove, errour lies oft in zeale,
Yet it is zeale, though errour, of true hart.
Nought could impart such heates to friendly mind.
But for to find thy words did her disgrace,
Whose oneely face the little heauen is,
Which who doth misse his eyes are but delusions,
Barr'd from their chiefeest object of delightfulness,
Thrown on this earth the Chaos of confusion.

As for thy wish to my enraged spitefulness,
The loueely blowne with rare reward, my prayer is
Thou mayst loue her that I may see thysightfulness.
The quiet mind (whereof my selfe emparer is,
As thou dost thinke) should most of all disquiet me
Without her loue, then any mind who fairer is.

Her oneely care from surfeet-moes can diet me:
She holdes the ballance of my contentation:
Her cleased eyes, nought els in stormes can quiet me.

Nay rather then my eafe discontentation
Should breed to her, let me for aye deiect be
From any joy, which might her griefe occasion.
With so sweete plagues my happe harmes infected be:
Paine willes me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
For though life irkes, in life my loues protected be.
Thus for ecb change my changelesse hart I mortifie.

When they had ended to the good pleasing of the
assistants, especially of Zeliane, who never forgot
to giue due comedations to her friend Dorus, the more
to advance him in his pursuite (although therein he had brought
The Countesse of Pembroke's

brought his matters to a more wished conclusion then yet the knew of) out starte a jolly yonker, his name was Nico, whose tongue had borne a very itching silence all this while. And having spied one Pas, a mate of his, as mad as himselfe (both indeed lads to clime any tree in the world) he bestowed this manner of salutation vpon him, and was with like reverence requited.

Nico. Dorus.

And are you there old Pas? in troth I ever thought,
Among us all we should find out some thing of nought.

Pas.

And I am here the same, so mote I thrive and thee,
Despairde in all this flocke to find a knaue, but thee.

Nico.

Ah now I see, why thou art in thy selfe so blind:
Thy gray-hood hides the thing, that thou despairst to find.

Pas.

My gray-hood is mine owne, all be it be but gray,
Not like the scrippe thou stolst, while Dorcas sleeping lay.

Nico.

Mine was the scrippe: but thou, that seeming raid with love,
Didst snatch from Colmas hand her greeny wroughtie glone.

Pas.

Ah foole, so Courtiers do. But who did lively skippe,
When for a treene-dish stolne, thy father did thee whippe?

Nico.

In deed the witch thy dam her crouch from shoulder spred,
For pelfring Lalus lambe, with crouch to blese thy head.

Pas.

My voice the lambe did winne, Menalcas was our judge:
Off singeing match was made, whence he with shame did trudge.

Couldst
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Couldst thou make Lalus fly? so nightingales avoide, 
When with the kaying crowes their musicke is annoide.

Nay like to nightingales the other birds give eare: 
My pipe and song made him both pipe and song forsweare.

I think it well: such voice would make one musicke hate: 
But if I had bene there, th' adst met another mate.

Another sure as is a gander from a goose: 
But still when thou dost sing, me thinkes a colt is loose.

Well aimed by my hat: for as thou sangst last day, 
The neighbours all did cry, alas what affe doth bray?

But here is Dicus old, let him then speake the woord, 
To whether with best cause the Nymphes faire flowers affoord.

Content: but I will lay a wager hercunto, 
That profitt may ensue to him that best can do. 
I haue (and long shall haue) a white great nimble cat, 
A king upon a mouse, a strong foe to the rat,
Fine eares, long taile be bath, with Lions curbed clave, 
Which oft he lifteth vp, and stays his lifted pawe,
Deepe musing to himselfe, which after-moving shoves, 
Till with lickt beard, his eye offire espie his foes.
If thou (alas poore if) do winne, then winne thou this, 
And if I better sing, let me thy Colina kisse.

Kisse her? now mayst thou kisse, I have a better match; 
A prettie curre it is, his name ivis is Catch,
No eare nor taile he hath, least they should him disgrace.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

A ruddy haire his cote, with fine long speckled face:
He never musing standes, but with himselfe will play
Leaping at every stie, and angrie with a flea:
He oft would kill a mouse, but he disdaines to fight,
And makes our home good sport with dauncing bolt upright.
This is my paume, the price let Dicus judgement shew:
Such oddes I willing lay: for him and you I know.

Dicus. Sing then my lads, but sing with better vaine then yet,
Or else who singeth worst, my skill will hardly hit.

Nico. Who doubts but Pas fine pipe againe will bring
The auncient prayse to Arcad shepheardes skill?
Pan it not dead, since Pas begins to sing.

Pas. Who euermore will love Apollos quill,
Since Nico doth to sing so widely gape?
Nico his place farre better furnish will.

Nico. Was not this he, who did for Syrinx scape
Raging in woes teach pastors first to plaine?
Do you not heare his voice, and see his shape?

Pas. This is not he that failed her to gaine,
Which made a Bay, made Bay a holy tree:
But this is one that doth his musicke staine.

Nico. O Faunes, O Fairies all, and do you see,
And suffer such a wrong? a wrong I trave,
That Nico must with Pas compared be?

Pas. O Nymphes, I tell you newes, for Pas you knowe:

While
While I was warbling out your wond'ring praise,
Nico would needs with Pas his bagpipe blowe.

If never I did faile your holy-dayes,
With daunces, carols, or with harlybreake:
Let Pas now know, how Nico makes the layes.

If each day hath bene holy for your sake,
Unto my pipe, O Nymphes, help now my pipe,
For Pas well knowes what layes can Nico make.

Alas how oft I looke on cherries ripe,
Me thinkes I see the lippes my Leuca hath,
And wanting her, my weeping eyes I wipe.

Alas, when in spring meete roses rathe,
And thinke from Colinas sweet red lips I saw,
I leave mine eyes unwipte my cheekes to bathe.

As I of late, near bushes vsde my sue,
I spied a thrub where she did make her nest,
That will I take, and to my Leuca give.

But long bave I a sparrow gailie dreft,
As white as milke, and comming to the call,
To put it with my hand in Colinas brest.

I oft do sue, and Leuca saith, I shall,
But when I did come neere with heat and hope,
She ranne away, and throw at me a ball.

Colina once said, she left the wicket open,
The Countesse of Pembroke
For me to come, and so she did: I came,
But in the place found nothing but a rope.

Nico. When Leuca dooth appeare, the Sunne for shame
Dooth hide himselfe: for to himselfe he sayes,
If Leuca line, she darken will my name.

Pas. When Colinas doth come forth, the Sun displays
His utmost light; for well his witte doth know,
Colinas faire beames emblemish much his rais.

Nico. Leuca to me did yeater-morning shewe
In perfect light, which could not me deceave,
Her naked legge, more white then whitest snowe.

Pas. But yeater-night by light I did receave
From Colinas eyes, which fall in darkenes shine,
I sawe her armes, where purest Lillies cleave.

Nico. She once starke nak'd did bathe a little tine;
But stil me thought) with beauties from her fell,
She did the waters wash, and make more fine.

Pas. She once, to coole her selfe, stood in a well,
But euer since that well is well besought,
And for Rose-water soould of rarest smell.

Nico. To rivers banke, being on walking brought,
She bad me fight her babie in the brooke,
Alas (said I) this babe dooth nurce my thought.

Pas. As in a glasse I held she once did looke,
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

I said, my hands well paide her for mine eyes,
Since in my hands selfe goodly sight she tooke.

O if I had a ladder for the skies,
I would climbe vp, and bring a prettie starre,
To weare upon her neck, that open lies.

O if I had Apollos golden carre,
I would come downe, and yeeld to her my place,
That shining now she then might shine more farre.

Nothing (O Leuca) shall thy fame deface,
While shepherds tunes be heard, or rimes be read,
Or while that shepherds loue a lonely face.

Thy name (O Cosma) shall with praise be spread,
As farre as any shepherds piping be,
As farre as Loue possessest any head.

Thy monument is layd in many a tree,
With name engra'ed, so though thy bodie die,
The after-folkes shall wonder still at thee.

So oft these woods have heard me Cosma crie,
That after death, to heau'n in woods resound,
With Echoes help, shall Cosma, Cosma die.

Peace, peace good Pas, thou wearest even the ground
With foolish song: I pray thee learne to blea,
For good thou mayst yet prooue in sheepish sound.

My father hath at home a prettie Iay,

Goe
The Countesse of Pembroke's
Goewinne of him (for chattering) praise or blame:
For so yet of a conquest speake thou may.

Nico. Tell me (and be my Pan) the monsters name,
That hath four legs, and with two onely goes,
That hath four eyes, and onely two can frame.

Pas. Tell me (and Phoebus be) what monster grows
With so strong lines, that bodie cannot rest
In ease, untill that bodie life forgoes.

Dicus. Enough, enough; so ill hath done the best,
That since the hauing them to neither's due,
Let cat and dog fight which shall have both you.

Some speech there straights grew among the hearers,
What they should meane by the riddles of the two
monsters. But Zelmane, whose harte better delighted in
wailefull ditties, as more according to her fortune, he
desired Lamon, he would againe repeat some other
lamentation of the still-absent Strephon and Klaus. Basilius
(as soone as he understood Zelmanes pleasure) com-
manded Lamon vpon paine of his life (as though every
thing were a matter of life and death, that pertained
to his mistresse seruice) immediately to sing it: who
with great cunning, varying his voice according to the
diverfitie of the persons, began this Dizaine, anwered
in that kinde of verse, which is called the Crowne.

Strephon. Klaus.

Strephon. I love in griefe, and doo deteste all ioyes:
Defyse delight, and tyrde with thought of ease.

I turne
I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,
And with the change of them my fancie please.
I stude that which may me most displease;
And in despite of that displeasures might,
Embrace that most, that most my soule destroys.
Blinded with beames, fell darkenes is my light:
Dole on my raine feedes, with sucking smarte,
I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte.

I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,
And loth this time, calleth life, nay thinke, that life
Nature to me for torment did emparte;
Thinke, my hard haps have blunted deaths sharpe knife,
Not sparing me, in whom his workes be rife:
And thinking this, thinke Nature, Life, and Death
Place Sorrowes triumph on my conquered brest:
Where to I yeeld, and seeke none other breath,
But from the jent of some infectious grave:
Nor of my fortune ought, but mischieue craue.

Nor of my fortune ought but mischiefe craue,
And seek to nourish that, which now contaynes
All what I am: if I my selfe will saue,
Then must I saue, what in me chiefly reignet.
Which is the hatefull web of Sorrowes paines.
Sorrow then cherish me, for I am sorowe:
No being now, but sorowe I can haue:
Then decke me as thine owne, thy helpe I borowe,
Since thou my riches arte, and that thou hast:
Enough to make a fertill minde lie waiste.

Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste
The Countesse of Pembrokes

Is that huge storme, which powres it selfe on me:
Hailestones of teares, of sighes a monstrous blast,
Thunders of cries, lightnings my wilde lookes be,
The darkened heau'n my soule which nought can see,
The flying sprites which trees by rootes up teare
Be those despaire, which have my hopes quite waft.
The difference is, all folks those formes forbeare:
But I cannot, who then my selfe should flye.
So close unto my selfe, my wrackes doo lie.

Strophon. So close unto my selfe my wrackes doo lie:
Both cause, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ship, my selfe, whose course to love doth bend,
Sore beaten doth her mast of Comforte spende:
Her cable, Reason, breaks from anchor, Hope:
Fancie, her tackling, torn away doth flye:
Ruine, the winde, hath blowne her from her scope:
Brused with waues of Care, but broken is
On rocke, Despaire, the burial of my bliss.

Klaius. On rocke, Despaire, the burial of my bliss:
I long doe plowe with plough of deepse Desire:
The seed False-meaning is, no truth to misse:
I harowe it with Thoughts, which all conspire
Favour to make my chiefe and onely hire:
But woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
And now I saine would reape, I reape but this,
Hate fully growne, Ablence now sprung up.
So that I see, although my sight empaire,
Saine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Paine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.
For so did, when with my angle, Will,
I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.
E'en then Despaire did Hope already kill:
Yet Fancie would perforce employ his skill,
And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,
Lambe with the angle, which it selfe did beare,
And unto death, quite drownded in Dolours, brought
To death, as then disguis'd in her faire face.
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase.

Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase,
When first that crowned Basiliske I knewe,
Whose footsteps I with kisses oft did trace,
Till by such hap, as I must ever revere,
Mine eyes did light upon her shinning home,
And hers on me, astonish'd with that sight.
Since then my harte did loose his wonted place,
Infect'd so with her sweet poisons might,
That, leaving me for dead, to her it went:
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.

But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent,
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me,
Yet living still in her, while her beams lent
Such vital scarce, that her mine eyes might see.
But now those living lights absented be,
Full dead before, I now to dust should fall,
But that eternall paines my soule should bent,
And keepe it still within this body thrall:
That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,
In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Klaus. In earthly fetters felt a lasting hell
Alas I do, from which to finde release,
I would the earth, I would the heavens fell.
But vaine it is to thinke these paines should cease,
Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.
O faire, o only faire, from thee, alas;
These foulè, most foulè, distresses to me fell;
Since thou from me (o me) o Sunne didst passe.
Therefore esteeming all good blessings toyes
Joy in griefe, and doe detest all ioyes.

Stephon. Joy in griefe, and doe detest all ioyes.
And now an ende, (o Claius) now an ende
For even the hearbes our mournefull musique stroyes,
And from our burning breath the trees doe bende.

So well did Lamons voice expresse the passiôs of those shepehers, that all the Princely beholders were striken in a silent consideration of them; indeed every one making, that he heard of another the balace of his own troubles. And Basilius perceiving such melancholique musique best conforted to the humor of his mistrefse, entreated againe the young melancholy shepeheard, that he would empathe some part of the sorow his contenance so well witnessed vnto them. Which he in parte to satisfie, began an Eclogue betwixt himself and the Echo: framing his voice in those deferte places, as what words he would haue the Echo replie, vnto those he would singe higher then the rest, and so kindly framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it. Which with these Hexameters in the following order he vttetted.

Faire
FAIRE ROCKS, GOODLY RIVERS, SWEET WOODS, WHEN SHALL I SEE PEACE?

PEACE? WHO DEBARS ME MY TONGUE? WHO IS IT THAT COMES ME SUCH?
O I DOO KNOW WHAT GUEST I DOO MEETE: IT IS ECHO.

WELL MEET ECHO; APROCH, AND TELL ME THY WILL TOO.

ECHO, WHAT DOO I GET YEELING MY SPIRITE TO MY GRIEVES?
WHAT MEDICINE MAY I FINDE FOR A PAINE THAT DRAVES ME TO DEATH?
O POISONOUS MEDICINE: WHAT WORSE TO ME CAN BE THEN IT?

IN WHAT STATE WAS I THEN, WHEN I TOOKE THIS DEADLY DISCASE?
AND WHAT MANER A MINDE, WHICH HAD TO THAT HUMOR A VAIN?

HAITH NOT REASON ENOUGH VEHEMENCE THE DESIRE TO REPROVE?
OFT PROVE I: BUT WHAT VALUE, WHEN REASON SEEKES TO BE GONE?
O WHAT IS IT? WHAT IS IT, THAT MAY BE A VALUE TO MY LOVE?
WHAT DOO LOVERS SEEKE FOR, LONG SEEKING FOR T'ENJOYE?
WHAT BE THE JOYES, FOR WHICH T'ENJOYE THEY WENT TO THE PAINES?

THEN TO AN EARNEST LOVE WHAT DOOTH BEST VICTORIE LEND?
ENDE? BUT I CAN NEVER ENDE: LOVE WILL NOT GIVE ME THE LEAVE.

HOW BE THE MINDES DISPOSED, THAT CANNOT TASTE THE PHYSICKE?
YET SAY AGAINE TH' ADVICE FOR TH' ILS THAT I TOLDE THEE.

DOOTH THE INFECTED WREST OF HIS ILL THE EXTREMITIE KNOW?

BUT IF HE KNOW NOT HIS HARMES, WHAT GUIDS HATH HE WHILST HE BE BLIND?

WHAT BLINDE GUIDES CAN HE HAVE THAT LEADES TO A FANCIE?
 CAN FANCIES WANTE EYES? OR HE FALL THAT STEPETH ALOFT?
WHAT CAUSES FIRST MADE THESE TORMENTS ON ME TO LIGHT?

CAN THEN A CAUSE BE SO LIGHT, THAT FORCEST A MAN TO GOE DIE?

LET TELL, WHAT LIGHT THING I HAD IN ME TO DRAWE ME TO DIE?

EIE, EIGHT MADE ME TO YEELD: BUT WHAT FIRST PEART TO MY EYES?
EYES HURTERS? EYES HURTE? BUT WHAT FROM THEM TO ME FALLS?

BUT WHEN I FIRST DID FALL, WHAT BROUGHT MOST FALL TO MY HARTE?

ARTE? WHAT CAN BE THAT ARTE, WHICH THOU DOO'ST MEANE BY THY SPEACH?

WHAT BE THE FRUITES OF SPEAKING ARTE, WHAT GROWS BY THE WORDES?
O MUCH MORE THEN WORDES: THOSE WORDES SERUI'D MORE ME TO BLESS.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

The Countesse of Pembroke's

O when shall I be knowne, where most to be known I doo long?
Long be thy woes for such bad newes: how recks she my thoughts?
Then, then what doo I sayne, since wnt'her will I doo winde?
Winde, tempests, and stormes: yet in ende what gives she desire?
Silly rewarde: yet above women bath she a title.
What great name may I give to so heau'ly a woman?
Woe, but seems to me joye, that agrees to my thought so.
Thinke so: for of my desired bliss it is only the course.
Curse be thy selfe for cursing that, which leads me to joyes.
What be the sweete creatures where lowly demaundes be not harde?
Hars to be gott, but goe constant, to be helde very steeles.
How be they helds wvkinde? speake, for this hast narrowly pry de.
How can pride come there since springs of beautie be thence?
Horrible is this blasphemie unto the most holy.
Thou lift, fallc Echo, their mindes, as vertue, be inste.
Mockst thou those Diamonds, which onely hematcht by the Godds?
Odds? what an odds is there, since them to the heavens I preferre?
Tell yet againe, how name ye the goodly made euill?
Devill? in hell where such Devilli is, to that hell I doo goe.

Longe.
Oughts.
Winde.
Ire.
A little.
A woman.
I thought so.
Course.
Joyes.
Harde.
Eeles.
Pride.
Thence.
O lye.
Insie.
Odds.
Erra.
A devill.
Goe.

After this well placed Echo, the other shepheards were offering them felues to haue continued the sports: But the night had so quiety spent most part of her selfe, that the King for that time licensd them & so bringing Zelmane to her lodging, who would much rather have done the same for Philoclea, of all sides they went to counterfeit a sleepe in their beds, for a true one their agonies could not afoord them. Yet they laie they (for so might they be most solitarie) for the foode of thei thoughts, till it was neere noone the next day. After which Basilius was to continue his Apollo devotiones, and the other to meditate vpon their private desires.

The end of the second Booke.
THE THIRDE BOOKE
OF THE COVNTESSE OF
PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. i.

Dorus-his faire and soule weather in his love. His forlorn agones. His doubts to write, and Pamelaes to reade, his elegie.

His last dayes daunger, having made Pamelaes loue discerne, what a losse it should have suffered, if Dorus had bene destroyed, breddde such tenderness of kindnes in her toward him: that she coulde no longer keepe Loue from looking through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a close prisoner she had to her hart onely committed, so as finding not only by his speecches & letters, but by the pityfull oratiō of a languishing behauior, & the easily deciphered character of a sorrowful face, that Despair began nowe to threaten him destruction, she grewe content both to pitie him, and let him see she pittyed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames thawe away the former iciness of her behauior, as by
by entertaining his discourses (whence ever he did vse them) in the third person of Musidorus; to so farre a degree, that in the ende she said, that if she had bene the Princesse, whom that disguised Prince had vertuously loued, she would have required his faith with faithfull affection: finding in her hart, that nothing could so hartily loue as vertue: with many mo words to the same sense of noble fauour, & chast plainnesse. Which when at the first it made that expected blisse shine vpon, Doro-

mus; he was like one frozen with extremite of colde, o Her-haftily brought to a great fire, rather opprest, then relieued with such a lightning of felicitie. But after the strength of nature had made him able to feel the sweetnesse of ioyfulnes, that again being a child of Passion, & never acquainted with mediocrity, could not set bouds vpon his happines, nor be content to giue Desire a kinglydome, but that it must be an unlimited Monarchy. So that the ground he stood vpon being over-high in happines, & slipperie through affection, he could not hold himselfe from falling into such an error, which with sighs blew all comfort out of his brest, & washt away all cheerfulnes of his cheere, with teares. For this fauour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his desire, & Desire considering nothing, but oportunitie: one time (Mopsa being called away by her mother, & he left alone with Pamela) the sudden occasion called Loue, & that never staid to aske Reasons leauue; but made the too-much loving Dorus take her in his armes, offering to kiss her, and, as it were, to establishe a trophee of his victorie.

But she, as if she had bin ready to drinke a wine of excellent tast & colour, which suddenly she perceiued had poison in it, so did she put him away fro her: lokinge first vnto
vtnto heauen, as amazed to find heiselfe so beguiled in
him, then laying the cruel punishment vpon him of an-
gry Loue, and lowring beautie, shewing disdain, & a de-
spiring disdain, Away (said she) vnworthy man to loue,
or to be loued. Assure thy selfe, I hate my selfe for being
so deceived; judge then what I doo thee, for deceiving
me. Let me see thee no more, the only fall of my judg-
ment, and strange of my conscience. With that she called
Mopsy, not staying for any answer (which was no other,
but a flood of tears, which she seemed not to mark (much
lesse to pity) & chid her for having so left her alone.

It was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow, but it
was euery a death, which then laid hold of Dorus: which
certainly at that instante would haue killed him, but that
the feare to tary longer in her presence (contrary to her
comandement) gaue him life to cary himselfe away fro
her sight, and to run into the woods, where, throwing
himselfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to
lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grie-
uing for himselfe (which he did no way) but to curses
of his life, as one that detested himselfe. For finding
himselfe not onely vnhappy, but vnhappie after being
falne from all happinesse: and to be falne from all hap-
piness, not by any misconceiuing, but by his own fault,
and his fault to be done to no other but to Pamela: he
did not tender his owne estate, but despised it; greedi-
ly drawing into his minde, all conceits which might
more and more torment him. And so remained he two
dayes in the woods, disdaining to giue his bodie food,
or his mind comfort, loving in himselfe nothing, but
the loue of her. And indeed that loue onely strange with
the fury of his anguish, telling it, that if it destroyed
Do-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

it should also destroy the image of her that liued in

Doros: and when the thought of that was crept in
nto him, it bega to win of him some compassion to the
shrine of the image, & to bewaile not for himselfe (who he ha-
ted) but that so notable a loue should perish. The began
he onely so farre to wish his owne good, as that Pamela
might pardon him the fault, though not the punish-
ment: & the uttermost height he aspired unto, was, that
after his death, he might yet pittie his error, and know
that it proceeded of loue, and not of boldnesse.

That conceit found such friendship in his thoughts,
that at last he yelded, since he was banished her presence,
to seeke some meanes by writing to shew his sorrow, &
testifie his repentance. Therefore getting him the nec-
tesarie instruments of writing, he thought best to coate-
faite his hand (fearing that as alreadie she knew his, she
would cast it away as soone as she saw it) and to put it in
verf, hoping, that would draw her on to read the more,
chusing the Elegiac as fittest for mourning. But pen did
neuer more quakingly performe his office; neuer was
paper more double moistned with inke & teares; neuer
words more slowly maried together, & neuer the Muses
more tired, then now with changes & rechanges of his
deuises: fearing howe to ende, before he had resolued
how to begin, mistrusting eche word, condemning eche
sentence. This word was not signifiant, that word was
too plain: this would not be conceiued, the other would
be il conceiued. Here Sorrow was not inough expressed;
there he seemed too much for his owne sake to be sory.
This sentence rather shewed art, then passion; that sen-
tence rather foolishly passionate, then forcibly mouing.
At last, marring with mending, and putting out better,
then he left, he made an end of it; and being ended, & divers times ready to tear it: till his reason assuring him, the more he studied, the worse it grew, he folded it vp, devoutly invoking good acceptation vnto it; and watching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (sauer Mopsa) to the other lodge, stale vp into Pamela's chamber, and in her staidish (which first he kisised; and craved of it a safe and friendly keeping) left it there, to be scene his inke (himselfe returning againe to be true prisoner to desperate sorrow) leaving her staidish upon her beds head, to giue her the more occasion to marke it: which also fell out.

For she finding it at her after noone-returne, in another place then she left it, opened it. But when she saw the letter, her hart gaue her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, she went away from it, as if it had bin a contagious garment of an infected person: and yet was not long away, but that she wished she had read it, though she were loth to reade it. Shall I (said she) second his boldnesse so farre, as to reade his presumptuous letters? And yet (said she) he sees me not to growe the bolder thereby: And how can I tell, whether they be presumptuous? The paper came from him, and therefore not worthe to be receyued; and yet the paper (she thought) was not guiltie. At last, she concluded, it were not much amisse to looke it ouer, that she might out of his worde pick some further quarrell against him. Then she opened it, and threw it away, and took it vp againe, till (ere she were aware) her eyes woulde needes reade it, containing this matter.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

unto a caitifc wretch, whom long affliction holdeth,
and now fully beleues helpe to be quite perished.

Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the last monumet of his anguifh,
O you (alas so I find) cause of his onely ruine.

Dread not a whit (O goodly cruel) that pitie may enter
into thy hart by the sight of this Epifile I fende:
And for refuse to behold of these ftrange wounds the recittal,
leat it might th'allure home to thy felfe to returne,
(Vnto thyfelfe I do means those graces dwell so within thee,
gratefulnes, sweetnes, holy lone, hartie regard)
Such thing cannot I fecke (Despair hath giuen me my answer
despair most tragicall clane to a deadly request)
Such thing cannot be hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes;
hard like a rich marble: hard, but a faire Diamond.
Can those eyes that of eyes drownd in moft hardy flowing teares,
(teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorse;
Can those eyes now yeeld to the kind conceit of a frowne,
which inke onely relates, but ne laments we repliest.
Ah, that, that I do not conceive (though that to my bliffe were)
more then Neftors yeares, more then a Kings diademe.
Ah, that, that I do not conceiue, to the heau^ when a mouse clines
then may I hope I atchieue grace of a heavenly tiger.
But, but alas, like a man cedemni d doth craue to be heard fpeake
not that he hopes for amends of the defafter he feele;
But finding th'approch of death with an ougly relenting,
gives an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:
Right so my boiling hart, enflamede with fire of a faire eye,
bubbling out doth breath signes of his hugie doleurs:
Now that he finds to what end his life and lone be reserved,
and that he hence must part where to live onely he lou'd.
O faire, O fairest, are such thy triumphs to thy fairnesse?
can death beautie become? must be such a monument:

Must
Arcadia. Lib. 3.  247

Must I be only the marke, shall prove that Vertue is angrie?

shall prove that fiercenes can with a white done abide?
Shall to the world appeare that faith and loue be rewarded
with mortall desdaigne, bent to unendly renenge?

unto renenge? O sweete, on a wretch wilt thou be renenged?
shall such high Planets ende to the losse of a worme?
And to renenge who doo bend, would in that kind be renenged,
as th offence was done, and goe beyond if he can.
All my offence was Loue: with Loue then must I be chastned,
and with more, by the lawes that to Renenge doo belong.

If that loue be a fault, more fault in you to be louely:
Loue never had me opprest, but that I saw to be lou’d.
You be the cause that I lou’d: what Reason blameth a shadowe,
that with a body ’t goes? since by a body it is.

If that Loue you did hate, you should your beautie have hidden:
you should those faire eyes have with a veile covered.

But foole, foole that I am, those eyes would shine fro a dark cane.
what veiles then doo prevaile, but to a more miracle?
Or those golden lockes, those lockes which lock me to bondage,
torne you should disperse unto the blasts of a winde.

But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a hair of her head so’d,
e’en as I am, so I should unto that hare be a thrall.

Or with fair huds-nailes (which nailes me to this death)
you should have your face (since Loue is ill) blemished.
O wretch, what do I say? should that faire face be defaced?
should my too-much sight cause so true a Sunne to be lost?

First let Cimmerian darknes be my onel habitacion:
first be mine eyes pulde out, first be my braine perished;
Ere that I should consent to doo such excessive a dammage
unto the earth, by the hurt of this her heavenly reveill.
O no: but such loue you say you could have afoorded,
as might learne Temprance voyde of a reigns events.

O sweete
The Countesse of Pembroke's

O sweet simplicitie: from whence should Love so be learned?

unto Cupid that boy shall a Pedante be found?

Well: but faultie I was: Reason to my Passion yelded,

Passion unto my rage, Rage to a hasty revenge.

But what's this for a fault, for which such fault is abolisht,

such faith, so staineles, innioile, violent?

Shall I not? o may I not thus yet refresh the remembrance,

what sweete ioyes I had once, and what a place I did hold?

Shall I not once obiect, that you, you granted a favour

unto the man, whom now such meries you awarde? (were:

Bed your thoughts to the dear sweet words which the to me giue

think what a world is now, think who hath alterm her hart.

What? was I then worthie such good, now worthie such euill?

now fled, then cherished? then so nic, now so remote?

Did not a roset breath, from lips more roset proceeding,

say, that I should well finde in what a care I was bad?

With much more: now what doo I finde, but Care to abhor me,

Care that I sinke in griefe, Care that I liue banished?

And banished doo I liue, nor now will seke a recou'rie,

since so she will, whose will is to me more then a lave.

If then a man in most ill case may give you a farewell;

farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delight.

CHAP. 2.

The young Ladies mette: invited to the countrie-wenches

sports, goe thether, there are taken, and thence ca-

ried to Amphialius castle: Their entertainment there.

Cecropias auricular confession of her proud cariage in

prosperitie, and ambitious practises in aduerstie. Am-

phialus his affection in these actions.

What
Hat this would haue wrought in her, she her selfe could not tell: for, before her Reason could moderate the disputation betwene Fauour & Faultines, her sister, and Mifo, called her downe to entertaine Zel-mane, who was come to visite the two sisters, about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of Beautie was turned: while Gynecta weared her bed with her melancholie sicknes, and made Mifo's shrewdnesse (who like a sprite, sette to keep a treasure, barde Zel-mane from any further conference) to be the Lieutenant of her jealousie: Both she and her husband, driuing Zel-mane to such a streit of resolution, either of impossible granting, or dangerous refusing, as the best escape she had, was (as much as she could) to auoyde their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the vprore, (Basilius being with his sicke wife, conferring vpon such examinations, as Philanax, and other of his noble-men had made of this late seditiō, all touching Cecropia with vehemēt suspition of giving either flame or fuel vnto it) Zel-mane came with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before her, & had gotten his seeate in Philoclea: who now with a bashfull cheerefulnesse (as though she were ashamed, that she could not choose but be glad) joyned with her sister, in making much of Zel-mane.

And so as they late deuising how to giue more feathers to the wings of Time, there came to the lodge dore, sixe maides, all in one liuerie of ikarlette petti cotes, which were tuckt vp almoiste to their knees, the petticoates them selues beinge in many places garni-
The ComieJe of Temptokes

garnished with leaves, their legs naked, sauing that above the ankles they had little black silke laces, upon which did hang a few silver belles: like which they had a little aboue their elbows, upon their bare armes. Upon their haire they were garlands of roses and gilliflowers, and the haire was so drest, as that came againe above the garlandes: enterchaunging a mutuall covering: so as it was doubtfull, whether the haire drest the garlandes, or the garlandes drest the haire. Their breasts liberall to the eye: the face of the formost of of them, in excellencie faire; and of the rest louely, if not beautifull: and beautifull would haue bene, if they had not sufferd greedy Phæbus, ouer-often, and harde, to kisse them. Their countenaunces full of a gracefull grauitie; so as the gesture matcht with the apparrell, it might seeme a wanton modestie, and an entifing sobernes. Each of them had an instrument of musick in their hands, which consorting their wel-pleasing tunes, did charge each eare with vnresemblenes, that did not lende it selfe vnto them. The Musick entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all desirous to see from whence so pleasant a guest was come: and therefore went out together, where, before they could take the paines to doubt, much lesse to aske the question of their qualitie, the fairest of them (with a gay, but yet discreete demeanour) in this fort spake vnto them. Most excellent Ladies, (whose excellencies haue power to make cities enuie these woods, and solitarines to be accounted the sweetest companie) vouchsafe our message your gracious hearing, which as it comes from Loue, so comes it from louely persons. The maides of all this coast of Arcadia, understanding the oftean access to that certaine shep-
Arcadia. Lib. 3. 249

...the shepheard of these quarters, are allowed to hauve in this forbidden place; and that their rurall sports are not disdained of you, have bene stird with emulation to them, and affection to you, to bring forth some thing, which might as well breede your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the huredines of their sex shall excufe the breach of the commandement in coming to this place vnsent for, they chose out vs, to invite both your princely parents, & your selues, to a place in the woods about half a mile hence: where they have provided some such sports, as they trust your gratious acceptations will interpret to be delightful. We haue bene at the other lodge, but finding them there, busied in weightier affermes, our trust is, that you yet will not deny the shining of your eies vpó vs.

The Ladies stood in some doubt, whether they should goe or not, lest Basilius might be angry withall. But Misio (that had bene at none of the pastorals, and had a great desire to lead her old senses abroad to some pleasure) told them plainely, they should nor will nor choose, but go thether, and make the honest countrie people know, that they were not so squeamish as folkes thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warrantted by her authoritie, with a smiling humblenesse obeyed her: Pamela only casting a seething looke, whether she could see Dorus (who poore wretch wandred halfe mad for sorrow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was grieved for his absence, hauing giuen the wound to him through her owne harte. But so the three Ladies & Misio went with those six Nymphes, conquering the length of the way with the force of musique, leaving only Mopsa behind, who
who disgraced weeping with her countenaunce, because her mother would not suffer her to shew her newskoured face among them. But the place apointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, so well were they pleased with the sweete tunes and prettie conversation of their invaders. There found they in the midst of the thickest part of the wood, a little square place, not burdened with trees, but with a boord covered, & beautified with the pleasantest fruities, that Sunburnd Autumnae could deliver vnto them. The maids besought the Ladies to sit downe, and taste of the swelling grapes, which seemed great with child of Bacchus: & of the divers coloured plums, which gau the eye a pleasant taste before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not shew to scorn their provision, but eat, and dranke a little of their coole wine, which seemed to laugh for joy to come to such lips.

But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the coming forth of such devises, as were prepared for them, there rushed out of the woods twentie armed men, who round about enuironed them, & laying hold of Zelmane before she could draw her sword, and taking it from her, put hoods ouer the heads of all sower, and so muffled, by force set them on horsebacke, and carried them away; the sisters in vaine crying for succour, while Zelmanes harte was rent in peeces with rage of the injurie, and disdain of her fortune. But when they had caried them a foure or five mile further, they lefte Mis with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, so to take her fortune; and brought the three Ladies (by that time that the Night seemed with her silence to conspire to their treason)
to a castle about ten mile of from the Lodges: where they were fayne to take a boate where the wayed for them. For the castle stood in the midst of a great lake, upon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men esteemed impregnable.

But at the Castle gate their faces were discoverd, and there were mett with a great number of torches, after whome the sisters knewe their aunt in lawe, Cecropia. But that light increased the deadly terror of the Princesse, looking for nothing but death, since they were in the power of the wicked Cecropia: who yet came vnto them, making curtseie the outside of mischief, and desiring them not to be discomfted: for they were in a place dedicated to their service. Philocles (with a looke where Loue shined through the miste of Feare) besought her to be good vnto them, having neuer desuered euill of her. But Pamela's high harte disdainng humblenesse to injurie, Aunt, (said she) what you haue determined of vs I pray you do it speedily: for my part I looke for no service, where I finde violence.

But Cecropia (vling no more wordes with them) conuayed them all three to severall lodgings (Zelmanes harte so swelling with spite, that she could not bring forth a worde) and so left them: first taking from them their kniues, because they should do themselves no hurte, before she had determined of them: and then giuing such order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, she went to her sonne, who yet kept his bed, because of his wound he had receiued of Zelmane, & told him, whom now he had in his power.
Amphialus was but euen then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage & curteisie, when he met with the Princesses, and was hurt by Zelmane, so as he was utterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked deuises; to which he would never haue consented, being (like a rose out of a brier) an excellent sonne of an euill mother: and now when he heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had seen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore desired his mother that she would tell him the whole discourse, how all these matters had happened.

Sonne (said she) I will doo it willingly, and since all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howsoeuer I might be ashamed to tell it strangers, who would thinke it wickednesse, yet what is done for your sake (how euill soever to others) to you is vertue. To begin then euen with the beginning, this doting foole Basilius that now raignes, having liued unmarried till he was nigh three-score yeares old (and in all his speaches affirming, and in all his dooings assuring, that he never would marrie) made all the eyes of the country to be bent vpon your father, his onely brother (but then younger by thirty yeares) as vpon the undoubted successeour: being indeed a man worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himselfe: where this goose (you see) puts downe his head, before there be any thing more to touch him. So that he holding place and estimation as heyre of Arcadia, obtayned me of my father the King of Argos, his brother helping to the conclusion, with protestinge his bachelery inten­tion: for else you may be sure the King of Argos, nor his daughter would haue suffered their Royall bloud...
to be stained with the base name of subjection. So that I came into this countrie as apparant Princesse therof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrie. My porte and pompe did well become a King of Argos daughter: in my presence their tongues were turned into cares, & their cares were captures vnto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Maiestie, & happy was he or she, on whom I would suffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I goe to church: it seemed the very Gods wayted for me, their deuotions not being solemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to see any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it selfe: for to it was the concourse, one thrusting vpon another, who might shewe him selfe most diligent and serviceable towards me: my sleepe was inquired after, and my wakings never unsaluted: the very gate of my house full of principall persons, who were glad, if their presents had receaued a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicitie were thou borne, the very earth submitting it selfe vnto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; and to that passe had my husbandes vertue (by my good helpe.) within short time brought it with a plot we laide, as we should not haue needed to haue waited the tedious worke of a natural end of Basilius, when the heauës (I thinke enuying my great felicity) the stopt thy fathers breath, whe he breathed nothing but power and soueraignty. Yet did not thy orphanie, or my widdowhood, deprive vs of the delightfull prospect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy succession did bind dependencies vnto vs.

But before, (my sonne) thou wert come to the age 7
to feele the sweetnesse of authoritie, this beast (whom I can never name with patience) falsely and foolishly married this Gynecia, then a young girle, and brought her to sit aboue me in all feasts, to tumne her shouder to me-ward in all our solemnities. It is certaine, it is not so great a spite to be surmounted by straungers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my minde was, since withall there is no question: The fall is greater from the first to the second, then from the second to the vndermoft. The rage did swell in my harte, so much the more as it was faine to be suppressed in silence, & disguifed with humblenes. But above all the rest, the griefe of grievances was, whe with these daughters (now thy prisoners) the cut of all hope of thy successio. It was a tedious thing to me, that my eies should looke lower then any bodies, that (my selfe being by) anothers voice then mine, should be more respected. But it was insupportable vnto me, to think that not only I, but thou shouldst spend all thy time in such misery, & that the Sun should see my eldest son leffe then a Prince. And though I had ben a sainct I could not choose finding the change this change of fortune bred vnto me, for now fro the multitude of followers, silence grew to be at my gate, & absence in my presence. The gueffe of my mind could prevaile more before, then now many of my earnest requests. And thou (my deare sonne) by the fickle multitude no more then any ordinary person (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (remembering that in all miseries weeping becomes fooles, and practive wise folks) have tried divers meanes to pull vs out of the mire of subiection. And though many times Fortune failed me, yet did I never fail my self. Wild beasts I kept in a cage hard
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

hard by the lodges, which I caused by night to be fed in
the place of their pastorals, I as then living in my house
hard by the place, and against the hour they were to
meete (having kept the beasts without meate) then let
them loose, knowing that they would seek their food
there, and devour what they found. But blind For-
tune hating sharpe-eyed inventions, made them un-
luckily to be killed. After, I vied my servant Clinias to
stir a notable tumult of country people: but those louts
were too grosse instruments for delicate conceits. Now
lastly, finding Philanax his examinations grow daun-
gerous, I thought to play double or quit; & with a sleight
I vied of my fine-witted wenches Artesia, with other maids
of mine, would have sent these good inheritrixes of Ar-
cadia, to have pleaded their cause before Pluto, but that
our fortunate for the, you made me know the last day
how vehemently this childish passion of love doth tor-
ment you. Therefore I have brought them unto you, yet
wishing rather hate the love in you. For Hate often be-
getteth victory; Love commonly is the instrument of
subjection. It is true, that I would also by the same prac-
tice have entraped the parents, but my maids failed of
it, not daring to tarry long about it. But this sufficeth,
since (these being taken away) you are the un
doubted
inheritor, and Basilius will not long ouer-live this losse.

O mother (said Amphialus) speake not of doing them
hurt, no more then to mine eyes; or my hart, or if I have
any thing more deare then eyes, or hart vnto me. Let
others finde what sweteresse they will in euery fearing,
because they are euery feared: for my part, I will
thinke myselfe highly intitled, if I may be once by Phi-
loceas accepted for a servant. Well (said Cereopia) I would
I had borne you of my minde, as well as of my body:

K k 4
then should you not haue funcke vnder base weakenes-fes. But since you haue tied your thoughts in so wilfull a knot, it is happie I haue brought matters to such a passe, as you may both enjoy affection, and vpon that build your soueraignty. Alas (said Amphialus) my hart would faie yeeld you thanks for setting me in the way of felicitie, but that feare killes them in me, before they are fully borne. For if Philoclea be displeased, how can I be pleased? if she count it vnskindnes, shal I giue tokens of kindnes, perchance she cōdenes me of this action, and shal I triumph? perchance she drownes nowe the beauties I loue with sorrowful tears, and where is then my rejoicing? You haue reason (said Cecropia with a fei ned grauitie) I will therefore send her away presently, that her contentment may be recovered. No good mo ther (sai d Amphialus) since she is here, I would not for my life constraine presence, but rather would I die then cōlent to absence. Prety intricat follies (sai d Cecropia) but get you vp, & see how you can preuaile with her, while I go to the other sister. For after we shal haue our hands full to defend our selues, if Baslius hap to besiege vs. But remembring herself, she turned back, & asked him what he woulde haue done with Zelmae, since nowe he might be revenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably, answered Amphialus, hauing deferred no other of me, especially being (as I heare) greatly cherished of Philoclea. And therefore I could wish they were lodged together. O no (said Cecropia) company confirmes resol utio, & lonelines breeds a werines of ones thoughts, and so a sooner consenting to reasonable proers.

C H A P.
CHAP. 3.

Amphialus addressing him to Philoclea. * Her melancholical habit. + His humble suit. + Her piteous answer: 1 and his compassionate reply. * Their parting with cold comfort.

B. Amphialus (taking of his mother Philoclea's knives, which he kept as a reliquy, since she had worn them) got vp, and calling for his richest apparel, nothing seemed sumptuous enough for his mistress' eyes: and that which was costly, he feared were not dainty: and though the invention were delicate, he misdoubted the making. As careful he was too of the colour, lest if gay, he might seem to glory in his injury, and her wrong, if mourning, it might strike some evil presage unto her of her fortune. At length he tooke a garment more rich then glaring, the ground being black velvet, richly embroidered with great pearle, & precious stones, but they set so among certaine tuffes of cypresse, that the cypresse was like blacke cloudes, through which the starrs might yeeld a darke luster. About his necke he ware a brode & gorgeous collar; whereof the pieces enterechangeably answering, the one was of Diamonds and pearle, set with a white enamell, so as by the cunning of the workman it seemed like a shining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierce glistening, which he thought pictured the two passions of Fear and
Desire, wherein he was enchayned. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he straue to giue the best grace he could vnto his halting.

And in that fort he went to Philocleas chamber: whome he found (because her chamber was over-lightsome) sitting of that side of her bedde which was from the windowe, which did cast such a shadow upon her, as a good Painter woulde bestowe vpon Venus, when vnder the trees she bewayled the murther of Adonis: her handes and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her shoulder leaning to her beds head, and ouer her head a scarfe, which did eclipse almoast halfe her eyes, which vnder it fixed their beames vpon the wall by, with so steddie a maner, as if in that place they might well change, but not mende their object: and so remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor the perceyuing him, till that (a little varying her thoughts something quickening her senses) she heard him as he happed to stirre his uppGarment: and perceyuing him, rose vp, with a demeanoure, where in the booke of Beautie there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindnesse was blotted out, and Anger was neuer there.

But Amphialus that had entrusted his memorie with long and forcible speeches, found it so locked vp in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beseeching her to take what was don in good part, and to assure her selfe there was nothing but honour meant vnto her person. But she making no other answer, but letting her handes fall one from the other, which before
before were ioyned (with eyes something cast aside, and a silent sigh) gave him to vnderstande, that con-
considering his dooings, she thought his speeche as full of
incongruitie, as her aunswere would be voyde of pur-
pose: wherevpon he kneeling downe, and kissing her
hande, (which she suffered with a countenaunce wit-
nessing captiuitie, but not kindnesse) he besought her
to haue pitie of him, whose loue went beyonde the
boundes of conceite, much more of uttering: that in
her handes the ballance of his life or death did stannde;
where to the leaft motion of hers woulde serue to de-
determine, the being indeede the mistresse of his life, and
he her eternall flauë; and with true vehemencie be-
sought her that he might heare her speake, wherevpon
she suffered her sweete breath to turne it selfe into these
kind of words.

Alas cousin, (taid she) what shall my tongue be
able to doo, which is in fourmed by the cares one way,
and by the eyes another? You call for pitie, and vie
crueltie; you fay, you loue me, and yet do the effectes
of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes,
but you have brought me to so neere a degree to
death, as when you will, you may lay death vpon me:
so that while you fay I am mistresse of your life, I am
not mistresse of mine owne. You entitle your selfe
my flauë, but I am sure I am yours. If then violence,
injurie, terror, and depriving of that which is more dear
then life it selfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you
may expect that I will be easily perswaded. But if the
nearenesse of our kinred breede any remorse in you, or
there be any such thing in you, which you call loue
toward
towards me, then let not my fortune be disgraced
with the name of imprisonment: let not my hart waste
it selfe by being vexed with feeling cuill, and fearing
worfe. Let not me be a cause of my parents wofull de-
struction; but restore me to my selfe, and so doing I
shall account I have receyued my selfe of you. And
what I say for my selfe, I say for my deare sister, and my
friend Zelme: for I desire no wel being, without they
may be partakers. With that her teares rained downe
from her heauenly eyes, and seemed to water the sweet
and beautifull flowers of her face.

But Amphialus was like the poore woman, who lo-
ung a tame Doe she had, aboue all earthly things, ha-
ing long played withall, and made it feede at her hand
and lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her
flocke being spent, and she fallen into extreme pouer-
tie) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her life. Manie a pitifull
looke doth she cast vpon it, and many a time doth she
draw backe her hand before she can giue the stroke. For
euen so Amphialus by a hunger-sterned affection, was
compelled to offer this injuriue, and yet the same af-
fection made him with a tormenting griefe, thinke
unkindnesse in himselfe, that he could finde in his
hart any way to restraine her freedome. But at length,
neither able to grant, nor denie, he thus answered her.
Deare ladye (said he) I will not lay vnto you (how justly
soeuer I may do it) that I am neither author, nor acces-
sarie vnto this your withholding. For since I do not re-
dres it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I pro-
test vnto you (and this protestation of mine, let the hea-
uens heare, and if I lie, let them answer me with a dead-
ly thunderbolt) that in my soule I wish I had never
scene.
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

feene the light, or rather, that I had never had a father to beget such a child, the that by my means those eyes should overflow their owne beauties, then by my means the skie of your vertue should be overclouded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Ladie, I finde my self most willing to obey you: neither truly doo mine ears receive the least word you speak, with any lesse reverence, then as absolute, and unresistable commandements. But alas, that Tyrant Loue, (which now possesseth the holde of all my life and reason) will no way suffer it. It is Loue, it is Loue, not I, which dis-obey you. What then shall I say: but that I, who am re-die to lie under your feete, to venture, nay to loose my life at your leaft commandement: I am not the staye of your freedome, but Loue, Loue, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that imprison your selfe: it is your beautie which makes these castle-walles embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect upon themselves this injurie: Then is there no other remedie, but that you some way vouchsafe to satisfie this Loues vehemens; which, (since it grewe in your selfe) without question you shall finde it (far more then I) tractable.

But with these wordes Philocles fell to so extreme a quaking, and her liuely whitenesse did degenerate to so dead a palenesse; that Amphialus feared some daungerous traunce: so that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woonde to be one of the chiefe firebrands of Cupid) had all the sense of it wrapt vp in coldnes, he began humblie to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure her selfe vpon the vowe he made thereof vnto God, and her selfe, that theutter-
most forces he would euer employ to conquer her affection, should be Desire, and Desert. That promise brought Philocles againe to her selfe, so that slowly lifting up her eyes upon him, with a countenaunce euer courteous, but then languishing, she tolde him, that he should doe well to do so, if indeede he had euer tasted what true loue was: for that where now she did beare him good will, she should (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: offering him withall, that though his mother had taken away her kniues, yet the house of Death had so many doores, as she would easily flie into it, if euer she founde her honor endaungered.

Amphilus having the colde ashes of Care cast up on the coales of Desire, leaving some of his mothers gentlewomen to waite vpon Philocles, himselfe indeede a prisoner to his prisoner, and making all his authoritie to be but a footstoole to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endited, but Amazement vthered, he deliuered what had passed betwene him and Philocles: beseeching her to trie what her persuasions could doe with her, while he gaue order for all such things as were necessarie against such forces, as he looked dayly Basilium would bring before his castle. His mother bade him quiette him selfe, for she doubted not to take fitte times. But that the best way was, first to let her owne Passion a little tire it selfe.

CHAP.
CHAP. 4.


O they calling Clinius, and some other of their counsellor, advised upon their present affaires. First, he dispatched privat letters to all those principal Lords and gentlemen of the country, who he thought either alliance, or friendship to himselfe might drawe; with speciall motions from the generall consideration of dutie: not omitting all such, whom either youthfull age, or youthful mindes did fill with unlimited desires; besides such, whom any discontentment made hungry of change, or an over-spended wante, made want a civill warre: to each (according to the counsell of his mother) conforming himselfe after their humors. To his friends, friendlines; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the displeased, revenge; to the greedie, spoyle: wrapping their hopes with such cunning, as they rather seemed given ouer vnto them as partakers: then promises strong of necessitie. Then sent he to his mothers brother, the King of Argos: but he was as then so over-laide with warre himselfe, as from thence he could attend small succour.

But because he knewe, how violentely rumors doo blow the failes of popular judgements, & how few there be
be, that can discern between true, and truthlikeness, between showes and substance, he caused a justification of this his action to be written, whereof were sowed abroad many copies, which with some glosses of probability, might hide indeede the sulleness of his treason; and from true common-places, fetch downe most false applications. For, beginning how much the duty which is owed to the countrey, goes beyond all other duties, since in it selfe it containes them all, and that for the respect thereof, not onely all tender respects of kinred, or whatsoever other friendshipes, are to be laide aside, but that euen long-helde opinions (rather builded upon a secrete of gouernement, then any groud of truth) are to be forsaken. He fell by degrees to shew, that since the ende whereto any thing is directed, is euer to be of more noble reckoning, then the thing thereto directed: that therefore, the weale-publicke was more to be regarded, then any person or magistrate that thereunto was ordaine. The feeling consideration whereof, had moued him (though as nere of kinne to Basilius as could be, yet) to set principally before his eyes, the good estate of so many thousands, ouer whom Basilius raigned: rather then so to hood-winke himselfe with affection, as to suffer the realme to runne to manifext ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to those, who being subalterne magistrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as fro the Prince, so for the people: and of all other, especiallie himselfe, who being descended of the Poyall race, and next heire male, Nature had no sooner opened his eyes, but that the soyle where-upon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes: which as from
fió his childhood he had euer caried; so now finding that his uncle had not only giue ouer all care of govern-
ment, but had put it into the hands of Philanax, (a man
neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his cor-
rupt, proude, and partiaall dealing, liked of any) but be-
side, had set his daughters (in whom the whole estate,
as next heires thereunto, had no lesse interett the him-
selt) in so vnfit & il-guarded a place, as it was not only
dagerous for their persons, but (if they should be con-
ueted to any forraine country) to the whole common-
wealth pernicious: that therfore he had brought them
into this strog castle of his, which way, if it might seem
strange, they were to consider, that new necesseties re-
quire new remedies: but there they should be serued &
honored as belonged to their greatnes, until by the ge-
nerall assembly of the estates, it should be determined
how they shoule to their beft (both priuate, and pu-
blique) advantage be matched, vowing all faith & duty
both to the father & children, never by him to be vi-o-
lated. But if in the meanete time, before the estates could
be asembled, he were aassailed, he would the for his own
defence take armes: desiring all, that either tendred the
dangerous cafe of their country, or in their harts loued
justice, to defed him in this iust actio. And if the Prince
should commande them otherwise, yet to know, that
therein he was no more to be obeied, then if he should
call for poison to hurt himself withall: since all that was
done, was done for his service, howsoeuer he might
(leduced by Philanax) interprete of it: he protesting,
that what sooever he should doo for his owne defence,
should be against Philanax, & no way against Baslius.

To this effect, amplifhed with arguments and exam-

ples,
The Countesse of Pembroke

ples, and painted with rhetorical colors, did he sow abroad many discourses: which as they preuayled with some of more quicke then founde conceipte, to runne his fortune with him; so in many, did it breed a cooleness, to deale violently against him, and a false-minded neutralitie to expect the issue. But besides the waies he vsed to weaken the aduerse partie, he omitted nothing for the strengthening of his owne. The chiefe trust whereof (because he wanted men to keepe the field,) he reposed in the suretie of his castle; which at leaft would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To therfore he bent his outward & inward eyes, striving to make Art strike with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification should be most beholding. The seat Nature bestowed, but Arte gaue the building: which as his rocky hardnesse would not yeeld to undermineing force, so to open assaultes he tooke counsell of skilfull, how to make all approches, if not impossible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the castle, as round about the lake, to give vnquiet lodgings to the, whom onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as well simple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting instruments of mischiefe to places, whence the mischiefe might be most liberally bestowed. Nether was his smallest care for victuals, as well for the providing that which should suffice both in store & goodnesse, as in well preserving it, and wary distributing it, both in quantitie, and quality, spending that first which would keepe left.

But wherein he sharpened his wits to the piercingest point, was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & master-spring (as it were) which makes
Arcadia. Lib. 3. 258.

makes all the rest to stir; and that therefore in the Arte
of man stood the quintessence, & ruling skill of all pro-
sperous governement, either peaceable, or military) he
chose in number as many as without pestring (and so
daunger of infection) his viCTual would seem for two
yare to maintaine; all of hable bodies, and some few
of able minde to direct, not seeking many comman-
ders, but contenting himselfe, that the multitude
should have obeying wills, everie one knowing whom
he should comamund, and whom he should obey, the
place where, and the matter wherein, distributing each
office as neere as he could, to the disposition of the per-
son that should exercise it: knowing no loue, daunger,
not discipline can sodainly alter an habite in nature.
Therfore would he not employ the stil ma to a shifting
practise, nor the liberall man to be a dispenser of his vi-
cuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a punisher: but
would exercise their vertuies in sorts, where they might
be profitable, employing his chief care to know the all
particularly, & throughly, regarding also the constituTIo
of their bodies, some being able better to abide watch-
ing, some huger, some labour, making his benefit of eoch
hability & not forcing beyond power. Time to every
thing by must proportio he allotted, & as well in that, as
in every thing els, no small errorr winckt at, lest greater
should be animated: Euen of vices he made his pro-
fite, making the cowardly Clinias to haue care of the
watch, which he knew his own feare would make him
very wakfully performe. And before the siege began,
he himselfe caused rumors to be sowed, and libels to be
spread against himselfe, fuller of mallice, then witty per-
suasion: partly, to knowe those that would be apt to
The Countesse of Pembroke

flumbe at such motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, because in necessitie they should not know when any such thing were in earnest attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne invention. But even then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terour) did he exercise his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had presently presented his most hideous presence: him selfe rather instructing by example, then precept; being neither more sparing in travaile, nor speeding in death, then the meanest sooldier: his hand and body disdainning no base matters, nor shrinking from the heavy.

The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he sighed; and when others rested, he crost his armes. For Loue passing thorow the pikes of Dauger, & tumbling it selfe in the dust of Labour, yet still made him remember his sweete desire; and beautifull image. Oftem when he had begun to command one, somewhat before halfe the sentence were ended, his inward guest did so entertaine him, that he would breake it off, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the maruaile of the standers by) sent himself in to talke with his owne thoughts. Sometimes when his hand was lifted vp to some thing, as if with the sight of Gorgons head he had bene sodainely turned into a stone, so would he there abide with his eyes planted, and handes lifted, till at length, comming to the use of himself, he would looke about whether any had perceived him; then would he accuse, and in him selfe condemne all those wits, that durst affirme Idlenesse to be the well-spring of Loue. O, would he say, al you that affeect the title of wisdome, by vngratefull scorning the ornaments of Nature, am I
I now piping in a shadow: or doo slouthfull feathers now enwrap me: Is not hate before me, and doubt behind me: is not daunger of the one side, and shame of the other: And doo I not stonde vpon pame, and travaile, and yet ouer all, my affection triumphes: The more I stirre about vrgent affaires, the more me thinks the very stirring breeds a breath to blow then coales of my loue: the more I exercise my thoughts, the more they encreas the appetite of my desires. O sweet Philoclea (with that he would cast vp his eies wherein some water did appeare, as if they would wash themselves against they should see her) thy heauenly face is my Astronomie, thy sweet vertue, my sweet Philosophie: let me profite therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my mind misgiues me, for your planets beare a contrarie aspect vnto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my destruction: and whom doo they threaten this destruction? even him that loues them; and by what means will they destroy, but by louing them? O deare (though killing) eyes, shall death head his dare with the golde of Cupids arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the rest of Beautie? O beloued (though hating) Philoclea, how if thou beeft mercifull, hath crueltie stolne into thee? Or how if thou beeft cruell, doth crueltie looke more mercifull then euer Mercie did? Or alas, is it my destinie that makes Mercie cruell? Like an euill vessell which turns sweete licour to sowernes; so when thy grace falt vpon me, my wretched constitution makes it become fiercenesse. Thus would he exercise his eloquence, when she could not heare him, and be dumbe-striken, when her presence gaue him fit occasion of speaking: so that his witte could finde out
The Countesse of Pembroke

no other refuge, but the comfort and counsell of his mother, desiring her (whose thoughts were unperplexed) to vfe for his sake the most prevailing manners of intercession.

CHAP. 5.


Therefore, weighing Philoclea resolutons by the counterpeafe of her own youthful thoughts, which she then called to minde, she doubted not at least to make Philoclea receive the poyson distilled in sweete liqour, which she with little disguisings had drunke vp thirstily. Therefore she went softly to Philoclea chamber, & peeing through the side of the doore, then being a little open, she sawe Philoclea sitting lowe vp on a cufliion, in such a giuen-outer manner, that one would haue thought, silence, solitariness, and melancholie were come there, vnder the ensigne of mishap, to conquere delight, and drive him from his natural fate of beautie; her teares came dropping downe like raine in Sun-
Arcadia. Lib. 3. 260

shine, and she not taking heed to wipe the tears, they ranne downe vpon her cheekes, and lips, as vpon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dressing of her haire and apparell, she might see neither a careful arte, nor an arte of carelesnesse, but even left to a neglected chance, which yet coulde no more vnperfect her perfections, then a Dianie way cast, could loose his squareness.

Cecropia (stirred with no other pitie, but for her son) came in, and haling kindnesse into her countenance, What ayres this sweete Ladie, (said she) will you marre so good eyes with weeping? shall tears take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of Arcadia wish for, and the men long after? Fie of this pensive sadness; in sooth it is vntimely for your age. Looke vpon your owne bodie, and see whether it deserre to pine away with sorrow: see whether you will haue these hands (with that she tooke one of her hands and kissing it, looked vpon it as if she were enamoured with it) fade from their whitenesse, which makes one desire to touch them; & their softnesse, which rebounds againe a desire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yellowe, and make euerie bodie woonder at the chaunge, and say, that sure you had vsed some arte before, which nowe you had left: for if the beauties had beene naturall, they woulde never so soone haue bene blemished. Take a glasse, and see whether these tears become your cies: although, I must coseffe, those cies are able to make tears comely. Alas Madame. (answered Philoclea) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am sure mine cies thus betcared, become my fortune. Your fortune (saide Cecropia)
if he could see to attire herself, would put on her best raiments. For I see, and I see it with griefe, and (to tell you true) vnkindnes: you miscastere every thing, that only for your sake is attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeed defended: you esteeme your selfe a prisoner, and are in truth a mistres: you feare hate, and shall find loue. And truely, I had a thing to say to you, but it is no matter, since I find you are so obstinatly melancholy, as that you woo his fellowship: I will spare my paines, and hold my peace: And so staied indeede, thinking Philoclea would haue had a female inquisitiuenes of the matter. But she, who rather wished to un-knowe what she knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only desired her to haue pity of her, and if indeed she did meane her no hurt, then to grant her liberty: for else the very griefe & feare, would prove her vnappointed executioners. For that (said Ce-cropia) beleue me vpó the faith of a kings daughter, you shall be free, so soone as your freedome may be free of mortal danger, being brought hither for no other cause, but to prevent such mishiefes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to haue care of you, even as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares vnsto me, & let not your mind arme it self with a willfulness to be flexible to nothing. But if I speake reason, let Reason haue his due reward, persuasion. Then sweet neece (said she) I pray you presuppose, that now, euée in the midst of your agonies, which you paint vnto your selfe most horrible, wishing with sighes, & praying with vowes, for a soone & safe deliuerie. Imagin neece (I say) that some heavenly spirit should appeare vnto you, and bid you follow him through the doore, that goes into the
the garden, assuring you, that you should thereby return to your deare mother, and what other delights souer your mind esteemes delights: would you (sweet neree) would you refuse to follow him, & lay, that if he led you, not through the chiefe gate, you would not enjoy your over-desired liberty: Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such a glasse, as you especially fancied? tel me (deare neree:) but I will answer for you, because I know your reason and will is such, as must needs conclude, that such niceness can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulness can haue any place in so faultles a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the marke were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shot. If this be so, and thus sure (my deare neree) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that same good Angel, who grieuing in your grieafe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs should be sent forth with so sweete a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your desired, and imagined happiness, but to a true and essentiall happiness, not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be not the gate builded hitherto in your priuate choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring forth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My son,) let it be no blemish to him that I name him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no small kings daughter,) my sonne (I say) farre passing the nernesse of his kinred, with the nernesse of good-will, and striving to match your matchlesse beautie with a matchlesse affection, doth by me present vnto you the full enjoying of your
The Countesse of Pembroke's

your liberty, so as with this gift you will accept a greater, which is, this castell, with all the rest which you knowe he hath, in honorable quantitie; and will confirme his gift, and your receipt of both, with accepting him to be yours. I might say much both for the person and the matter, but who will crie out the Sun shines? It is so manifest a profit unto you, as the meanest judgement must straight apprehend it: so farre is it from the sharpenesse of yours, thereof to be ignorant. Therfore (sweet niece) let your gratefulnes be my intercession, & your gentle-nesse my eloquence, and let me carry comfort to a heart which greatly needs it. Philocte looked upon her, & cast downe her eie again. Aunt (said she) I would I could be so much a mistres of my owne mind, as to yeelede to my cousins vertuous request: for so I construe of it. But my hart is already fet (and staying a while on that word, she broughtforth afterwards) to lead a virgins life to my death: for such a vow I haue in my selfe deuotely made. The heauens preuent such a mischiefe (said Cecropia.) A vowe, quoth you: no, no, my deere niece, Nature, when you were first borne, vowed you a woman, & as she made you child of a mother, so to do your best to be mother of a child: she gaue you beautie to moue loue; she gaue you wit to know loue; she gaue you an excellent body to reward loue: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with vnspreakable felicitie. For this, as it bindeth the receiuer, so it makes happy the bestower: this doth not impoverish, but enrich the giever. O the sweet name of a mother: O the confort of confort, to see your childe grow vp, in who you are (as it were) eternized: if you could conceiue what a hart-tickling joy it is to see your owne little ones, with awfull loue come running to your lap, and like little models of your selfe, still easie you about
about them, you would thinke vnkindnes in your own thoughts, that euer they did rebell against the mean vn-to it. But perchace I set this blessednes before your eies, as Captains do victorie before their soouldiers, to which they might come through many paines, grieues & dangers. No, I am content you shrinke from this my counfel, if the way to come vnto it, be not most of all pleasant. I know not (answered the sweet Philocles, fearing least silence would offend her fullenes) what contentment you speake of; but I am sure the best you can make of it, (which is marriage) is a burdenous yoke. Ah, deer neece (said Cecropia) how much you are deceived? A yoke indeed we all beare, laid vpó us in our creation, which by marriage is not increased but thus farre eased, that you haue a yoke-fellow to help to draw through the cloddy cumbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnes with me of the difference. How often alas do I embrace the orfan-side of my bed, which was wot to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband, & with teares acknowledge, that I now enjoy such a liberty as the banished ma hath, who may, if he lift, wáder over the world, but is euer restrained fró his most delightful home, that I haue now such a liberty as the seeled dou hath, which being first depruied of eies, is then by the falconer cast off? For beleue me, neece, beleue me, mans experience is womas best cie-fight. Haue you euer seene a pure Rose-water kept in a christal glas, how fine it lokes, how sweet it stews, while that beautifull glasse imprisons it? Breake the prizon, and let the water take his owne course, doth it not imbrace dust, and loose all his former sweetenesse, and faireness? Truly so are we, if we haue not the stay, rather then the reftaince of Cristalline mairage. My hart melteth to thinke of the sweete comforts,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

In that happy time received, when I had never cause to care, but the care was doubled: when I never rejoiced, but that I saw my joy shine in another's eyes. What shall I say of the free delight, which the heart might embrace, without the accusing of the inward conscience, or fear of outward shame? and is a solitary life as good as this? then can one string make as good musicke as a comfort: the can one colour set forth a beautie. But it may be, the general consideration of marriage doth not so much mislike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my son, I must confess: I see him with a mother's eyes, which if they do not much deceive me, he is no such one, other whom Contempt may make any just chalenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in itself should care all comeliness, nobilitie, and riches, he loues you; and he loues you, who is beloved of others. Drive not away his affection (sweete Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that she hath robbed you of so faithfull and notable a servant. Philoclea heard some pieces of her speeches, no otherwise then one doth when a tedious pratter covers the hearing of a delightful musicke. For her thoughts had left her eares in that captiuitie, and conuiced themselues to behold (with such eyes as imagination could lend the) the estate of her Zelmae: for who how well she thought many of those sayings might have been vued with a farre more gratefull acceptance. Therefore lifting not to dispute in a matter whereof her selfe was resolute, and desir'd not to enforce the other, she onely told her, that whilest she was so captiued, she could not conceiue of any such persausions (though never so reasonable) any otherwise, then as constraints: and as constraints must needs
needs euë in nature abhor thë, which at her libertie, in
their owne force of reason, might more prevaile with
her: and so faine would haue returned the strength of
Cecropias persuasions, to haue procured freedome.

C H A P. 6.

Vt neither her wittie wordes in an
enemie, nor tholc wordes, made
more thon eloquent with passing
through such lips, could prevaile
in Cecropia, no more then her per-
suasions coulde winne Philoclea
to diuaowe her former vowe, or
to leaue the prisoner Zelmane, for
the commaundung Amphialus. So that both sidaes
being desirous, and neither graunters, they brake of
conference. Cecropia sticking vp more and more spite
out of her deniall, which yet for her sonnes sake, she
disguised with a visarde of kindnes, leaung no office
vnperfourmed, which might either witnes, or endeare
her sonnes affection. Whatsoever could be imagined
likely to please her, was with liberall diligence perfor-
med: Musickes at her windowe, & especially such Mu-
sickes, as might (with dolefull embaffle) call the mind
to thinke of forow, and thinke of it with sweetnes; with
ditties so sensiblie expressing Amphialus cale, that cue-
trie worde, seemed to be but a diversifying of the name of
of Amphialus. Daily presents, as it were oblations, to pacifie an angrie Deitie, sent vnto her : wherein, if the workmanship of the forme, had striuen with the sumptuousnes of the matter, as much did the inuenti-
on in the application, contende to haue the chiefe excel-
cellencies: for they were as so many stories of his disgra-
ces, & her perfections, where the richnes did inuite the
eyes, the fashion did entertaine the eyes, and the de-
vice did teach the eyes the present miserie of the pre-
senter himselfe awefully serviceable: which was the
more notable, as his authoritie was manifest. And for
the bondage wherein she dined, all meanes vsed to
make known, that if it were a bondage, it was a bon-
dage onely knitte in love-knots. But in harte already
understanding no language but one, the Mysicke
wrought indeede a dolefulnes, but it was a dolefulnes
be in his power: the dittie intended for Amphialus,
the translated to Zelmane: the presents seemed so many
tedious clogs of a thralled obligation: and his service,
the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as
she thought) vnto her, her vnworthie estate: that euen
he that did her service, had authoritie of commanding
her, onely construing her servitude in his own nature,
esteming it a right, and a right bitter servitude: so that
all their shots (how well soever levelled) being carried
awrie from the marke, by the storne of her mislike, the
Prince Amphialus affectionately languished, & Cecropia
spitefullie cunning, disdainèd at the barrennes of their
successe.

Which willingly Cecropia woulde haue revenged,
but that she sawe, her hurt could not be divided from
her sonnes mischiefe: wherefore, she bethought her self
to
to attempt _Pamela_, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be woon, that her sonnes thoughtes would rather rest on a beautifull gratefulnes, then still be tormented with a disdaining beautie. Wherfore, giuing new courage to her wicked inuentions, and vning the more industry, because she had mist in this, & taking euens precepts of preuailing in _Pamela_, by her sayling in _Philoclea_, she went to her chamber, & (according to her own vngratious method of a subtile proceeding) stood listning at the dore, because that out of the circustance of her present behauior, there might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

And so she might perceane that _Pamela_ did walke vp and down, full of deep (though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setled, her pace soft, and almost still of one measure, without any passionate ges-ture, or violent motion; till at length (as it were) awak-king, & strengthening her selfe, Well (sai d she) yet this is the best, & of this I am sure, that how soever they wroght me, they cannot ouer-master God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no Iayle barres him out. To whome then else should I sue, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling down, eué in the same place where she stood, she thus sai d. O all-seeing Light, and eternal Life or all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may, resists, or so small, that it is contemned: looke uppon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliuerance vnto me; as to thee shall seem most conveni-ent. Let not injurie, o Lord, triumphe ouer me, and let my faultes by thy handes be corrected, and make not mine vnjuste enemie the minister of thy Justice.

But
The Countesse of Pembroke's

But yet, my God, if in thy wisdom, this be the aptest chastisement for my inexcusable follie; if this low bondage be fittest for my over-hie desires; if the pride of my not-ough humble harte, be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yeeld vnto thy will, and joyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt haue me suffer. Onely thus much let me craue of thee, (let my crauing, O Lord, be accepted of thee, since eu.en that proccedes from thee) let me craue, even by the noblest title, which in my greatest afflication I may giue my selfe, that I am thy creature, & by thy goodnes (which is thy self) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Maiestie so to shine into my mind, that it may still depende confidently vpon thee. Let calamitie be the exercise, but not the overthrowe of my vertue: let their power preuaile, but preuaile not to destruction: let their greatnes be their praie: let my paine be the sweetnes of their reueringe: let them (if so it seem good vnto thee) vexe me with more and more punishment. But, O Lord, let neuer their wickednes haue such a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pausing a while) And O most gracious Lord (said she) what eu'er become of me, preferue the vertuous Musidorus.

The other parte Cecropia might well heare, but this latter prayer for Musidorus, her harthelde it, as so iewellike a treasure, that it would scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heauen, from so heavenly a creature, with such a fervent grace, as if Devotion had borowed her bodie, to make of it self a most bea-iful representation, with her eyes so lifted to the skie-ward, that one would haue thought they had begunne to sic thetherward, to take their place among their fellow starrs,
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

stars, her naked hands raising up their whole length, & as it were kissing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of Zeale, and the left, of Humbleness, which both united themselves to make their suites more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inwarde motions, altogether had so strange a working power, that even the harde-harted wickedness of Oecropia, if it founde not a loute of that goodnes, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnes, & if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrkome accusation of her owne naughtines, so that she was put for the biase of her fore-intended leccion. For well she found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with some, at left, image of Virtue, and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

Yet did she prodigally spende her uttermost eloquence, leaving no argument unproved, which might with any force invade her excellent judgemen ; the justnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, if she would not onely have amendment, but felicite: besides falsely making her belieue, that her sister would thinke her selfe happie, if now she might have his loute which before she contemned: and obliquely touching, what danger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept Philocles in marriage, and so match the next heire apparent, she being in his powre: yet plentifully periuring, how extremely her sonne loued her, and excusing the little shewes he made of it, with the dutifull respect he bare vnto her, & taking vp her selfe that she restrayned him, since she found she could set no limits to his passions. And as she did to Philocles, so did
did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her minde into seruitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnest, or at the left awake a kindnes; doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one sister knew not how the other was wooed, but each might thinke, that onely she was sought. But if Philocles with sweete and humble dealing did avoid their assault, she with the Maiestie of Vtue did beatem of.

CHAP. 7.

An Allarme to the Amphialians. Base cowardise in Clinias; brave courage imaged in Amphialus. His onset with the death of two friendes his foes. The horror of Mars-his game. Two deaths taken where they were not lookt for, the third delayed where it was expected.

Vt this day their speach was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watche vpon the top of the kepe, did not onely see a great dust arise (which the earth sent vp, as if it would strive to have cloudes as well as the aire) but might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherein the naked winde did apparaile it self) was caried aside from them, the shining of armour, like flashing of lightning, wherwith the cloudes did seeme to be with child; which the Sunne guiding with his beanes, it gave a light delightfull to any, but
to them that were to abide the terreur. But the watch gave a quick Alarum to the soldiers within, whome Practise already having prepared, began each, with Unabashed hartes, or at least countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted vnto them.

Onely Climias and Amphius did exceed the bounds of mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldness of cowardise, the other in heate of courage. For Climias (who was bold onely in busie whisperings; and even in that whisperingnes rather indeed confident in his cunning, that it should not be bewrayed, then any way bolde, if ever it should be bewrayed) now that the enemy gave a dreadful aspect vnto the castell, his eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martall sound, but that they multiplied the hideousnesse of it to his mated minde. Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadful expectation, but yet his minde (that was willing to ease it selfe of the burden of feare) did sometimes feine vnto it selfe possibility of let; as the death of Basilus, the discord of the nobility, & (when other cause sayled him) the nature of chaunce serued as a cause vnto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake valiantly, and the quietnesse of his unassailed senses, would make him selfe beleue, that he durft do something. But now, that present daunger did display it selfe vnto his eye, & that a daugneers doing must be the onely meane to preuët the danger of suffering, one that had marked him: would haue judged, that his eies would haue run into him, & his soule out of him; so unkindly did either take a sent of danger. He thought the lake was too shallow, & the walles too thin: he misdoubted ech mans treason.
and conjectured every possibility of misfortune, not only forecasting likely perils, but such as all the planets together could scarce have conspired: & already began to arme him selfe, though it was determined he should tarrie within doores, and while he armed himselfe, imagined in what part of the vault he might hide himself. If the enemies wonne the castle. Desirous he was that every body should do valiantly, but himselfe, and therefore was afraid to shew his feare, but for very feare would have hid his feare; lest it should discomfort others: but the more he sought to disguize it, the more the unsuitablenes of a weake broke voice to high braue wordes, and of a pale shaking countenance to a gesture of animating, did discover him.

But quite contrarily Amphialus, who before the enemies came was carefull, prouidently diligent, and not sometymes without doubting of the issue, now the neerer danger approched (like the light of a glow-worme) the lesse still it seemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with such impatience to desire to powre out both vpó the enimie, that he issued presently into certaine boats he had of purpose, and carrying with him some choise men, went to the fortresse he had vpó the edge of the lake, which he thought would be the first thing, that the enimy would attempt; because it was a passage, which commanding all that side of that country, & being lost would stop victual, or other supply, that might be brought into the castle: & in that fortresse hauing some force of horsemen, he issued out with two hundred horse, & five hundred footmen, embushed his footmen in the falling of a hill, which was ouer shadowed with a wood, he with his horsemen went
a quarter of a mile further, aside had of which he might perceave the many troupes of the enemie, who came but to take view where best to encampe themselues.

But as if the sight of the enemie had bene a Magnes stone to his courage he could not côteaine himself, but shewing his face to the enemie, & his backe to his soulediers, vied that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one, and persuading help of the other. Who faithfully following an example of such authoritie, they made the earth to grone vnder their furious burden, and the enemys to begin to be angry with the, whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there was a young man, youngest brother to Philanax, whose face as yet did not bewray his sex, with so much as shew of haire, of a minde hauing no limits of hope, nor knowing why to feare; full of iollitie in conversatioun, and lately growne a Louer. His name was Agenor, of all that armie the most beautifull: who hauing ridden in sportfull conversatioun among the foremost, all armed fauing that his beauer was vp, to haue his breath in more freedome, seing Amphius come a pretty way before his company, neither staying the commaundement of the captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, set spurs to his horse, & with youthfull brauery casting his staffe about his head, put it then in his rest, as carefull of comely carying it, as if the marke had ben but a ring, & the lookers on Ladies. But Amphius launce was already come to the last of his descending line, and began to make the full point of death against the head of this young Gentleman, when Amphius perceyuing his youth and beautie, Compassion so rebated the edge of Choller, that he spared that faire naked-
The Countesse of Pembroke

nakednesse, and let his staffe fall to Agenors vamplat: so as both with braue breaking should hurtleslie haue performed that match, but that the pittileste lance of Amphialus (angry with being broken) with an vn-lucky counterbuilet full of vnsparing splinters, lighted upon that face farre fitter for the combats of Venus; getting not onely a suddaine, but a fowle death, leaung scarcely any tokens of his former beautie: but his hads abandoning the reynes, and his thighs the saddle, he fell sidewardes from the horse. Which sight comming to Leontius, a deere friende of his, who in vayne had lamentably cried vn to him to stay, when he saw him beginne his careere, it was harde to say, whether pittie of the one, or reuenge of the other, helde as then the sovraignantie in his passions. But while he directed his eye to his friend, and his hande to his enimie, so wrongly-conforted a power could not resift the ready minded force of Amphialus: who perceyuing his il-directed direction against him, so paide him his debt before it was lent, that he also fell to the earth, onely happy that one place, & one time, did finish both their loues and luyes together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either side: where after the terrible salutation of warlike noyle, the shaking of handes was with sharpe weapons: some launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did stain their selues in bloud; some flew vp in pieces, as if they would threaten heaven, because they Fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the sword, or by some heavy mafe, or biting axe, which hunting still the weakest chase, sought ever
ever to light there, where smallest resistance might worse preuent mischief. The clashing of armour, and crushing of statues, the inflating of bodies, the refounding of blowes, was the first part of that ill-agreeing musicke, which was beautified with the grifelnesse of wounds, the rising of dust, the hideous stales, and grones of the dying. The verie horses angrie in their maisters anger, with love and obedience brought forth the effects of hate and resistance, and with minds of scruitude, did as if they affected glorie. Some lay dead under their dead maisters, whom vnknightly wounds had vnjustly punished for a faithfull dutie. Some lay upon their Lordes by like accidents, and in death had the honour to be borne by them, who in life they had borne. Some having lost their commanding burthens, ranne scattered about the field, abashed with the madness of mankinde. The earth itself (woont to be a buriall of men) was nowe (as it were) buried with men: so was the face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whom Death had come masked in diverse manners. In one place lay disinherited heades, dispossessed of their natural feignories: in an other, whole bodies to see to, but that their harts wont to be bound all over so close, were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths had ouglibly displayed their trayling guttes. There lay armes, whose fingers yet mooued, as if they wouldse seele for him that made them seele: and legges, which contrarie to common nature, by being discharged of their burthen, were growne heainer. But no sworde payed so large a tribute of soules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of Amphialius, who like a Tigre, from whom a companie of Woolues did
seek to rauish a newe gotten pray; (so he (rememering they came to take away Philocles) did labour to make value, strength, hatred, and choller to answer the proportion of his loue, which was infinit.

There died of his handes the olde knight Æschylus, who though by yeares might well have beene allowed to use rather the exercise of wisedome, then of courage; yet having a lustie bodie & a merrie hart, he euer tooke the summons of Time in jeft, or else, it had so creepingly stollen upon him, that he had heard scarcely the noise of his feete, and therefore was as fresh in apparell, and as forward in enterprizes, as a farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certayne prophecy had beene tolde him, that he shouldie die in the armes of his sonne, and therefore feared the lesse the arme of an enemie. But nowe, when Amphialus s worde was passed through his throate, he thought himselfe abused; but that before he died, his sonne, indeede, seeing his father beginne to fall, helde him vp in his armes, till a pitileffe fouldier of the other side, with a mace brained him, making father and sonne become twinnes in their neuer againe dying birth. As for Driathas, Memnon, Nifus, and Polierates; the first had his eyes cut out so, as he could not see to bid the neare following death welcome: the second had met with the same Prophet that olde Æschylus had, and hauing founde manie of his speeches true, beleued this to, that he should never be killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he against an enemie, no man more suspicous of his friends: so as he seemed to sleepe in securitie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battaile, when he began to sleepe,
such guards he would set about his person; yet mistrusting the verie guardes, that they would murther him. But nowe Amphius helped to vnriddle his doubts; for he ouerthrowing him from his horse, his owne companions comming with a fresh suppleie, pressed him to death. Nifus grasping with Amphius, was with a short dagger slaine. And for Policrates, while he shunned as much as he could, keeping onely his place for feare of punishment, Amphius with a memorable blowe strake of his head, where, with the conuulsions of death setting his spurres to his horse, he gaue so braue a charge vpon the enemie, as it grewe a prouerbe, that Policrates was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no man escaped so well his handes as Phebitus did: for he having long loued Philoclea, though for the meannesse of his estate he neuer durft reuеale it, nowe knowing Amphius setting the edge of a riuall vpon the sworde of an enemie, he helde strong fight with him. But Amphius had alreadie in the daungerous places disarmed him, and was lifting vp his sworde to sende him away from him, when he thinking indeede to die, O Philoclea (said he) yet this ioyes me, that I die for thy sake. The name of Philoclea first staied his sworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhorde him much worse then before, yet could he not vouchsafe him the honour of dying for Philoclea, but turned his sword another way, doing him no hurt for overmuch hatred. But what good did that to poore Phebitus, if escaping a valiant hand, he was slaine by a base souliour, who seeing him so disarmed, thrust him through.

CHAP

Hus with the well-folowed value of Amphialus were the other almoft overthrawne, when Philanax (who was the marshal of thearmy) came in, with newe force reuining the almost decayed courage of his soouldiers. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backes or their armes were better fighters) he him selfe thrust into the press, and making force and furie waite vpon discretion and gouvernement, he might seeme a braue Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to ioine courage with cunning. The Fortune (as if she had made chaves inow of the one side of that bloody Teniscourt) went of the other side the line, making as many fall downe of Amphialus followers, as before had done of Philanaxis; they loosing the ground, as fast as before they had woon it, only leaving them to keepe it, who had lost themselfes in keeping it. Then thole that had killed, inherited the lot of thole that had bene killed; and cruel Death made the lie quietly together, who most in their luyes had fought to disquiet ech other, and

many
many of those first overthrowne, had the comfort to see the murtherers overrun them to Charon's ferrie.

Codrus, Ctesphon, and Milo, lost their lives upon Phila-
nax. His sword: but no bodies case was more pitied, than
of a yong esquire of Amphialus, called Iphmenus, who ne-
uer abandoning his maister, and making his tender age
aspire to actes of the strongest manhoode, in this time
that his side was put to the worst, and that Amphialas-
his value was the onely stay of them from deliuer-
ing themselves over to a shamefull flight, he sawe his ma-
sters horse killed vnder him. Whereupon, asking no ad-
uisse of no thought, but of faithfulnes and courage, he
presently lighted from his owne horse, and with the
helpe of some choyse and faithfull seuants, gat his ma-
ster vp. But in the multitude that came of either side,
some to succour, some to saue Amphialus, he came un-
der the hande of Philanax: and the youth perceyuing
he was the man that did most hurt to his partie, (de-
sirous euë to change his life for glory) strake at him, as
he rode by him, and gaue him a hurt vpon the leg, that
made Philanax turn towards him; but feing him so yóg,
& of a most louely presence, he rather toke pity of him;
meaning to make him prisoner, & the to giue him to his
brother Agenor to be his companion, because they were
not much vnlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance.
But as he loked down vpon him with that thought, he
spied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend Leonius by
him, euë almost vnder the squiers feet. The foroing not
only his owne forow, but the past-cófort forow, which
he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many
tears, & misgiuing sighs had suffred him to go with his
elder brother Philanax) blotted out all figures of pitie
out
out of his minde, and putting forth his horfe (while Ismenus doubled two or three more valiant, then well let blowes) saying to himselfe, Let other mothers beware an untimely death as well as mine; he thrust him through. And the boy feare though beautiful, & beautiful, though dying, not able to keepe his failing feete, fel downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could resisting Death, which might seeme unwilling to, so long he was in taking away his yong struggling soule.

3 Philanax himselfe could have wished the blow unglen, when he saw him fall like a faire apple, which some uncourteous bodie (breaking his bowe) should throwe downe before it were ripe. But the cafe of his brother made him forget both that, and himselfe: so as overhaftily pressing vppon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owneouldiers could relieve him; were being ouerthrown by Amphialus, Amphialus glad of him, kept head against his enemies while some of his men carried away Philanax.

But Philanax his men as if with the losse of Philanax they had lost the fountain of their valure, had their courages so dried vp in feare, that they began to set honour at their backes, and to vfe the vertue of patience in an untimely time: when into the presse comes (as hard as his horfe, more afraid of the spurre, then the sword could carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes could make it, followed by none, & adorned by nothing, so far without authoritie, that he was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him such authoritie, that though they of whole side he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was
it was sute to obey him: and while he was followed by
the valiantest, he made way for the vilest. For, taking
part with the besiegers, he made the Amphialians' blood
ferue for a caparison to his horse, and a decking to his
armour. His arme no oftner gaue blowes, then the
blowes gaue wounds, then the wounds gaue deathes:
so terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more
forcible then his force, and his judgement more quick
then his quicknes. For though the sword went faster
then eyesight could follow it, yet his owne judgement
went still before it. There died of his hand, Sarpedon,
Plistonax, Strophilus, and Hippolitus, men of great proofe
in warres, and who had that day undertaken the guard
of Amphialus. But while they fought to save him, they
lost the fortresses that Nature had placed them in. The
flew he Megalus, who was a little before proud, to see
himselfe stained in the bloud of his enemies: but when
his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then
felt, that Crueltie dooth neuer enjoy a good cheape
"glorie. After him sent he Palemon, who had that daye
vowed (with foolish brauerie) to be the death of tenne:
and nine already he had killed, and was carefull to per-
forme his (almost performed) vowe, when the Blacke
Knight helpt him to make vp the tenth himselfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune began also
to change the hewe of the batailles. For at the first,
though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt so braue-
lie with rich furniture, guilde swords, shining armours,
pleasent pensils, that the eye with delight had scarce
leasure to be afraide: But now all uniuersally desiled
with dust, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies,
tooke away the malke, and sette foorth Horror in his
owne
owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be
dreadfull to Amphialus—his undismayable courage,
nor yet seeme ougly to him, whose truely-affected
minde, did still paint it ouer with the beautie of Philo-
clea. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled
with the encrease of dangers, and glad to finde a woord-
thie subject to exercife his courage, sought out this
newe Knight, whom he might easilie finde: for he,
like a wanton rich man, that throwes down his neigh-
bours houses, to make himselfe the better prospecte,
so had his sworde made him so sparious a roome, that
Amphialus had more cause to wonder at the finding,
then labour for the seeking: which, if it stirred hate in
him, to see how much harme he did to the one side,
it provoked as much emulation in him, to perceau
how much good he did to the other side. Therefore,
they approaching one to the other, as in two beauti-
full folkes, Loue naturally stirres a desire of joyning,
so in their two courages Hate stirr'd a desire of triall.
Then began there a combatte betwene them, worthy
to haue had more large listes, and more quiet behol-
ders: for with the spurre of Courage, and the bite of
Respect, each so guided himselfe, that one might well
see, the desire to overcome, made them not forget how
to overcome: in such time & proportion they did em-
ploy their blowes, that none of Ceres seruants could
more cunningly place his flaire: while the lefte foote
spurre set forwarde his owne horfe, the right sette back-
ward the contrarie horfe, even sometimes by the ad-
uanitage of the enemies legge, while the lefte hande
(like him that helde the steme) guyded the horses obe-
dient courage: All done in such order, that it might
seeme
feeme, the minde was a right Prince indeede, who sent wise and diligent Lieutenants into each of those well governed partes. But the more they fought, the more they desired to fight; and the more they smarled, the less they felt the smarle: and now were like to make a quicke proofe, to whom Fortune or Valour woulde feeme most friendly, when in comes an olde Gouernour of Amphialus, always a good Knight, and carefull of his charge; who giving a sore wounde to the blacke Knights thigh, while he thought not of him, with another blowe flewe his horse vnde him. Amphialus cried to him, that he dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to stande now like a private soouldier, setting your credite upon particular fighting, while you may see Basilius with all his hoste, is getting betweene you and your towne.

He looked that way, and found that true indeede, that the enemie was beginning to encompasse him about, and stoppe his returne: and therefore causing the retreite to be founded, his Gouernour ledde his men homewarde, while he kepte him selfe still hindmoste, as if he had stoode at the gate of a fluse, to lette the streame goe, with such proportion, as shoulde seeme good vnto him: and with so manfull discretion perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he returned in himselfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felt, how sharpe the sworde could bite of Philoctet Louer. The other partie being forie for the losse of Philanax, was yet forrier when the blacke Knight could not be found. For he having gotten on a horse, whom his dying master had bequeathed to the world, finding himselfe fore
The Countesse of Pembrokes

fore hurt, and not desirous to be known, had in the
time of the enemies retiring, retired away also: his
thigh not bleeding bloud so fast, as his harte bleddde re-
venge. But Basilius having attempted in vaine to barre
the safe returne of Amphialus, encamped himselfe as
strongly as he could, while he (to his grief) might heare
the ioy was made in the towne by his owne subiectes,
that he had that day sped no better. For Amphialus (be-
ing well beloued of that people) when they sawe him
not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his
youth setting a flourishing shew uppon his worthinesse,
and his great nobilitie ennobling his dangers.

CHAP. 9.

'The Louse-divining dreame of Amphialus song to Philo-
clea. ' Philanax his captuitie, and deaths-doome, for
Philocleas sake turnde to life and libertie. * His loyall an-
swere of his Lords intents. ' Cecropias arses to perswade
the sisters.

But the first thing Amphialus did, be-
ing returned, was to visite Philoclea,
and first presuming to cause his
dreame to be song vnto her (which
he had seene the night before he fell
in love with her) making a fine boy
he had, accorde a prettie dolefulnes
vnto it. The song was this.

Now was our heavinly vaunte deprived of the light
With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night

Did
Did light those beamey stars which greater light did darke:
Now each thing that enjoy'd that firie quickning sparke
(Which life is cald) were mou'd their spirits to repose,
And wanting use of eyes their eyes began to close:
A silence sweet each where with one consent embraste
(A musique sweet to one in carefull musing plaste)
And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds, did breath
A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:
When I disgraced wretch, not wretched then, did give
My senses such relieve, as they which quiet liue,
Whose braines broile not in woes, nor breathes with beatings ake,
With natures praise are wont in safest home to take.
Far from my thoughts was ought, whereto their minds aspire,
Who under courtly pompes doo hatch a base desire.
Free all my powers were from those capturing snares,
Which heauily purest gifts defile in muddy cares.
Ne could my soule its selfe accuse of such a faulte,
As tender conscience might with furious panges assault.
But like the feeble flower (whose stakke cannot sustaine
His weighty top) his top doth downward drooping leane:
Or as the silye birde in well acquainted nest
Doth hide his head with cares but only how to rest:
So I in simple course, and unentangled minde
Did suffer drouste lids mine eyes then cleare to blinde;
And laying downe my head, did natures rule observe,
Which senses up doth shut the senses to preferue.
They first their use forgot, then fancies lost their force;
Till deadly sleepe at length possesse my living course.
A living coarse I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde
(Which made of heauily stakke no mortal change doth blind)
Flew up with freer wings of fleshly bondage free;
And having plaste my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

Me thought, my sure I was, I was in fairest wood
Of Samothesa lande, a lande, which whilom stood
An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,
And while their line of yeares they did in vertue spende.
But there I was, and there my calme thoughts I fedd
On Natures sweet repast, as healthfull senses ledd.
Her gifts my study was, her beauties were my store:
Those lamps of heavenly fire to fixed motion bound,
The ever-turning sheares, the never-moving ground.
What essence deft? me hath if fortune be or no?
Whence our immortal soules to mortall earth doo flowes?
What life is, and how that all these lives do gather,
With outward makers force, or like an inward father. (mind)
Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and strain'd my single
Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find.
When lo with houset noise (such noise a tower makes
When it blowne downe with winde a fall of raine takes)
(Or such a noise it was, as highest thunders sende,
Or canons thunder-like, all shot together, lende)
The Moone a sunder rent, whereout with sodaine fall
(More swift then falcons stoope to feeding Falconers call)
There came a chariot faire by doves and sparrows guided:
Whose stormelike course faild not till hard by me it bided.
I wretch astonisht was, and thought the deathfull doome
Of heauen, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
But freight there issued forth two Ladies (Ladies sure
They seemd to me) on whom did waite a Virgin pure:
Strange were the Ladies weeds, yet more unfit then strange.
The first with cloth she stuck vp as Nymphes in woods do range;
Tuckt vp even with the knees, with bowe and arroves prest:
Her right arme naked was, discouered was her brest.

But
But beauty was her pace, and such a meagre cheere,
As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeere.
The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,
As sullfe meant for the sale set out to glaring showe)
A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twinde
Her haire, which by the helpe of painters cunning shinde.
When I such guests did see come out of such a house, (mouse.
The mountains great with childe I thought brought forth a
But walking forth, the first thus to the second said,
Venus come on: said she, Diane you are obiide.
Those names abasht me much, where those great names I hard:
Although their fame (me seennd) from truth had greatly iard.
As I thus musing stound, Diana calde to her
The waiting Nympe, a Nympe that did excell as farr.
All things that eare I sawe, as orient pearles exceed,
That which their mother hight, or els their silly seed.
Indeed a perfect hewe, indeed a sweet consent
Of all those Graces gifts the heauens have ever lent.
And so she was attirde, as one that did not prize
Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them despise.
But calde she came apace, a pace wherein did moue
The bande of beauties all, the little world of I...
And bending humbled eyes (o eyes the Sunne of sight)
She waited mistresse will: who thus disclosed her spight.
Sweet Mira mine (quoth she) the pleasure of my minde,
In whom of all my rules the perfect proffe I finde,
To onely thee thou seest we graunt this special grace
Vs to attend, in this most private time and place.
Be silent therefore now, and so be silent still
Of that thou seest: close up in secret knot thy will.
She answer'd was with looke, and well per...rm'd behest:
And Mira I admirde: her shape sinkd in my brest.
The Countesse of Pembroke's
But thus with irefull eyes, and face that shooke with spite
Diana did begin. What would me to invite
Your presence (sister deare) first to my Moony Sphere,
And hither now, vouchsafe to take with willing care.
I know full well you know, what discord long hath raign'd
Betwixt us two; how much that discord soule hath stain'd
Both our estates, while each the other did deprave,
Prose speaks too much to us that feeling triall bane.
Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defac'd:
Our offerings spoil'd, our priest from priesthood are displac'd
Is this the fruit of strife? those thousand churches lie,
Those thousand altars faire now in the dust to lie?

In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preserve:
No knees once bow'd, for sooth, for them they say we serve.
Are we their servants growne? no doubt a noble stage:
Celestiall powers to worms, Ioues children serue to claye.
But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,
While we for mutuall sight a striving passion fed.
But let us wiser be, and what soule discord brake,
So much more strong againe let fastest concorde make.
Our yeares do it require: you see we both do seele
The weaking worke of Times for ever-whirling wheele.
Although we be divin e, our grand sire Saturne is
With ages force decay'd, yet once the heauen was his.
And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skil
Our young yeares to renew (for so he saith he will)
Let us a perfect peace betweene vs two resolue:
Which left the rumous want of government dissolve;
Let one the Princesse be, to her the other yeeld:
For vaine equalitie is but contentions field.
And let her have the gifts that should in both remaine:
In her let beautie both, and chastnesse fully raigne.
So as if I prevaile, you give your gifts to me:
If you, on you I lay what in my office be.
Now resteth only this, which of us two is she,
To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.
For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth
(She beckned unto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,
Whence may this doubt discern: for better, witt, then lost
Beommeth vs: in us fortune determines not.
This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)
To worthiest let him give, when both he hath beheld:
And be it as he saith, Venüs was glad to heare.
Such proffer made, which she well shrowd with smiling cheere.
As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome
She had chiefe Goddesses in beautie overcome.
And smirckly thus gans say. I never sought debate
Diana deare, my minde to love and not to hate.
Was cuer apt: but you my pastimes did despise.
I never spited you, but thought you our wife.
Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:
And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.
And let him be our judge: the lad doth please me well.
Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell
(For both together spake, each loth to be behind)
That they by solenne oth their Deities would binde
To hand unto my will: their will they made me know.
I that was first agast, when first I saw their showe:
Now bolder waxt; waxt proude, that I such sway must beare:
For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reverent feare.
And having bound them fast by Styx, they should obaye
To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.
How ill both you can rule, well hath your discord taught:
Nyet for ought I see, your beauties merit ought.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

To yonder Nymphe therefore (to Mira I did point)
The crowne above you both for euer I appoint.
I would have spoken out; but out they both did crike,
Fie, fie, what have we done? ungodly rebell fie.
But now we needs must yeilde, to that our others require.
Yet thou shalt not go free (quoth Venus) such a fire
Her beautie kindle shall within thy foolish minde;
That thou full oft shalt with thy judging eyes were blinde.
Nay then (Diana said) the chastnesse I will give
In afhes of defpaire (though burnt) shall make thee live.
Nay thou (said both) shalt see such beames shine in her face
That thou shalt never dare seeke helpe of wretched case.
And with that cursed curse away to heaven they fled,
First having all their gifts upon faire Mira spred.
The rest I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd:
And found with deadly fear that all my sinewes shak'd.
Was it a dreame? O dreame, how hast thou wrought in me,
That I things erst unseen should first in dreaming see?
And thou o traytour Sleepe, made for to be our rest,
How hast thou framde the paine wherewith I am opprest?
O coward Cupid thus doost thou thy honour kepe,
Vnarmde (alas) vnmares to take a man asleepe?

Laying not onely the conquests, but the hart of the conquerour at her feet. *** But she receiuuing him after her woonted sorrowfull (but otherwise vnmouced) manner, it made him thinke, his good successe was but a pleasant monument of a dolefull buriall: Ioy it selfe seeming bitter vnto him, since it agreed not to her taste.

Therefore, still crauing his mothers helpe to persuade her, he himself sent for Philanax vnto him, whom he
he had not onely long hated, but nowe had his hate greatly encreased by the death of his Squire Iphimenis. Besides he had made him as one of the chiefe causes that moued him to this rebellion, and therefore was enclined (to colour the better his action, and the more to embrewe the handes of his accomplices by making them guiltie of such a trespasse) in some formall sort to cause him to be executed: being also greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and some other, who long had hated Philanax, onely because he was more worthy to be loved then they.

But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather to the humour then the reason of each spea
er, Philocles comming to knowledge of the hard plight wherein Philanax stood, she desired one of the gentlewomen appoynted to waite upon her, to goe in her name, and beseech Amphialus, that if the loue of her had any power of perswasion in his minde, he would lay no further punishment, then imprisonment, upon Philanax. This meassage was delivered euyn as Philanax was entring to the presence of Amphialus, comming (according to the warning was giuen him) to receyue a judgement of death. But when he with manfull resolucyon attended the fruite of such a tyrannicall sentence, thinking it wrong, but no harms to him that shoule die in so good a cause; Amphialus turned quite the fourme of his pretended speeche, and yeelded him humble thankes, that by his means he had come to that happinisse, as to receiue a commaundement of his Ladie: and therefore he willingly gaue him libertie to returne in safetie whither he would;
The Countesse of Pembroke

would, quitting him, not only of all former grudge, but assuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendship, and service: only desiring thus much of him, that he would let him know the discourse and intent of Basilius-his proceeding.

Truely my Lorde (answered Philanax) if there were any such knowne to me, secrete in my maisters countaile, as that the revealing thereof might hinder his good successe, I shoulde loath the keeping of my blood, with the losse of my faith, and woulde thinke the iust name of a traitour a harde purchase of a fewe yeares living. But since it is so, that my maister hath indeede no way of priuie practife, but meanes openly and forcibly to deale against you, I will not sticke in fewe wordes to make your required declaration. Then tolde he him in what amaze of amazement, both Basilius and Gynecia were, when they mist their children and Zelmant. Sometimes apt to suspect some practife of Zelmant, because she was a straunger, sometimes doubting some reliques of the late mutinie, which doubt was rather encreased, then any way satisfied, by Miju: who (being founde, almost deade for hunger, by certaine Countrey-people) brought home worde, with what cunning they were trayned out, and with what violence they were caried away. But that within a fewe dayes they came to knowledge where they were, with Amphialus-his owne letters lent abroade to procure confederates in his attemptes. That Basilius his purpose was neuer to leaue the siege of this towne, till he had taken it, and reuenged the injurie done vn-to him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, and famine, then by force of assault: knowing howe valiant
valiant men he had to deal with all in the town: that he had sent order, that supplyes of souliours, pio-
ners, and all things else necessarie, should dayly be brought vnto him: so as, my Lorde (sayde Philanax) let me nowe, haung receyued my life by your grace. let me giue you your life and honour by my coun-
saile; protesting vnto you, that I cannot choose but loue you, being my maister-his nephewe; and that I wish you well in all causes: but this, you knowe his nature is as apte to forgive, as his power is able to conquer. Your fault passed is excusable, in that Loue perfwaded, and youth was perfwaded. Do not urge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather seek to obtaine that constantly by courtesie, which you can ne-
er assuredly enjoy by violence. One might easily have seene in the cheare of Amphialus, that disdain-
full choller wouulde faine have made the aunswere for him, but the remembrance of Philoclea serv'd for forcibie barriers betwene Anger, and angry effects: so as he faide no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to giue him any further counsaile: But that he might returne, if he listt, presently. Phila-
anax glad to receyue an uncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his favouable convoy out of the towne; and so departed, not haung visitad the Princeses, thinking it might be offensifue to Amphialus, and no way fruitfiull to them, who were no way but by force to be relievad.

The poore Ladies indeede, not suffered either to meet together, or to have coference with any other, but such as Cecropia had alreadie framed to sing all her songs to her tunc, she herselfe omitting no day, and cat-
ching
ching holde of euerie occasion to moue forwarde her nonnes desire, and remove their knowne resolutions: using the same arguments to the one sister, as to the other; determining that whome she coulde winne first, the other shoulde (without her nonnes knowledge) by poyson be made away. But though the reasons were the same to both, yet the handeling was diuerse, according as she sawetheir humours to preferre a more or lesse aptnesse of apprehension: this day having vseed long speech to Philoclea, amplifying not a little thegreat dutifulnesse her nonne had shewed in deliuering Philanax: of whome she coulde get no answerwre, but a silençe sealel vp in vertue, and so sweedly graced, as that in one instant it caried with it both resisstance, and humblenesse.

CHAP. 10.


Ecropia threatning in her selfe to runne a more ragged race with her, went to her sifter Pamela: who that day hauing weared her selfe with reading, and with the height of her hart disdaining to keepe companie with any of the Gentlewomen appoitioned to attende her, whome she accounted her iaylours, was woorking ypon a purfe certaine Roses and Lillies, as by the finenesse of the worke
worke, one might see she had borowed her wittes of the
forrow that owed them, & lent them wholly to that exer-
cise. For the flowers she had wrought, caried such life in
them, that the cuningest painter might haue learned of
her needle: which with so pretty a maner made his ca-
reers to & fro through the cloth, as if the needle it selfe
would haue bene loth to haue gone froward such a mis-
stres, but that it hoped to return theceward very quick-
ly againe: the cloth loking with many eies vpon her, &
loouingly embracing the wounds she gaue it: the sheares
also were at hand to behead the silke, that was growne
to short. And if at any time she put her mouth to bite it
off, it seemed, that where she had beene long in making
of a Rose with her hand, she would in an instant make
Roses with her lips; as the Lillies seemed to haue their
whitenesse, rather of the hande that made them, then
of the matter whereof they were made; and that they
grew there by the Sunes of her eyes, & were refreshed
by the most in discomfort comfortable ayre, which an
ynwares sigh might beflow vpon them. But the colours
for the grounde were so well chosen, neither sullenly
darke, nor glaringly lightsome, and so well propor-
tioned, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was
but to serue for an ornament of the principall woorke;
that it was not without manuale to see, howe a minde
which could cast a carelesse semblant vpon the gre-
test confictes of Fortune, could commande it selfe
to take care for so small matters. Neither had she neg-
lected the daintie dressing of her selfe: but as it had
ben her mariage time to Affliction, she rather seemed to
remember her owne worthiness, then the vnworthi-
ness of her husband. For well one might perceyue
The Countesse of Pembroke's

She had not rejected the counsaille of a glasse, and that her handes had pleased themselves, in paying the tribute of vndeceyuing skill, to so high perfections of Nature.

The sight whereof so divers from her sister, (who rather suffered sorrow to distresse it selfe in her beautie, then that she would bestow any entertainement of so vn-welcome a guest) made Cecropia take a fuddaine affsurendness of hope, that she should obtaine somewhat of Pamela: thinking (according to the squaring out of her own good nature) that beauty, carefully set forth, wold soone proue a signe of an vnrefusing harbrough. Animated wherewith, she fate downe by Pamela: and taking the purse, and with affected curiositie looking vp on the worke, Full happie is he (saide she) at least if he knew his owne happinesse, to whom a purse in this manner, and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he shall haue cause to account it, not as a purse for treasure, but as a treasure it selfe, worthie to be purfled vp in the purse of his owne hart. And thinke you so indeed (saide Pamela half smilling) I promisse you I wrought it, but to make some tedious hours believe, that I thought not of them: for else I valued it, but euery as a verie purse. It is the right nature (saide Cecropia) of Beautie, to woorke unwitting effectes of wonder. Truely (saide Pamela) I never thought till nowe, that this outward glasse, intitled Beautie, which it pleaseth you to lay to my (as I thinke) vnguiltie charge, was but a pleasant mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as musick is to the care, without any further consequence: since it is a thing, which not onely bestes haue, but euery stones and trees many of them
them doo greatly excell in it. That other thinges (answered Cecropia) haue some portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth excell: since we see, that euen those beastes, trees, & stones, are in the name of Beauty only highly praised. But that the beautie of humaine persons be beyond all other things there is great likelihood of reason, since to them only is giuen the judgement to discerne Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seemes, that our sex hath the preheminence, so that in that preheminence, nature counteruailes all other liberalities, wherin she may be thought to haue deale more favourably towarde mankind. How doo men crowne (thinke you) themselues with glorie, for having either by force brought others to yeeld to their minde, or with long studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they would haue perswaded? and see, a faire woman shall not one ly commaund without authoritie, but perswade without speaking. She shall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will chaine their cares vnto it. Men venture liues to conquere; she conqueres liues without venturing. She is serued, and obeyed, which is the most notable, not because the lawes to commaund it, but because they become lawes to the selues to obey her; not for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She neede not dispute, whether to gouerne by Feare, or by Loue, since without her thinking thereof, their loue will bring foorth feare, and their feare will fortifie their loue: and she neede not secke offensive, or defensifue force; since her lippes may stande for ten thousand shields, and tenne thousand vnuettable shot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deare Neece) is the
The Countesse of Pembroke

the crowne of the feminine greatnes; which gift, on whom focuer the heauens (therein most nigardly) do bestowe, without question, she is bound to vse it to the noble purpose, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preferring; since that indeede is the right happines, which is not onely in it selfe happie, but can also derive the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (said Pamela) I feare me you will make me not onely think my selfe fairer then euer I did, but think my faernes a matter of greater valew then heretofore I could imagine it. For I euer (till now) conceaued these conquests you spake of, rather to proceed from the weakesnes of the conquered, then from the strength of the conquering power: as they say, the Cranes overthowe whole battailes of Pygmees, not so much of their Cranish courage, as because the other are Pygmees: and that we see, young babes think babies of wonderfull excellencie, and yet the babies are but babies. But since your elder yeares, and abler judgement, finde Beautie to be worthy of so incomparable estimation, certainly me thinks, it ought to be held in dearnes, according to the excellencie, and (no more then we would do of things which we account pretious) euer to suffer it to be defiled.

Defiled: (sael Cecropia) Mary God forbid that my speech should tend to any such purpose, as should deserve so foule a title. My meaning is to ioyn your beauty to loue; your youth to delight. For truely, as colours should be as good as nothing, if there were no eyes to behold them: so is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Loue behold it. and therefore, so far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preferring of it: for Beauty goes away, devoured by Time, but where remains
Arcadia. Lib.3.

remains it euer flourishing, but in the hart of a true louer! And such a one (if euer there were any) is my son: whose loue is so subiectect vnto you, that rather then breed any offence vnto you, it will not delight it selfe in beholding you. Ther is no effect of his loue (answere
d Pamela) better pleafeth me then that: but as I haue ofte answered you, so, resolutely I say vnto you, that he muſt get my parents consent, & then he shall know fur-
ther of my mind; for, without that, I know I should off-
fend God. O sweet youth (said Cecropia) how vntimely subie& it is to devotion? No, no sweet neece, let vs old folks think of such precise consideratiōs, do you enjoy the heauen of your age, whereof you are sure: and like good houfholders, which fpemd those things that will not be kept, to do you pleafantly enjoy that, which else will bring an ouer-late repentance, where your glas shall accuse you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you see how the spring-time is ful of flowers, deck-
ing it self with them, & not aspiring to the fruits of Au-
umn? what leſson is that vnto you, but that in the april of your age, you should be like April? Let not some of the, for whom already the grave gapeth, & perhaps enuy the felicity in you, which the selues cannot enjoy, per-
swade you to lofe the hold of occasiō, while it may not only be taken, but offers, nay sues to be take: which if it be not now taken, will never hereafter be overaken. Your self know, how your father hath refused all offers made by the greatest Princes about you, & wil you suf-
fer your beauty to be hid in the wrinkles of his peuiifh thoughts? If he be peuiifh (said Pamela) yet is he my fa-
ther, & how beautiful foeuer I be, I am his daughter: so as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no judge of his imperfections.

These
These often replies upon conscience in *Pamela*, made Ceropla think, that there was no righter waye for her, then as she had (in her opinion) set her in liking of Beautie, with perswasion not to suffer it to beyoide of purpose, so if she could make her leffe feeling of those heauenly conceptions, that then she might easilie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the uttermost of her mischieuous witte, and speaking the more earnestly, because she spake as she thought, she thus dealt with her. Deare niece, or rather, deare daughter (if my affection and wishe might preuaile therein) how much dooth it increase (trowe you) the earnest desire I haue of this blessed match, to see these vertues of yours knit fast with such zeaie of Deuotion,indeede the best bonde, which the most politicke wittes haue found, to holde mans witte in well doing? For, as children must first by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they doo know) they are most glad of: So are these bugbeares of opinions brought by great Clearkes into the world, to serue as shewelles to keepe them from those faults, whereto els the vanite of the worlde, and weakenes of senses might pull them. But in you (Neece) whose excellencie is such, as it neede not to be helde vp by the staffe of vulgar opiniones, I would not you should loue Vertue seruillie, for feare of I know not what, which you see not: but even for the good effects of vertue which you see. Feare, and indeede, foolish feare, and fearfull ignoraunce, was the first inuenter of those conceates. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the natural cause, they thought there was some angrie body aboue, that spake so lowde: and euer the leffe they did per-
perceive, the more they did conceive. Whereof they knew no cause that gave fright a miracle: foolish folks, not marking that the alterations be but upon particular accidents, the universalitie being alwaies one. Yesterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the same footsteps of his foregoers: so as it is manifest enough, that all things follow but the course of their own nature, saving only Man, who while by the pregnant of his imagination he strives to things supernaturall, meanewhile he lootheth his owne naturall felicitie. Be wise, and that wisedome shalbe a God vnto thee; be contented, and that is thy heauen: for els to thinke that those powers (if there be any such) aboue, are moved either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe by the folly of our actions: caries as much reason as if flies should thinke, that men take great care which of them hums sweetest, and which of them flies nimblest.

She would have spoken further to have enlarged & confirmed her discourse: but Pamela (whose cheeks were died in the beautifullest graine of vertuous anger, with eies which glittered forth beames of disdaine) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, unworthy to breathe, that doest not acknowledge the breathgiver, most unworthy to have a tongue, which speakest against him, through whom thou speakest: keepe your affection to your self, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You say yesterday was as to day. O foolish woman, and most miserably foolish, since wit makes you foolish. What dooth that argue, but that there is a constancie in the euerlafting gouernour? Would you have an inconstant God, since we count a

O o man
man foolish that is inconstant? He is not seene you say, and would you thinke him a God, who might be seene by so wicked eyes, as yours: which yet might see enough if they were not like such, who for sport sake willingly hood wincke themselues to receaue blowes the easier. But though I speake to you without any hope of fruite in so rotten a harte, and there be no bo-"die else here to judge of my speeches, yet be thou my witnesse, O captiuitie, that my eares shall not be will-"ingly guiltie of my Creators blasphemie. You saie, because we know not the causes of things, therefore feare was the mother of superstition: nay, because we know that each effect hath a cause, that hath engen-
dred a true & liuely devotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, and in which we liue, hath not his be-
ing by Chaunce; on which opinion it is beyond mer-
uaile by what chaunce any braine could stumble. For if it be eternall (as you would seeme to conceiue of it) Eternity, & Chaunce are things vnstuable together. For that is chaunceable which happeneth; & if it hap-
pen, there was a time before it hapned, when it might not haue happened, or els it did not happen, and so of chaunceable, not eternall, as now being, the not being. And as absurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was derived fro Chaunce: for Chaunce could never make all things of nothing: and if there were substaunccs before, which by chaunce shoulde meece to make vp this worke, thereon followes ano-
other bottomlesse-pitt of absurdities. For then those substaunccs must needes haue bene from eternall: and that eternall causes should bring forth chaunceable effects, is as sensiblle, as that the Sunne should
should be the author of darkness. Again, if it were chauncetable, then was it not necessarie, whereby you take away all consequents. But we see in all things, in some respect or other, necessitie of consequence: therefore in reason we must needs know that the causes were necessarie.

Lastly, Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but we see this worke is steady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed those pieces of this All, the heauie partes would haue gone infinitely downewarde, the light infinitely upwarde, and so neuer haue met to haue made vp this goodly bodie. For before there was a heauen, or a earth, there was neyther a heauen to stay the height of the rising, nor an earth, which (in respect of the round walles of heauen) should become a centre. Lastly, perfect order, perfect beaute, perfect constancie, if these be the children of Chaunce, or Fortune the efficient of these, let Wisedome be counted the roote of wickednesse, and eternitie the fruite of her inconstancie. But you will say it is so by nature, as much as if you said it is so, because it is so: if you meane of many natures conspiring together, as in a popular gouernement to establishe this fayre estate; as if the Elementishe and ethereall partes shouold in their towne-house set downe the boundes of each ones office; then consider what follows: that there must needs haue bene a wisedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng absoolute contrarie, in nature rather woulde haue fought each others ruine, then haue served as well comforted partes to such an vnexpress-
able harmonic. For that contrary things should meete to make vp a perfection without a force and Wisedome aboue their powers, is absolutely impossible, vnles you will flie to that hiffed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme, that one vniversal Nature (which hath bene for euer) is the knitting together of these many partes to such an excellent vnitie. If you meanes a Nature of wisedome, goodnes, & prouidence, which knowes what it doth, then say you that, which I seeke of you, and cannot conclude those blasphemies, with which you desfiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meanes a Nature, as we speake of the fire, which goeth vpward, it knowes not why; and of the nature of the Sea which, in ebbing and flowing seems to obeye so just a daunce, and yet understand no musick, it is but still the same absurditie subscribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones, as in a lesse matter, when we saye one kingdome which conteines many citties, or one cittie which conteines many persons, wherein the vnder ones (if there be not a superiour power and wisedome) cannot by nature regarde to any preseruation but of themselves: no more we see they doo, since the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; so farre are they from a conspired vnitie; but that a right heavenly Nature indeed, as it were vnnaturing them, doth so bridle them.

Againe, it is as absurde in nature that from an vnitie many contraries should proceede still kept in an vnitie; as that from the number of contrarities an vnitie
tie should arise. I say still, if you banish both a singularitie, and pluralitie of judgement from among them, then (if so earthly a minde can lift it selfe vp to hie) doo but conceaue, how a thing whereto you giue the highest, and most excellent kinde of being (which is eternitie) can be of the base and vilest degree of being, and next to a not-being, which is so to be, as not to enjoy his owne being: I will not here call all your senses to witnes, which can heare, nor see nothing, which yeeldes not most euident euidence of the unspeakable blenesse of that Wisdom : each thing being directed to an ende, and an ende of preueruation: so proper effects of judgement, as speaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madd furie can euer so enuiegle any conception, as to see our mortall and corruptible selues to have a reason, and that this unuerseitie (whereof we are but the left pieces) should be utterly deuoide thereof: as if one should saie, that ones foote might be wise, and him selfe foolish. This hearde I once alledged against such a godlesse minde as yours, who being driuen to acknowledge these beastly absurdities, that our bodies should be better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other were voide; he sought (not able to answere directly) to shifte it of in this sorte: that if that reason were true, then must it followe also, that the worlde must haue in it a spirite, that could write and reade to, and be learned; since that was in vs so commendable: wretched fool, not considering that Bookes be but supplies of defects, and so are prayed, because they helpe our want,
want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to confirm his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulness. This worlde therefore cannot otherwise consist but by a minde of Wisedome, whiche gouernes it, which whether you wil allow to be the Creator thereof, as undoubtedly he is, or the soule and gouernour thereof, most certaine it is that whether he gouerne all, or make all, his power is aboue either his creatures, or his gouernement. And if his power be aboue all things, then consequently it muft needes be infinite, since there is nothing aboue it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, must needes be boundlesse, and infinite; if his power be infinite, then likewise must his knowledge be infinite: for else there should be an infinite proportion of power which he shoulde not know how to use; the vninsensible whereof I thinke euery you can conceaue: and if infinite, then must nothing, no not the estate of flies (which you with so vn-sauerie skorne did iest at) be vnknowne vnto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and so not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then must needes his goodnesse and iustice march in the same rancke: for infinitenes of power, & knowledge, without like measure of goodnesse, must necessarily bring forth destruction and ruine, and not ornament and preseruation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, so as he sees into the darkest of all naturall secretes, which is the harte of Man, and sees therein the deepest dissemblende thoughts, nay sees
fees the thoughts before they be thought: since he is just to exercise his might, and mightly to performe his justice, assure thy selfe, most wicked woman (that hast so plaguely a corrupted minde, as thou canst not keepe thy sickness to thy selfe, but must most wickedly infect others) assure thy selfe, I say, (for what I say dependes of everlasting and vnremoueable causes) that the time will come, when thou shalt knowe that power by seeing it, when thou shalt see his wisedome in the manifesting thy ougly shamelessness, and shalt onely perceive him to have bene a Creator in thy destruction.

CHAP. II.


Hus she saide, thus she ended, with so faire a maieftie of vnconquered vertue, that captuitty might seeme to haue authoritie over tyrannie: so lowly was the filthinesse of impietie discovered by the shining of her vnstayned goodnes, so farre, as either Cecropia saw indeed, or else the guilty amazement of her selfe-accusing conscience, made her eies vntrue judges of their natural object, that

O o 4 there
there was a light more then humaine, which gaue a lu-
stre to her perfections. But Cecropia, like a Batte (which
though it haue eyes to discerne that there is a Sunne,
yet hath so euill eyes, that it cannot delight in the
Sunne) found a trueth, but could not loue it. But as
great persons are woont to make the wrong they haue
done, to be a cause to doo the more wrong, her know-
ledge rose to no higher point, but to enuie a wor-
thier, and her will was no otherwise bent, but the more
to hate, the more she founde her enemie provided a-
gainst her. Yet all the while she spake (though with
eyes cast like a horse that would strike at the stirrup,
and with colour which blushed through yellownesse)
the fates rather still then quiet, and after her speech rather
muttered, then replied: for the warre of wickednesse in
herselfe, brought forth disdainfull pride to resist cun-
nning dissimulation; so as, laying little more unto her,
but that she should haue leysure inough better to be-
thinke herselfe, she went away repining, but not repen-
ting: condemning greatly (as she thought) her lonnes
ouer-feeble humblenesse, and purposing to egge him
forward to a course of violence. For her selfe, detersing
al meanes of them both any more in
manner of a futer; for what maistie of vertue did in the
one, that did silent humblenesse in the other. But find-
ing her sonne ouer-apt to lay both condemnation,
and execution of sorowe vpon himselfe, she sought
to mitigate his minde with feigned delays of com-
forte, who (hauing this inward ouerthrow in himselfe)
was the more vexed, that he could not utter the rage
thereof vpon his outward enemies.

For Basilus taught by the last dayes triall, what
daungers
daungerous effects chosen courages can bring forth, rather vshed the spade, then the sworde; or the sworde, but to defende the spade; girding aboute the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way of from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he still caried before him till they came to a neere distance, where he builded Fortes, one answering the other, in such fort, as it was a prettie considera
tion in the discipline of warre, to see building vshed for the instrument of ruine, and the assayler entrench
d as if he were besieged. But many fallies did Amphialus make to hinder their working. But they (exercising more melancholie, then choller in their resolution) made him finde, that if by the aduaun	age of place, fewe are able to defende themselves from manie, that manie must needes haue power, (making themselves strong in seate) to repell fewe; referring the reuenge rather to the ende, then a pre
sent requittal. Yet oftentimes they dealt some blowes in light skirmishes, eche side hauing a strong retyring place, and rather fighting with manie alarums, to vexe the enemie, then for anie hope of great suc
cesse.

Which eueryie way was a tedious comber to the im
pacient courage of Amphialus: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diverse, both straungers, and subiects, as well of princely, as noble houses, the gallant Phalantus, who restrayned his sportfull delightes as then, to serve Bajlius, (whome he honoured for re
ceyued honours) when he had spent some time in considering the Arcadian manner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points
of government, and obedience their discipline differed from others, and had satisfied his minde in the knowledge, both for the cutting off the enemies helpers, and furnishing ones selfe, which Basilius orders could deliver vnto him, his yong spirites (wearie of wanting cause to be wearie) desired to keepe his value in knowledge, by some private acte, since the publique policie restrayned him; the rather, because his olde mistresse Artesia might see, whome he had so lightly forsooken: and therefore demanding and obteyning leave of Basilius, he caused a Herould to be furnished with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable message, and so sent him to the gate of the town to demaunde audience of Amphialius: who understanding thereof, caused him both safely, and courteously to be brought into his presence: who making lowly reverence vnto him, presented his Letters, desiring Amphialius that whatsoever they conteyned, he would consider that he was onely the bearer, but not the inditer. Amphialius with noble gentlenesse assured him both, by honourable speeches, and a demeanure which answered for him, that his revenge, whencesoever, should sort vnto it selfe a higher subject. But opening the Letters, he found them to speake in this maner.

Phalantus of Corinthe, to Amphialius of Arcadia, sendeth the greeting of a hatelesse enemie. The liking of martiall matters without anie mislike of your person, hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the minde of your besiegers: where languishing
thing in idlenesse, I desire to refresh my minde with.

Some exercice of armes, which might make knowne

the dooers, with delight of the beholders. Therefore,

if there be any Gentleman in your Towne, that
eyther for the loue of Honour, or honour of his

Loue, well armed, on horsebacke, with launce, and

sword, will winne another, or loose himselfe, to be a

prisoner at discretion of the conquerour, I will to mor-
rowe morning by Sunne rising, with a trumpet and a

Squire onely, attende him in like order furnished. The

place I thinke fittest, the Iland within the Lake, be-
cause it standes so well in the view of your Castell, as

that the Ladies may haue the pleasure of seeing the

combate: which though it be within the comman-
dement of your Castell, I desire no better securitie,
then the promise I make to my selfe of your vertue.
I attende your aunswere, and wish you such successe
as may be to your honour, rather in yeelding to that
which is iust, then in mainteyning wrong by much
violence.

A Mphialus read it with cheerfull countenance, and

thinking but a little with himselfe, called for inke

and paper, and wrote this aunswere.

A Mphialus of Artadia, to Phalantus of Corinthe, wi-

sheth all his owne wishes, sauing those which

may be hurtful to another. The matter of your letters to

fit for a worthy minde, and the maner so sutable to the

noblenesse of the matter, giue me cause to think
howe happie I might accounte myselfe, if I coulde
get such a friende, who esteeme it no small happinesse to haue mette with so noble an enemie. Your challenge shall be aunswered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your securitie for any treacherie (hauing no hostage woorthie to counteruaille you) take my woorde, which I esteeme aboue all respektes. Prepare therefore your armes to fight, but not your hart to malice; since true value needes no other whetstone, then desire of honour.

Having writte and sealed his letter, he deliuered it to the Heralde, and withall tooke a faire chaine from off his owne necke, and gaue it him. And so with safe conuoy sent him away from out his Citie: and he being gone, Amphialus shewed vnto his mother, and some other of his chiefe Counsaillours, what he had receyued, and howe he had aunswered: telling them withall, that he was determined to aunswer the challenge in his owne person. His mother with prayers authorized by motherly commandement; his olde gouernour with perawasions mingled with reprehensions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of a private fighter, then of a wife Generall)Clinias with falling downe at his feete, and beseeching him to remember, that all their liues depended vppon his safe-tie, sought all to dissuade him. But Amphialus (whose hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious resolution cutte off the tediousnesse of replyes, giuing them in charge, what they shoulde doo vpon all occasions, and particularly to deliver the Ladies, if othervise then well happened vnto him: onely desiring his
his mother, that she would bring Philoclea to a window, where she might with ease perfectly discern the combat. And so, as soone as the morning beganne to draw dewe from the fairest greenes, to wash her face withall, against the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his stable, where himselfe chose out a horse, whom (though he was neere twentie yeere olde) he preferred for a pcece of sure service, before a great number of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dapple thick with black spots; his forhead marked with a white starre, to which, in all his bodie there was no part suitable, but the left foote before, his mane and taille black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He cauſed him to be trimmed with a sumptuous saddle of tawnie, and golde enamell, enriched with pretious stones: his furniture was made into the fashio of the branches of a tree, from which the leaues were falling: and so artificiallly were the leaues made, that as the horse moued, it seemed indeed that the leaues wagged, as when the wind playes with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the straw-coloured luerie of ruine. His armour was also of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames darkened, as when they newelie breake the prison of a smoakie furnace. In his shielde he had painted the Torpedo fishe. And so appointed, he cauſed himselfe, with his trumpet and squire (whom he had taken since the death of Ifmenus) to be ferried ouer into the Iland: a place well choien for such a purpose. For, it was so plaine, as there was scarcely any bush, or hillock, either to vnleuell, or shadowe it: of length and breadth enoough, to trie the uttermost both of launce and sword and
and the one end of it facing of the castle, the other extending it selfe toward the campe, and no accessse to it, but by water: there coulde no se create trecherie be wrought, and for manifest violence, ether side might haue time enough to succour their party.

But there he found Phalantra, already waiting for him upon a horse, milke white, but that upon his shoulder and withers, he was fretted with red saines, as when a few strawberies are scattered into a dish of creme. He had caus'd his mane and taile to be died in carnation, his reines were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there, for the boffe, brought foorth a clustor of grapes, by the workeman made so liuely, that it seemed, as the horse champ'd on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to see the grapes so neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, so artificially made, as it seem'd the horse stood in the shadow of the vine, so pretily were clustors of rubie grapes dispersed among the trappers which embraced his sides. His armour was blew, like the heauen, which a Sun did with his rayes ( proportionately delivered ) guilde in most places. His shield was beautified with this device; A greyhound, which overrunning his fellow, and taking the hare, yet hurts it not whe it takes it. The word was; The glorie, not the pray.

But as soone as Amphialus landed, he sent his squire to Phalantra, to tell him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to him. Phalantra answer'd, that his answere now must be in the language of launces; & so each attended the warning of the trupets, which were to found at the appointment of foure jud. ges,
ges, who with consideration of the same, had denuded the ground. Phalantus—his horse young—and feeling the youth of his matter, stood courting; which being well governed by Phalantus, gave such a glittering grace, as when the Sunne shines upon a waiving water. Amphialus—horse stood panting upon the ground, with his further foot before, as if he would for his masters cause begin to make himselfe angry: till the trumpet sounded together. Together they set spurre to their horses, together took their launces from their thighes, conueied them vp into their restes together, together let them sinke downward; so as it was a delectable sight, in a dangerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there was so perfect agreement, in so mortall disagreement: like a musick, made of cunning discords. But their horses keeping an even line their masters had skilfully allotted vnto them passed one by another without encountering, although either might feel the angry breath of other. But the staves being come to a just descent, but even when the mark was ready to meet them, Amphialus was runne through the vamplate, and vnder the arme: so as the staffe appearing behind him, it semed to the beholders he had bene in danger. But he strake Phalantus just vpon the gorget; so as he battred the lamms therof, and made his head almost touch the back of his horse. But either side hauing staid the spur, & vfed the bit to stop their horses fury, casting away the trocheons of their staves, & drawing their swords, they attended the second summons of the death threatening trumpet, which quickly followed; and they affoone making their horses answer their haüs, with a gentle galop, set the one toward the other, til being come in the ncernes of little more
The Countesse of Pembroke

more then a staues length. Amphialus trusting more to the strength, then to the nimblenes of his horse, put him foorth with speedie violence, and making his head ioyne to the others flanke, guiding his blow with discretion, and strengthening it with the course of his horse, strake Phalantus vpon the head, in such sort, that his feeling faire did both dazell his sight, and astonish his hearing. But Phalantus (not accustomed to be vngrateful to such benefites) strake him vpon the side of his face, with such a force, that he thought his iawe had bene cut atunder: though the faithfulness of his armour, indeede garded him from further damage. And so remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till Amphialus his horse, leaning harde vpon the other, and winning ground, the other horse feeling himselfe prest, began to rife a little before, as he was woont to doo in his couruette: which advantage Amphialus taking, fet forward his own horse with the further spurre, so as Phalantus his horse came ouer with his master vnder him. Which Amphialus seeing, lighted, with intention to help Phalantus. But his horse that had faulted, rather with vntimely arte, then want of force, gatte vp from burdning his burden, so as Phalantus (in the fall hauing gotten his feete free of & the stirrop) could (though something bruised)arise; seeing Amphialus neere him, he asked him, Whether he had giue him any help in remouing his horse. Amphialus said No. Truely sayd Phalantus, I asked it, because I would not willingly haue fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (sayd Phalantus) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, because never yet did any man bring me to the like fortune.
tune. Amphialus lifting to keepe himselfe unknowne, told him he was a Gendeman, to whom Amphialus that day had giuen armour and horse to trie his valour, hauing neuer before bene in any combat worthy remembrance. Ah, (said Phalantus in a rage) And must I be the exercize of your prentif-age? & with that, choler tooke away either the brufe, or the feeling of the brufe, so as he entred a fresh into the cōbat, & boiling in his armes the disdaine of his harte, strake so thicke vpon Amphialus, as if euery blow would faine haue bene bene foremost. But Amphialus (that many like trials had taught, great spending to leave small remants ) let passe the storme with strong wardes, and nimble auoidings: till seeing his time fit, both for distaunce and nakednes, he strake him to cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a fowne.

But Amphialus, pittyng approued valoure, made precious by naturall curtesie, went to him; & taking of his head-piece to giue him aire, the young Knight (disdained to buy life with yeelding) bad him vse his fortune: for he was resolued neuer to yeeld. No more you shall (said Amphialus) if it be not to my request, that you will account your selfe to haue great interest in me. Phalantus more overcome by his kindnes, the by his fortune, de-\text{}sired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. Amphialus, then named himselfe, telling him withal, he would think his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his fried. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renowned valoure.
The Countesse of Pembroke

...valour of the other. And so promising each to other assurednes of good will, Phalantus, (of whom Amphialus would haue no other raunfome, but his word of frie-
ship) was conueyed into the campe, where he would but little remaine among the enimies of Amphialus: but went to seeke his adventures other-where.

CHAP. 12.

* Philocleas il-taking Amphialus wel-meaning. * His chal-
lenge and conquests continued for Love, & his love. * Ar-
galus sent for to this challenge. * The coningall happiness
of him and his wife. * The passions stirr'd by this message.
* Their sorrow-sounding farewell. * Argalusis defie.
* Amphialusis answer. * Argalusis furniture. * Their
combat, bloody to both, deadly to Argalus. * Parthenia
comes to the end of it, and him. * Her and his lamen-

...for Amphialus he was receaued with triumph into the castle; although one might see by his eyes (humbly lifted vp to the window where Philoclea stood) that he was rather suppliaunt, then victorious: which occasion Cecropia taking, (who as then stoode by Philoclea, and had lately lefte Pamela in another roome, whence also she might see the combate) Sweet Lady (said she) now you may see, whether you haue cause to loue my sonne, who then lies vnnder your feete, when he standes vpon the necke of his brauest enemies. Alas said Philoclea, a simple ser-


nice to me, me thinkes it is, to haue those, who come to succour me, destroied: If it be my dutie to call it loue, be it so: but the effects it brings foorth I confesse I account hatefull. Cecropia grew so angry with this vnkind answer, that she could not abstayne from telling her, that she was like them that could not sleepe, when they were softly layed. but that if her sonne would follow her counsell, he should take another course with her: and so flange away from her.

Yet (knowing the desperate melancholy of Amphius in like cases) framed to him a very thankesfull message, poudring it with some hope-givingphrases, which were of such joy to Amphious, that he (though against publike respect, & importunity of dissuaders) preently caused it to be made knowne to the campe, that whatsoever Knight would trie the like fortune as Phalantus did, he should in like sorte be answerd: so as divers of the valiantest, partly of themselves, partly at the instigation of Baslius, attempted the combat with him: and according to every ones humour, so were the causes of the challenge grouded: one laying treason to his charge, another preferring himselfe in the worthines to serue Philoclea; a third, exalting some Ladies beautie beyond ether of the sisters; a fourth, laying disgraces to Loue it selfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witt, the rebell to Reason, the betrayre of resolution, the defiler of thoughts, the underminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of vice, the flau of weaknesses, the infection of youth, the madnes of age, the curse of life, and reproch of deathe; a fifth, distayning to caufe at lesse then at all, woulde make the cause of his quarrell the causers of loue, and proclayme his blaspheemies against womankind; that namely that sex, was
The Countesse of Pembroke

was the oversight of Nature, the disgrace of reasonables, the obstinate cowards, the slave-borne tyrants, the shops of vanities, the guilded wethercocks; in whose conscience is but pecuniounes, chastitie waywardnes, & gratefulnes a miracle. But all these challenges (how well soever ended) were so well answered, that some by death taught others, though pa' learning themselves; & some by yeielding gave themselves the lie for having blasphemed; to the great griefe of Basilius, so to see his Rebell preuaile, and in his own sight to crowne himselfe with defertued honour.

3. Whereupon thirsting for revenge, & else not hoping to preuaile, the best of his campe being already ouer-throwne; he sent a messenger to Argalus, in whose approved courage and force, he had (and had cause) to haue great confidence, with a letter requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which he had hetherto spared him in respect of his late marriage. But now his honour, and (as he esteemed it) felicite standing upon it, he could no longer forbeare to challenge of him his faithfull service.

The messenger made speed, and found Argalus at a castle of his owne, sitting in a parle with the faire Parthenia, he reading in a booke the stories of Hercule, she by him, as to heare him read; but while his eyes looked on the booke, she looked on his eies, & sometimes staying him with some pretie question, not so much to be resolued of the doubte; as to give him occasion to looke vpon her. A happy couple, he ioying in her, she ioying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because she enjoyed him: both encreasing their riches by giuing to each other, each making one life double, because they made a double life; one, where desire neuer wanted satisfaction,
nor satisfaction never bred societie; he ruling, because she would obey: or rather because she would obey, she therein ruling.

But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand, & haft in his countenance, though she knew not what to feare, yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went aside, while he deliuered his letters and message,yet a far of she looked,now at the messenger,& then at her husband: the same feare, which made her loth to have cause of feare, yet making her feke cause to nourish her feare. And wel she foud there was some serious matter: for her husbands countenance figured some resolution betweene lothnesse and necessitie: and once his eie caft upon her, & finding hers upon him, he blufhed, & she blufhed, because he blufhed; and yet streight grew paler, because she knew not why he had blufhed. But when he had read, & heard, & diſpatched away the messenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rock’d on sleepe by Affection) with promise quickly to follow, he came to Parthenia, and as forie as might be for parting, and yet more forie for her forrow, he gaue her the letter to reade. She with fearful fliownes tooke it, and with fearefull quicknesse read it; and having read it, Ab my Argalus (laid she) and haue you made fuch haft to anfwere & are you fo foone resolved to leaue me? But he discoursing vnto her, how much it imparted his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare vnto her) her reafon overclouded with forow, suffer’d her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes, which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to giue order for his present departure.

By that time he was arm’d, and readie to go, she had 6 
recovered a little strength of spirite againe, & coming out, & seeing him armed, & wanting nothing for his departure but her farewell, she ran to him, took him by the arme, and kneeling downe without regard, who either heard her speach, or saw her demeanour, My Ar
galus, my Argalus (said she) doo not thus forsake me. Remember, alas, Remember that I have interest in you, which I will never yeeld shall be thus adventured. Your valour is already sufficiently knowne: sufficiently haue you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there are besides you to loose leffe worthie liues. Woe is me, what shall become of me, if you thus abandon me? Then was it time for you to follow these adventurues, when you adventured no body but your selfe, and were no bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or neuer, I claime mine owne; mine you are, & without me you can undertake no dager: & will you endanger Parthenia? Parthenia shall be in the battle of your fight: Parthenia shall smart in your paine, & your blood must be bled by Parthenia. Deare Parthenia (said he) this is the first time, that euer you refisted my will: I thanke you for it; but perseuer not in it, & let not the teares of those most beloued cies be a presage vnto me of that, which you would not should happen. I shall liue, doubt ye not: for so great a blessing, as you are, was not giuen vnto me, so soone to be depruied of it. Looke for me therefore shortly, & victorious, & prepare a joyfull welcome, and I will wish for no other triumph. She answered not, but stood as it were thunder-striken with amazement: for true Loue made obedience stande vp against all other passions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and sought to printe his hate in her sweete lippes, she fell in a rounde, so
as he was faine to leave her to her Gentlewomen: and caried away by the tyranny of Honour, though with manie a backe-cast looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe. When understanding the notable victories of Amphialus, he thought to giue him some dayes respite of reit, because he woulde not haue his victorie disgraced by the others wearesse. In which dayes, he sough by all meanes (hauing leave to parley with him) to dissuade him from his enterprise: and then imparting his mind to Basilius, because he found Amphialus was inflexible, wrote his defte vnto him in this maner.

Right famous Amphialus, if my persuasien in reason, for praiere in good wil, might preuaile with you, you shoulde by better meanes be like to obteine your desire. You shoulde make many braue enemies become your faithful seruants, & make your honor flie vp to the heaué, being caried vp by both the wings of valure & iustice; whereof now it wants the latter. But since my suite, nor counsel can get no place in you, disdaine not to receive a mortall chalenge, from a man so farre inferior vnto you in vertue, as that I do not so much mislike of the deed, as I haue the doer in admiration. Prepare therefore your self, according to the noble maner you haue vfed, and think not lightly of neuer so weake an arme, which strikes with the sword of iustice.

To this quickly he received this aanswer.

Which more famous Argalus, I, whom neuer threat-nings could make afraid, am now terrified by your noble curtesie. For wel I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, and what cause I haue to doubt such vertue bent to my ruine: but Loue, which justifieth the vnjustice you lay vnto me, dooth also animate me against
The Counteze of Pembrokes

against all dangers, since I come full of him by whom your selfe have beene (if I be not deceived) sometimes conquered. I will therefore attend your appearance in the Ile, carrying this advantage with me, that as it shall be a singular honour if I get the victorie, so there can be no dishonour in being overcome by Argalus.

The challenge thus denounced, and accepted, Argalus was armed in a white armour, which was gilded over with knots of womans hair, which came downe from the crest of his head-peece, and spread itselfe in rich quantity over all his armour: his furniture was cut out into the fashion of an Eagle, whereof the beake (made into a rich iewell) was fastened to the saddle, the tail covered the crooper of the horse, and the wings served for trappers, which falling of each side, as the horse stirred, the bird seemed to fly. His pettrell and reines, were embroidered with feathers futable unto it: upon his right arm he ware a sleeue, which his deare Parthenia had made for him, to be wore in a iustes, in the time that successe was vngratefull to their well-deserved love: It was full of bleeding hartes, though never intended to any bloodie enterprise. In this shield (as his owne device) he had two Palme trees, neere one another, with a worde signifying, In that sort flourishing. His horse was of a strie forrell, with blakke feete, and blakke list on his back, who with open nostrils breathed warre, before he could see an enemy: and now vp with one legge, and then with another, seemed to complain of Nature, that she had made him any whit earthie.

But he had scarcely viewed the grounde of the Ilande, and considered the aduauntages (if any were) thereof, before the Castel boat had delivered Amphialus, in:
in al points provided to giue a hard entertainmet. And then fending ech to other their Squires in honourable maner, to knowe whether they shoule attende any further ceremony, the trumpets sounding, the horses with smooth running, their statues with unshaked motion, obedently performed their cholericke comandements. But when they drew nere, Argalus' his horse being hot, prest in with his head; which Amphialus perceiuing, knowing if he gaue him his side, it should be to his disaduauntage, prest in also with him, so as both the horses & men met shouder to shouder, so as the horses (hurt as much with the striking, as being striken) tumbled downe to the earth, daungerously to their maister, but that they by strength nimble, and by vs skilfull, in the falling shunned the harme of the fall, and without more respite, drewe out their swordes with a gallant brauerie, eche striving to shewe himselfe the leffe en-damaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had nowe nothing else to trust to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that Amphialus was the sooner vp; but Argalus had his fworde out the sooner: and then fell they to the cruellcst combate, that any present eye had seene. Their swordes first, like Canons, battering downe the walles of their armour, making breaches almost in euerie place for troupes of wounded to enter. Among the rest, Argalus gaue a great wound to Amphialus' his disarmed face, though part of the force of it Amphialus warded vpon his shielde, and with-all (first casting his eye vp to Philocleas Window, as if he had fetched his courage thence) feyning to entend the same sort of blowes, turned his sword, and with a mightie revers, gaue a cruel wounde to the right.
right arme of Argalus, the unsaythfull armour yeelding to the swoordes strong-guided sharpenesse. But though the blood accused the hurt of Argalus, yet woulde he in no action of his confesse it: but keeping himselfe in a lower warde, floode watching with timely thrustes to repaire his losse; which quickly he did, For Amphialus (following his fawning fortune) laid on so thicke vpon Argalus, that his shield had almost fallen piece-meale to the earth, when Argalus comming in with his right foote, and something strowping to come vnder his armour, thrust him into the belly daungerously, and mortally it would haue beene, but that with the blowe before, Amphialus had ouerthrowne himselfe, so as he fell side-warde downe, and with falling fanced himselfe from ruine. The sworde by that meanes flipping aside, and not pearcing more deeply, Argalus seeing him fall, threatening with voyce and sworde, bad him yeelde. But he striving without aunsweres to rise, Argalus strake with all his might vpon his head. But his herte arme not able to maister so soude a force, let the swoordes fall so, as Amphialus, though astonisshed with the blowe, could arise: which Argalus considering, ranne in to graspe with him, and so closed together, falling so to the grounde, nowe one getting aboue, and then the other; at length, both wareie of so vnloudey embracements, with a dissenting consent gate vp, and went to their swordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where Argalus finding his foes sworde garnished in his blood, his hart raie with the same swordo to revenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his minde was euill wayted-on by his lamed force, so as he receyued
ceyued still more and more woundes, which made all his armour seeme to blusht, that it had defended his matter no better. But Amphialus perceiuing it, waying the small hatefulness of their quarrell, with the worthinesse of the Knight, desired him to take pitie of himselfe. But Argalus, the more repining, the more he founde himselfe in disaduauntage, filling his eynes with spite in stead of blood, and making courage arise agaynst saintness, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, giues then the greatest blaze) so did he vnite all his force, that casting away the little remnaunt of his shielde, and taking his swoorde in both handes, he stroke such a notable blowe, that he cleft his shielde, armoure, and armes almost to the bone.

But then Amphialus forgat all ceremonies, and with cruell blowes made more of his blood succeed the rest; til his hand being staid by his care, his care filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his sight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came running as fast as she could, and yet because she could not as fast as she would, she sent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull Parthenia, (who had that night dreamed shee sawe her husbande in such estate, as she then founde him, which made her make such haste thither) they both maruailed. But Parthenia ranne betwene them (feare of loue making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determinning so to part them, till she could get breathe to fight out her doolefull speeches: and when her breath (which running had spent, and dismayednesse made
made (lowe to returne) had by sobbes gotten into her sorrow-closed breast, for a while she coulde say nothing, but, O wretched eyes of mine, O wailfull sight, O day of darkenesse: at length turning her eyes (wherein sorrowe swamme) to Amphialus, My Lorde (faide she) it is faide you love; in the power of that loue, I beleech you to leaue of this combate, as euen your harte may finde comfort in his affection, euen for her sake, I craue it: or if you be mortally determined, be so pitifull unto me, as first to kill me, that I may not see the death of Argalus. Amphialus was aboute to haue aunswered, when Argalus vexed with his fortune, but most vexed that she should see him in that fortune, Ah Parthenia (faide he) neuer till nowe vnwelcome unto me, do you come to get my life by request? And can not Argalus liue but by request? Is it a life? With that he went aside, for feare of hurting her, and woulde haue begunne the combate afresh. But Amphialus not onely conjured by that which helde the Monarchie of his mind, but euen in his noble hart melting with compasion at so passionate a sight, desired him to withholde his handes, for that he should strike one, who sought his fauour, and woulde not make resistaunce. A notable example of the woonderfull effectes of Vertue, where the conquerour, sough for friendship of the conquered, and the conquered woulde not pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that minde to loue eche other for accepting, but not for giving mercie; and neyther affected to ouer-loue a dishonour: so that Argalus not so much striving with Amphialus (for if he had had him in the like forte,
In like sort he would haue dealt with him) as labouring against his owne power (which he chiefly despised; set himselfe forward, stretching his strength to the vittermost. But the fire of that strite, blowen with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in such aboundance, that he was driuen to reft him vpon the pommel of his sword: and then each thing beginning to turne rounde in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his sight both dazzled, and dimmed, till (thinking to fit downe) he fell in a sowne. Parthenia, and Amphialus both haftely went vnto him: Amphialus tooke of his helmet, and Parthenia laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen fleeces & partlet, to serue about his wounds: to bind which, she tooke of her hair-lace, and would haue cut of her faire haire herselfe, but that the squires and judges came in with fitter things for the purpose: while she bewayled her selffe with fo lamentable sweetnes, as was inough to haue taught sorrow to the gladdest thoughts, and haue engraued it in the mindes of hardeft mettall.

O Parthenia, no more Parthenia (said she) What art thou? what seest thou? how is thy blisse in a moment fallen? how art thou, euen-now before all Ladies the example of perfect happines, and now the gasing-stock of endles miserie? O God, what hath bene my defert to be thus punished? or if such haue bene my defert, why was I not in my selffe punished? O wandring life, to what wildernes wouldst thou lead one? But Sorow, I hope thou art sharp inough, to faue my labour from other remedies. Argalus, Argalus, I will folow thee. I will folow thee.

But with that Argalus came out of his sowne, and lifting vp his languishing eyes (which a painefull rest, and
and iron sleepe did sleeke to lock vp) seeing her, in whom (even dying) he liued, and him selfe seated in so beloued a place, it seemed a little cheerfull bloud came vp to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almost dead, if some breath a little renewe it: & forcing vp (the best he could) his feeble voice, My deare, my deare, my better halfe (said he) I finde I must now leave thee: and by that sweet hand, and faire eyes of thine I sweare, that Death brings nothing with it to grieue me; but that I must leave thee, and cannot remaine to answere part of thy infinit deferts, with being some comfort vnto thee. But since so it pleaseth him, whose wisdome and goodnesse guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day we shall blesedly meet agayne, neuer to depart: meane while liue happily, deare Parthenia; and I persuade my selfe, it will increase the blesednes of my soule, so to see thee. Loue well the remembrance of thy louing, and truely louing, Argalus: and let not (with that worde he sighed) this disgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hast an vnwoorthie husband. They could scarcely understand the last wordes: for Death began to seaze him selfe of his harte, neither coulde Parthenia make answere, so full was her breast of anguish. But while the other sought to stanch his remediles wounds, she with her kisses made him happie: for his last breath was deliuered into her mouth.

But when indeede she found his ghost was gone, then Sorrowe loft the witte of vterance, and grewe ragefull, and madde, so that she tare her beautifull face, and rent her haire, as though they could serue for nothing, since Argalus was gone; till Amphialus (so mo- ued with pittie of that fight, as that he honoured his ad-
aduersaries death with teares) caused her (with the helpe of her women that came with her) partie by force, to be conveyed into boate, with the dead body of Argalus, from which she could not depart. And being come of the other side, there she was receaued by Basilus him selfe; with all the funerall pompe of militarie discipline, trayling all their Ensignes upon the ground, making his warlike instruments sound dolefull notes, and Basilus (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) sought to perswade some eafe into Parthenius minde: but all was as eafefull to her, as the handling of sore woundes: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, she finding no comfort, but in desperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her selfe, if euer she should finde eafe thereof. And well might she heare as she past through the Campe, the great praiyes spoken of her husbande, which all were records of her losse. But the more excellent he was (being indeede accounted seconde to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of those praiyes, beare vp the winges of Amphialus-his fame: to whom yet (such was his case) that Trophe vpon Trope, still did but builde vp the monumet of his thraldome; he euer finding himselfe in such fauour of Philoctea, that she was most absent, when he was present with her; and euer forriest, when he had best sucesse: which would haue made him renounce all comfort, but that his mother, with diuersity of deuises, kept vp his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward discomfort, he was like to haue bene ouertaken with
The Countesse of Pembrokes

with a notable treason, the beginning wherof (though meerely ridiculous) had like to haue brought forth vn
to him a weeping effect.

CHAP. 13.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dametas put in harte</th>
<th>to defe Clinias</th>
<th>Clinias out of harte to see the vie.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dametas brauerie, adoubements, and impreft.</td>
<td>Clinias drawne to answer him.</td>
<td>Their passions in comming to the field.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Their actions in it, not so doubty, as their fortune doubtfull.</td>
<td>Clinias yelding to triumphant Dametas.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Mong other that attended Basliu in this expedition, Dametas was one; whether to be present with him, or absent from Mifo: once, certaine it was without any minde to make his fworde cursed by any widow. Nowe, being in the campe, while each talke seemed injurious, which did not acknowledge some dutye to the fame of Amphialus, it fell out sometymes in communication, that as the speech of heauen doth often beget the mention of hell, so the admirable prowes of Amphialus (by a contrarie) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardice of Clinias: in so much, as it grew almost to a proverbe, As very a coward, as Clinias. Describing him in such sorte, that in the end, Dametas began to thinke with himselfe, that if he made a chalenge vnto him, he would neuer answere it; and that then he should greatly encrease the fauourable conceite of Baslius. This fancie of his he vterted to a young
a young Gentleman, that waited upon Philanax, in whose friendship he had especial confidence, because he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his speeches, and not a little extolling the goodly dotes of Mofla. The young Gentleman as glad, as if he had found a Hare sitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with Philanax, and then (for feare the humour should quayle in him) wrote a challenge himselfe for Damatas, and brought it to him. But when Damatas read it, putting his head on his shoulder, and somewhat smiling, he said, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loftic stile enough: and so would needes in-dite it in this sort.

O Clinias, thou Clinias, the wickedest worme that ever went upon two legges; the very fritter of fraude, and see-thing pot of iniquitie: I Damatas, chief e governour of all the royall cattell, and also of Pamela (whom thy Maister most perniciously hath suggested out of my dominion) doo defie thee, in a mortall affray from the bodkin to the pike up-warde. Which if thou dost presume to take in hande, I will out of that superfluous bodie of thine make thy soule to be evacu-ed.

The young Gentleman seemed dumbe-striken with admiration, and presently tooke vpon him to be the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit lafted: and hauing gotten leaue of Basilus (every one helping on, to eafe his minde ouercharged with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the manner before time vfed, and in the presence of Amphialus delivered this letter to Clinias, desiring to haue an answere, which Qq might
might be fit for his reputation. Clinias opened it, and read it; and in the reading, his bloud not daring to be in so daungerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it selfe more inwardly: and his very wordes (as if they were afraid of blowes) came very slowly out of his mouth: but, as well as his painting breath would utter it, he bad him tell the lowte that sent him, that he dillained to haue any thing to doo with him. But Amphialus, perceauing the matter, tooke him aside, and very earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; Amphialus not onely desirous to bring it to passe to make some spott to Philoclea, but not being able to perswade with him, Amphialus licenced the Gentleman, telling him, by the next morning he should haue answere.

The yong Gentleman (for he had sped no better) returned to Dametas, who had fetched many a lower-breathed sigh, for fear Clinias would accept the chalège. But whē he perceiued by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no dispositiō in him to accept it; then lo, Dametas began to speake his lowd voice, to looke big, to march vp & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher then he was wont, swearing by no meane deuotions, that the wals should not keepe the coward fro him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berry: & then was hotter then ever to prouide himselfe of horse & armour, saying, he would go to the Iland brauely addoubled, & shew himselfe to his charge Pamela. To this purpose many willing hāds were about him, letting him haue reynes, pettrell, with the rest of the furniture, and very braue basēs; but all comming from divers housees, nether in coulour or fashio[n, shewing any kinred one with another, but that liked Dametas
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

The better: for that he thought would argue, that he was master of many braue furnitures. Then gave he order to a painter for his deuice; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewled from it, a sword with a great many armes and legges cut of; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Neither did he stick to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that he had lefte of the plowe, to doo such bloudy deedes with his wordes, as many inkehornes and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no worde vnto it, he said, that was indeede like the painter, that sayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and here is the Hare: & with that he laughed so perfectly, as was great conflation to the beholders. Yet rememering, that Milo would not take it well at his returne, if he forgat his dutie to her, he caufed about in a border to be written:

Milo mine own piegie, thou shalt heare news of Dametas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill fauoured impatiencie he waited, vntil the next morning, that he might make a muste of him selfe in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently wayted vpon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward, as Clinius, should set his runaway feete vpon the face of the earth?

But as he was by diuers principal yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, lifted vp on horsebacke, comes me a page of Amphialus, who with humble smiling reverence deliuered a letter vnto him from Clinius: whom Amphialus had brought to this, first with perswaotions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Dametas would neuer dare to appeare, and that then the honour (should be his) but principally threatening him, that if he refused it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by Basilus: so as the present feare (ever to a coward most terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full unwillingly, undertake the other feare, wherein he had some sheue of hope, that Dametas might hap either to be sick, or not to have the courage to performe the matter. But when Dametas heard the name of Clinias, very aptly suspecting what the matter might be, he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But Dametas his frie, first persuading him, that for certaine it was some submission, tooke upon him so much boldnesse, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this fort.

Filthy drivell, unworthy to have thy name set in any letter by a souldiers hande written: could thy wretched barte thinke it was timorousnesse, that made Clinias suspende a while his anfvere? No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Know therefore that thou shalt no sooner appeare (appeare now if thou darest) I say thou shalt no sooner appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou do not appeare) but that I will come upon thee with all my force; and cut thee in pieces (marke, what I saie) ioynte after ioynte, to the eternall terror of all presumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou dost: for I tell thee, horrible smarte, and paine shalke thy lot, if thou wilt needes be so foolish (I having given thee no such cause) as to meete with me.

These
These terrible wordes Clinias spake, hoping they would give a cooling to the heate of Dametas his courage: and so indeede they did, that he did groane to heare the thundring of those threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, Dametas tolde them, that in his opinion he thought his answer came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and disarme him selfe: especially considering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they (having him now on horsebacke) led him unto the ferrie, and so into the Iland; the clashing of his owne armour striking miserable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate vn-kindnesse in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter so contrarie to his complexion. There stayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him teaching him how to vse his sworde and launce, while he cast his eye about, to see which way he might runne away, cursing all Islands in being euill situated) when Clinias with a braue sounde of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himselfe, what he had defuered of Amphialus to drue him to those inconueniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke him selfe what was best to be done: but feare did so corrupt his witt, that whatsoever he thought was best, he still found danger therein; fearefulnessse (contrarie to all other vices) making him thinke the better of another, the worse he found him selfe; rather imagining in him selfe, what wordes he would vse (if he were overcome) to get his life of Dametas, then how to overcome, whereof he could thinke with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the

Earth
Earth pittifullly complainging, that a man of such sufficiencie (as he thought himselfe) shoulde in his best yeares be swallowed vp by so base an element. Fame he would haue prayed, but he had not harte enough to haue confidence in praiere, the glittering of the armour, and sounding of the trumpets givie such an assault to the weake-breace of his faile senses, that he grewe from the degree of feare to an amazement, not almost to know what he did; till two judges (chosen for the purpose) making the trumpets cease, and taking the oth of those champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, set them at wonted distance; one from the other.

Then the trumpets sounding, Dametas his horfe (vsed to such causes) when he thought left of the matter, started out so lustely, that Dametas was jogde back with head, and bodie, and pulling withall his bridle-hande, the horfe (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a stop, and fell to bounding, so that Dametas threw away his lance, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horfe, halfe running, halfe leaping, till he met with Clinias: who fearing he should misse his reste, had put his staffe therein before he began his careere: neither would he then haue begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that stood behinde) strake on his horfe, who running swiftly, the winde tooke such holde of his staffe, that it crost quite ouer his breaste, and in that sorte gaue a flat basonado to Dametas: who, halfe out of his fadle, went neere to his olde occupation of digging the earth, but with the creste of his helmet Clinias when he was passe him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing left Dametas were at his backe, turned
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

turned with a wide turne, & seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or neuer, to treade him vnder his horses feete; & withall (if he could) hurt him with his lance, which had not broken, the encounter was so easie. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staffe to low before the legs of the horse, & the coming vpon Dametas, who was then scrabbling vp, the horse fell ouer & ouer, and lay vpon Clinias. Which Dametas (who was gotten vp) perceiving, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kil Clinias behind. But the horse that lay vpon him, kept such a pawing with his feet, that Dametas durst not approch, but verye legsurely, so as the horse (being lusitie) got vp, and withall fell to strike, and leape, that Dametas started vp a good way, and gau Clinias time to rife, but so bruised in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his sword, entending when he came nearer, to present the pommeull of it to Dametas. But Dametas, when he sawe him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiuing of any such intent, went backe as fast as his backe and heeles woulde leade him. But as Clinias founde that, he beganne to thinke a possibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haste of a prevailing coward, laying vpon Dametas, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand: sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he woulde complaine to Basilius: but still bare the blowes vngratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tocke him, so that ot daring to go back, nor to deliberat the blows stil so lighted
lighted on him) nor to yeelde (because of the cruell threatenings of Clinias) fear being come to the extremity, fell to a madness of despair: so that (winking as hard as ever he could) he began to deal some blowes, and his arme (being vied to a fiaile in his youth) laid the on so thick, that Clinias now began with lamentable eics to see his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had lost halfe an ounce, finding in himselfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to Dametas, that he yeelde. Throw away thy sword then (said Dametas) and I will saue thee, but still laying on, as fast as he could. Clinias ftraight obeyed, and humbly craued mercie, telling him, his sфорde was gone. Then Dametas firft opened his eyes, and seeing him indeed vnweaponed, made him stonde a good way off from it; and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he could. Clinias obeyed, and Dametas (who neuer could thinke himselfe safe, till Clinias were dcaade) began to thinke with himselfe, that if he strake at him with his fворde, if he did not kill him at the first blowe, that then Clinias might happe to arisie, and revenge himselfe. Therefore he thought beft to kneele downe vpon him, and with a great whittle he had (hauing difarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had vied fo with Calues, as he had no small dexteritie in it. But while he fought for his Knife, which vnder his armour he could not well finde out, and that Clinias lay with fo fheepish a countenaunce, as if he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Judges came in, and tooke Dametas from off him, telling him he did against the lawe of Armes, hauing promised life, if he threwe away his sworde. Dametas was
was loath to consent, till they 'swear, they would not
suffer him to fight any more, when he was up: and then
more forced, then perswaded, he let him rise, crowing
over him, and warning him to take heed how he dealt
any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But
thus this combate of cowardes being finished, Dametas
was with much mirth and melodie receiued into the
campe as victorious, neuer a Page there falling to waite
upon this Triumph.

CHAP. 14.

'Clinias a fie traitour.' Artefia his malcontent accomplice.
'Zelmanes passions.' Her pratise with Artefia. 'The
complot reveale to the disliking sisters, ' benrayed by
Pamela.

VT Clinias, though he wanted
harte to prevent shame, yet he
wanted not witte to feel shame;
not so much repining at it for the
abhorring of shame, as for the dis-
commodities, that to them that
are shamed, ensue. For well he
deemed, it would be a great barre
to practize, and a pulling on of injuries, when men nee-
ded not care, how they vied him. Insomuch, that Clinias
(finding himselfe the scorneing-stoke of every compa-
nie) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof, & hate
in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but
death. Which purpose was well egged on by repre-
senting vnto himselfe, what daunger he lately was
in.
in; which still kept no lesse ougly figure in his minde, then when it was present: and quickly(euen in his disembling countenance) might be discerned a concealeed grudge. For though he forced in himselfe a more diligent officiousnesse towarde Amphialus, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one side at him, a countenance still framed to smiling before him(how little cause euer there was of smiling) and grombling behind him,at any of his commaundements, with an uncertaine manner of behauiour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet slowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well have blazed, what armes his false hart bare. But despised, because of his cowardlineffe, and not marked, because despised, he had the freer scope of practize. Which he did the more desperately enter into, because the dayly dangers Amphialus did submit himselfe into, made Clinias assuredly looke for his overthrow, and for his owne consequently, if he did not redeeme his former treason to Basilius, with a more treasonable falshood toward Amphialus.

His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all sorts of Amphialus, whom either like feare, tediousnes of the siege, or discotentment of some vnsatisfied ambitio would make apt to dig in the same mine that he did: & some alredy of welthy weary folks, & vnconest youths (who had not found such sudden successe as they had promised themselues) he had made stoupe to the lure. But of none he made so good account as of Artesia, sister to the late slain Ismenus, & the chiefe of six maides, who had trained out the Princesses to their banket of miferie: so much did the sharpnes of her wit counteraile (as he thought) any other defects of her sex: for she had un-
dertaken that dangerous practise by the persuasion of Cecropia; who assured her that the two princesses should be made away, and the Amphialus would marry her: which she was the aper to beleue, by some false persuasion her glass had giuen her of her own incoparable excellencies, 
& by the great favor she knew he bare to her brother ifmenus, which (like a self-flattering woman) she conceiued was done for her sake. But when she had atchieued her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far from their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her souereigne, & that neither her service had woon of Amphialus much more the ordinary favor, nor her ouer-large offering herself to a mind otherwise owed, had obteined a loaked-for acceptation, disdain to be disdain'd spite of a frustrate hope, & perchance vnquenched lust-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice, which was increas'd by the death of her brother, who she judg'd neither succoured against Philanax, nor reueng'd upon Philanax. But all these coles were well blowne by the company she especially kept with Zelmanc, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence vncheerfull to the mourning Philoclea, and contemned of the hie harted Pamela, she spent her time most with Zelmanc. Who though at the first hardly broking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of aduersitie, in time framed herself to yeeld her acceptable entertainement.

For Zelmanc, when she had by that unexpected mischiefe her bodie imprisoned, her valure overmaistred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her loue eclipsed; affured of euill, fearing worse, able to knowe Philoclea's misfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while before the greatnes of her hart could descend to sorrow,
The Countesse of Pembroke

forow, but rather rose boyling vp in spight and disdain; Reason hardly, making Courage beleue, that it was distrestled: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so woulde her lookes shoote out threatning vp on them. But the fetters of fcruity (growing heauier with wea- ring) made her feele her cafe, and the little prevailing of repining: and then grieue gat fteate in her formed minde, making sweeteneffe of passed comforts by due title clame teares of present discomfort: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as little as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; Solitarie Sorrow, with a continuall circle in her felfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne cares. Then was the name of PhiloIde graued in the glas windowes, and by the foolish idolatrie of affection, no fooner written, the adored; & no fooner adored, the pitied: all the wotd praiues (she was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rethorick to amplifie the injuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she woulde often make inuettiue declamations, methodized onely by raging fow.

But whē Artesia did insinuat herfelf into her acquaintance, she gau the governement of her courage to wit, & was content to familiarize herfelfe with her. So much the rather, as that she perceiued in her certaine flaws of il-cocealed discontentment. Insomuch that whē Zelmane would sweetē her mouth with the praiues of the fisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in neuer forgetting well-intended services, & invoking the iustice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrōgfully hidde, & sometime with a kind vnkindnes, charging Ar- tezia that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy perfos:

Artesia
Artesia (though falsely) would protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, never meaning other matter the recreation: & yet withall (by alleging how ungratefully she was dealt with) it was easy to be scene, it was the unrewarding, & not the evil employing her service, which grieved her. But Zelmame (vling her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her owne thoughtes) was content to lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her defect, if willingly she would deliver, whom unwillingly she had imprisoned; leaving no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter reuenge. So that Artesia, (pushed forward by Clinias, and drawne onward by Zelmame) bound her selfe to that practise; wherein Zelmame (for her part) desired no more, but to haue armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to performe any thing, how impossible souer, which longing loue can persuade, and invincible Valour dare promise.

But Clinias (whose faith could never comprehende the mysteries of Courage) persuaded Artesia, while he by corruption had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemie: that she should impoyfon Amphialus, which she might the easier do, because she her selfe had vied to make the broaths, when Amphialus (either weared or wounded) did vsue such diet. And all things alredy were ready to be put in executiō, when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sisters, not doubting of their consent in a thing so behooufuefull to thefelues: their reasons being, that the Princesse knowing their service, might be sure to preferue them from the fury of the entring soouldiers: whereof Clinias (euen so) could scarcely
The Countesse of Pembroke

scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and withall, making them priuie to their action, to binde them afterwarkes to acknowledg gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knewe them to be alone, Clinias to Philoclea, and Artesia to Pamela: and Clinias, with no fewe words, did set forth what an exploite was intended for her service. But Philoclea (in whose cleere minde treason could finde no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perswade her cousin to deliver her, and that she would never forget his service therein: but that she desired him to lay down any such way of mischife, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonment, then consent to the destroying her cousin, who (she knewe) loued her, though wronged her. This vnlooked-for answer were amazed Clinias, so that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to Philoclea, and beseech her to keep it secreete, considering that the intention was for her service: and vowing (since she misliked it) to proceed no further therein. She comforted him with promise of silence, which she perfourmed.

But that little avayled: for Artesia hauing in like fort opened this device to Pamela, she (in whole mind Vertue governed with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horribile a wickednes, and streight judging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (said she) whose vnrepenting harte can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: nowe the time is come, that thy wicked wiles haue caught thy selfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them, but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This she spake something with a louder
lowder voice then she was woont to use, so as Cecropia heard the noise, who was (sooner then Artesia imagined she would) come vp, to bring Pamela to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the Campe, as she thought, among themselves: and being a cunning fisher in troubled waters; fright found by their voices and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired Pamela to tell her. Alke of her (said Pamela) & learne to know, that who do fals-hoode to their superiours; teach fals-hoode to their inferiours. More she would not say. But Cecropia taking away the each-way guiltie Artesia, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole-practice: so as Zelmane was the more closely imprisoned, and Clinius (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for Artesia, she was but lockt vp in her chamber, Amphialus not consenting (for the loue he bare Iphmitus) that further punishment should be laide vpon her.

CHAP. 15.

'Proude Anaxius breaketh through the besiegers.' 'His welcome by Amphialus.' 'The Musicke, and loue-song made to Philoclea.' 'The fallie of Anaxius and his on the Basilians,' 'backt by Amphialus,' 'beaten backe by three unknowne Knightes.' 'The Retraite of both sides.'

But
But the noyse they hearde in the campe, was occasioned by the famous Prince Anaxius, nephewe to the Giant Euardes whom Pyrocles flew: A Prince, of body exceeding-ly strong; in armes so skilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excel him: of courage that knew not how to feare: partes worthie praife, if they had not bene guyded by pride, and followed by vniustice. For, by a strange composition of minde, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offered to himselfe, which in the farteft-fette construction, might be wreted to the name of wroge; no man, that in his own actions could worse distinguish betwene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstatne from a Thraf-eyed boasting, and yet (so vnluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would neuer boast more then he would accomplish: fally accounting an vnflexible anger, a courageous constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righter causes of admiration, then Lonne and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with Amphialius, but Mars had bene so unpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gaine aduauntage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that Anaxius found Amphialius (vniowen) in a great danger, and saved his life: whereupon (ouing his owne benefite) began to fauour him, so much the more, as, thinking so well of himselfe, he coulde not choofe but like him, whom he founde a match for himselfe: which at laft grewe to as much friendship towards him, as could by a proud harte be con-
conceived. So as in this trauaille (seeking Pyrocles to be revenged of his vnclcs death) hearing of this siege, neither taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe) taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferior to himselfe in martials matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whom he thought himselfe able to conquer the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, he himselfe upon such an unexpected suddainenesse entred in upon the backe of Basilius, that many with great unkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so murdered. There, if euer, did he make knowne the wonderfulnes of his force. But the valiant, & faithfull Philanax, with well governed speed made such head against him, as would have shewed, how soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wisdom: but that Amphialus at the same time issued out, & winning with an abondaunce of courage one of the stones, which Basilius had builded, made waie for his friend Anaxius with great losse of both sides, but especially of the Basilians; such notable monuments had those two swords especially lefte of their Maisters redoubted worthynesse.

There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour dewe to his worthinesse, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by entchaunged benettes) did Amphialus enforce himselfe (as much as in a besieged town he could) to make Anaxius know, that his succour was not so needefull, as his presence grateful full. For causing the streites and houses of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both soldieryes and
The Countesse of Pembroke

and Magistrates in their countenaunces to shewe their gladnesse of him) he led him to his mother, whom he besought to entertain him with no lesse loue and kindnesse, then as one, who once had saue her fornes life, and now came to saue both life and honour. Thus (said Anaxius, speaking alowde, looking vpon his brothers) I am onely forie there are not halfe a dozen Kinges more about you: that what Anaxius can doo, might be the better manifested. His brothers smiled, as though he had ouer-modestly spoken farre vnderneath the pitch of his power. Then was he disarmed at the earneest request of Amphialus: for Anaxius boiled with desire to issue out vppon the enemies, perpetuating himselfe, that the Sunne shoulde not be sette, before he had ouerthrown them. And hauing reposed himselfe, Amphialus asked him, whether he woulde vistite the yong Princesses. But Anaxius whispered him in the eare: In trueth (saide he) deare friende Amphialus, though I am none of those, that loue to speake of themselues, I never came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in loue with me. And I that in my hart scorne them as a peeuish paltrie sexe, not woorthic to communicate with my vertues, would not do you the wrong: since (as I heare) you doo debase your selfe so much as to affect them. The courteous Amphialus could haue beene angrie with him for those wordes; but knowing his humour, suffered him to daunce to his owne musick; and gaue himselfe to entertaine both him and his brothers, with as cheerefull a maner, as coulde issue from a minde whom melancholie loue had filled with melancholie. For to Anaxius he yeelded the direction of all. He gaue the
the watchwoorde, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to be made to Anaxius. And that night when supper was ended, wherein Amphialus woulde needes himselfe waite vpon him, he caused in Boates vpon the Lake an excellent musick to be ordered: which, though Anaxius might conceiue was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to conuey it to the eares of the beloved Philoclea.

The musick was of Cornets, whereof one answering the other, with a sweete emulation, striving for the glorie of musick, and striving vpon the smooth face of the quiet Lake, was then deliuered vp to the castell walles, which with a proude reuerberation, spreading it into the aire, it seemed before the harmonie came to the eare, that it had enriched it selfe in travaile, the nature of those places adding melodie to that melodious instrument. And when a while that instrument had made a braue proclamacion to all vnpossesed mindes of attention, an excellent comfortfreight followed of siue Violles, and as manie voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maisters passions, bestowed this song vpon her, that thought vpon another matter.

The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth:
The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
The Sea to ebbe for griefe his flowing turndeth:
The Earth with pitie dull his center turndeth.
Fame is with wonder blazed:
Time runnes away for sorrow:

Rv 2 Place
The Countesse of Pembroke

Place standeth still amazed,
To see my night of ills, which hath no morrow.

Alas all only she no pitie taketh
To know my miseries, but chaste and cruel
My fall her glory maketh;
Yet still her eyes give to my flames their fuel.

Fire, burn me quite till sense of burning leave me:
Aire, let me drawe thy breath no more in anguish:
Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereave me:
Earth, take this earth wherein my spirits languish.
Fame, say I was not borne:
Time, hast my dying hower:
Place, see my grave eptorne:
Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place show your power.

Alas from all their helpe I am exiled:
For hers am I, and Death feares her displeasure.
Fie Death thou art beguiled:
Though I be hers, she sets by me no treasure.

But Anaxius (seeming a weary before it was ended)
told Amphialus, that for his part he liked no musick, but
the neighing of horses, the sound of trumpets, and the
cries of yeelding person: and therefore desired, that
the next morning they should issue upon the same
place, where they had entred that day, not doubting
to make them quickly a weare of being the besiegers
of Anaxius. Amphialus, who had no whistles courage,
though nothing blowne vp with pride, willingly con-
descended: and so the next morning (giving false alar-
rum to the other side of the campe) Amphialus at A-

naxius earnest request, staying within the towne to see
it garded, Anaxius and his brethren, Lycurgus, and Zoilus, fell out with the best chosen men. But Basilus (having bene the last day somewhat vnprovided) now had better fortified the ouerthrowne scone, and so well had prepared every thing for defence, that it was impossible for any valour from within, to preuaile. Yet things were perfourmed by Anaxius beyonde the credite of the credulous. For thrife (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he set vp his banner upon the rampire of the enemie: though thrife againe by the multitude, and advauntage of the place, but especially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driuen downe againe. 

Numbers there were that day, whose deaths and ouerthrowes were executed by the well knowne worde of Anaxius: but the rest, by the length of time and injurie of Historians, have bene wrapped vp in darce forgetfulness: onely Tresennus is spoken of, because when all abandoned the place, hee onely made head to Anaxius; till having lost one of his legs, yet not lost the harte of fighting, Lycurgus (second brother to Anaxius) cruelly murthered him; Anaxius him selfe disdayning any further to deale with him.

But so farre had Anaxius at the thirde time prestayed, that now the Basilians began to let their courage descende to their feece, Basilus, and Philanax in vaine striving, with reverence of authoritie to bridle the flight of astonishment, and to teach Feare discretion: so that Amphialus, seeing Victorie shew such a flattering countenaunce to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the siege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the suddaine comming...
comming to the other side of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the thirde by his blacke armour, and deuice stfreight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the first day had giuen Fortune so short a stoppe with his notable deeds, and fighting hand to hand with the deemed incincible Amphialus. For the very cowardes no sooner saw him, but as borrowing some of his spirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, under the wing of their damme. For the three adventurers, not content to keepe them from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a brawe combate with the three valiant brothers. But to whether side Fortune woulde have beene partiall, could not be determined. For the Basilians, lightened with the beames of these strangers value, followed so thicke, that the Amphialians were glad with some haste to retire to the wallcs warde: though Anaxius neither reason, feare, nor example, could make him affwage the furie of his fight: vntill one of the Basilians (unwoorthie to haue his name registred, since he did it cowardly, side-warde, when he least looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe, blaspheming heauen, that all the influences thereof had power to ouerthrow him; and there death would have seazed of his proude hart, but that Amphialus tooke in hand the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers conueied away Anaxius, so requiting life for life vnto him.

3 And for the loue and example of Amphialus, the fight began to enter into a new fitte of heate: when Baslius (that thought inough to be done for that day) caused retraite
retraite to be founded; fearing least his men following over-hastily, might be the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to knowe. The Knights as soone as they heard the retraite ( though they were eagerly set, knowing that courage without discipline is nearer beastliness then manhood ) drew backe their swords, though hungrie of more blood: especially the blacke Knight, who, knowing Amphialus, could not re-fraine to tell him, that this was the second time he escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. Amphialus seeing it fit to retire also ( most of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts ) withdrew himselfe, with so well feated a resolution, that it was as farre from anger, as from dismayednesse; answereing no other to the blacke Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he should finde a good pay-master.

CHAP. 16.

The unknowne Knights will not be knowne. * The Knight of the Tombes shew, and challenge accepted by Amphialus. * Their fight, with the death of the Tombe-knight. * Who that Knight was. * The dying speeces, and the lamentable funerals.

He fight being ceased, and each side withdrawne within their strengthes, Basilius sent Philanax to entertaine the strange Knights, and to bring them vnto him, that he might acknowledge what honour was due
due to their virtue. But they excused themselves, desiring to be known first by their deeds, before their names should accuse their unworthiness: and though the other replied according as they deserved, yet (finding that unwelcome courtesy is a degree of injury) he suffered them to retire themselves to a tent of their own without the camp, where they kept themselves secret: Philanax himself being called away to another strange Knight; strange not only by the unlooked-forness of his coming, but by the strange manner of his coming.

For he had before him four damofels, and so many behind him, all upon palfreys, & all appareled in mourning weeds, each of them seruants of each side, with like livery of sorrow. Himselfe in an armour, all painted over with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulchre, the furniture of his horse was all of Cypresse branches, wherewith in old time they were wont to dress graves. His Bases (which he wore so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were imbrodered only with blacke worms, which seemed to crawle vp and downe, as readie already to devoure him. In his shield for Impresa, he had a beautifull child, but having two heads; whereof the one shewed, that it was already dead: the other alive, but in that case, necessarily looking for death. The word was, *No way to be rid from death, but by death.*

This Knight of the tombe (for so the boldious termed him) sent to Basilis, to demand leave to send in a damofel into the town, to call out Amphialus, according as before time some others had done. Which being granted (as glad any would undertake the charge, which
no bodie else in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damosell went in, and hauing with tears sobbed out a braue chalenge to Amphialus, from the Knight of the Tombe, Amphialus, honourably enterteining the gentlewoman, & desiring to know the Knights name (which the doolesfull Gentlewman would not discouer) accepted the chalenge, onely desiring the Gentlewman to say thus much to the strange Knight, from him; that if his minde were like to his title, there were more cause of affinitie, then enmitie betwene them. And therefore presently (according as he was woont) as soone as he perceyued the Knight of the Tombe, with his Damofels and Judge, was come into the Iland, he also went ouer in accustomed maner: and yet for the curtezie of his nature, desirde to speake with him.

But the Knight of the Tombe, with silence, and drawing his horse backe, shewed no will to heare, nor speake: but with Launce on thigh, made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende of the Career, whence wayting the starte of the unknoune Knight, he likewise made his spurrees claime haste of his horse. But when his staffe was in his rest, comming downe to meete with the Knight, nowe verie neere him, he perceyued the Knight had mist his rest: wherefore the curteous Amphialus woulde not let his Launce descende, but with a gallant grace, ranne ouer the heade of his there-in friended enemie: and hauing stopped his horse, and with the turning of him, blessed his sight with the Windowe where he thought Philocles might stand, he perceyued the Knight had lighted from his horse, and throwne away his staffe, angrie with his misfortune,
The Countesse of Pembroke

as having mifst his rest, and drawne his sworde to make that supply his fellowes fault. He also lighted, and drew his sworde, esteeming victorie by aduantage, rather robbed then purchased: and so the other coming eagerly toward him, he with his shield out, and sword aloft, with more brauerie then anger, drew vn-to him; and straight made their swords speake for them a pretie-while with equall fearcenes. But Amphialus (to whom the earth brought forth few matches) having both much more skill to choose the places, and more force to worke vnpon the choosen, had already made many windowes in his armoure for death to come in at; whé (the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the punishment overgoe the offence) he stept a little backe, and withal, Sir Knight (saiid he) you may easely see, that itpleaseth God to fauour my cause; employ your va-lour against them that wish you hurte: for my part, I haue not deserued hate of you. Thou lyest faile trau-tor, saiid the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But Amphialus, in whome abused kindnesse became spitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (saiid hee) onely courageous in discourtesie; thou shalt loone see whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gaue him, a great wounde vpon his necke, and closing with him overthrew him, and with the fall thrust him mor-tally into the bodie: and with that went to pull off his helmet, with intention to make him giue himselfe the lye, for haung so faide, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was no sooner off, but that there fell about the shoulders of the overcome Knight the treasure of faire golden haire, which with the face
face (soone knowne by the badge of excellencie) witnessed that it was Parthenia, the vnfortunate vertuous wife of Argalus; her beautie then euen in despight of the passid sorrow, or comming death, affuring all beholders, that it was nothing short of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, hauing with continuall weeping gotten a little rednesse about them; her roundy sweedly swelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kissed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whitenesse striuing by little and little to get upon the rosinesse of them; her necke, a necke indeed of Alablafter, displaying the wounde, which with most daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; so as here was a riuer of purest redde, there an Iland of perfecte white, each giuing lustre to the other; with the sweete countenance (God-knowes) full of an vnaffected languishing: though these thinges to a grossly conceauing sense might seeme disgraces, yet indeed were they but apparailing beautie in a new fashion, which all looked upon thorough the spectacles of pittie, did eue encrease the lynes of her naturall fairenes, so as Amphialus was astonisht with griefe, compassion, & shame, detesting his fortune, that made him vnfortunate in victory.

Therefore, putting off his headpeece & gauntlet, kneeling down vnto her, & with teares testifying his sorrow, he offered his (by himselfe accursed) hands to helpe her: protesting his life and power to be readie to doo her honour. But Parthenia (who had inward messingers of the defired deaths approch) looking vpon him, and streight turning away her feeble sight, as from a delightlesse object, drawing out her wordes, which her breath (loath to parte from so sweete a bodie) did
The Countesse of Pembroke's

did faintly deliver, Sir (faide she) I pray you (if prayers have place in enemies) to let my maides take my body vntouched by you: the only honour I now desire by your meanes, is, that I have no honour of you. Argalus made no such bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, shoulde helpe me. I haue of them (and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the service which I desired. There rest nothing now, but that I go live with him, since whose death I haue done nothing but die. Then pawling, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herselfe, O sweete life, welcome (faide she) nowe feele I the bandes vntied of the cruell death, which so long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunswere for me, that my thoughts haue not so much as in a dreame tasted any comfort; since they were depreiued of Argalus. I come, my Argalus, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies, and graunt (as I feele thou doost graunt) that in thy eternall love, we may love eche other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there Atropos cut off her sentence: for with that, casting vp both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble soule departed (one might well assure himselfe) to heauen, which left the bodie in so heauenly a demeanour.

But Amphialus (with a hart oppressed with griepe, because of her request) withdrew himselfe, but the Judges, as fullof pitie, had bene al this while disarming her, and her gentlewomen with lamentable cries, laboring to stanch the remediles wounds: & a while she was dead before they perceived it; death being able to divide the soule, but not the beauty fro that body. But whē the infallible tokens of death assured the of their losse,
of the women would have killed her selfe, but that the
squire of Amphialus perceiving it, by force held her. O-
thers that had as strong passions, though weaker refo-
lution, fell to cast dust upon their heads, to teare their
garments: all falling upon, and crying upon their sweet
mistres; as if their cries could persuade the soul to leave
the celestiall happines, to come again into the elemets
of sorrow: one time calling to remembrance her ver-
tue, chastnes, sweetnes, goodnes to them: another time
accursing themselues, that they had obeyed her, they
hauing bene deceaued by her words, who assured the,
that it was revealed vnto her, that she should have her
harts desire in the battaile against Amphialus, which
they wrongly understood. Then kisling her cold
hands and feet, wearie of the world, since she was gone, who
was their world. The very heauens semed, with a clou-
die countenance, to loure at the losse, and Fame it selfe
(though by nature glad to tell rare accidents, yet)
could not choose but deliver it in lamentable accents,
& in such fort went it quickly all over the Campe: & as
if the aire had bene infected with sorow, no hart was so
hard, but was subject to that contagion; the rarenes of
the accident, matching together (the rarely matched
togather) pittie with admiration. Basilius himselfe came
foorth, and brought foorth the faire Gynecia with him,
who was gone into the Campe vnder colour of visiting
her husband, and hearing of her daughters: but indeed
Zelmane was the Sainet, to which her pilgrimage was
entended: cursing, enuying, blessing, and in her harte
kissing the walles which imprisoned her. But both they
with Philanax, and the rest of the principall Nobilitie,
went out, to make Honour triumph over Death, con-
veying
The Countesse of Pembrokes

ing that excellent body (wherto Basilius himself would needs bend his shoulder) to a church a mile from the campe, where the valiant Argalus lay intombed, recommending to that sepulchre, the blessed relics of faithfull and vertuous Loue: giuing order for the making of marble images, to represent them, & each way enriching the tombe. Upon which, Basilius himself caused this Epitaphe to be written.
CHAP. 17.

The remorse of Amphialus for his last deed, and lasting des-

T

pitie. His reverent respect in love. His mothers ghos-
sy counsel to a rape.

Hen with eyes full of tears, and
mouthes full of her prayses, return-
ed they to the campe, with more
and more hate against Amphialus;
who (poore Gentleman) had there-
fore greater portion of woe, then
any of them. For that courteous
harte, which would have grieved but to have heard the
like aduenture, was rent with remembrring himselfe to
be the author: so that his wisdom could not so farre
temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, coun-
ted the best in the world (which with much bloud he
had once conquered of a mightie Giant) and brake it
into many pieces (which afterwards he had good
cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthie to
ferue the noble exercis[e] of chinalrie, nor any other wor-
thie to feel that sword, which had broken so excellent a
Ladie: & withall, banishing all cheerfulnes of his coun-
tenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his
bed, not so much to rest his restless minde, as to auoyd
all companye, the fight whereof was tedious vnto
him. And then melancholie (only riche in unfortu-
nate remembrances) brought before him all the mis-
happes, with which his life had wretstled: taking
this, not onely as a confirming of the former,
but a presage of following miérie; and to his harte (alredie overcome by sorowrulest) euene trifling misfortunes came, to fill vp the rolle of a grieued memorie, labouring onely his wittes to pearce farther and farther into his owne wretchednes. So all that night (in despite of darkenes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to restore to each body his colour, then with curtaines bare he himselfe from the enjoying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the case of the night: vntill his mother (who neuer knew what loue meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed side, and beginning with louing earneftnes to lay a kinde chiding vpon him, because he would suffer the weakeenes of sorrow, to conquere the strength of his vertues; he did with a broaken piece-meale speach (as if the tempest of passion vnorderly blewe out his words) remember the mishappes of his youth, the euils he had bene cause of, his rebelling with Shame, and that shame increased with shamefull accidents, the deaths of Philoxenus and Parthenia, wherein he found himselfe hated of the euer-ruling powers, but especially (and so especially, as the rest seemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall loue to Philoclea: to whom he had so governed himselfe, as one that could neither conquere, nor yeeld, being of the one side a flawe, and of the other a taylor: and with all, almost vpbrayding vnto his mother the little succeffe of her large hoping promisses, he in effect finding Philoclea nothing mollified, and now himselfe so cast downe, as he thought him vnworthy of better.

But his mother (as she had plentifull cause) making him see, that of his other griefes there was little or no fault
faulte in him selve, and therefore there ought to be little or no griefe in him; when she came to the head of the fore, indeed seeing that she could not patch vp her former promises (he taking a desperate deafness to all delaying hopes) she confess plainly, that she could preuailc nothing: but the faulte was his owne, who had marred the yong Girl by seeking to have that by prai-
er, which he should have taken by authoritie. That as it were an absurd cunning to make his ladders to go in a plaine way; so was it an vntimely and foolish flattery, there to beseech, where one might command, puffing the vp by being besought, with such a selfe-pride of superrioritie, that it was not (forsooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (said Amphialus) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors: assure your self, mother, I will sooner pull out the eies then they shall looke vpont the heauenly Philoecia, but as vp o a heauë, whence they haue their light, & to which they are subiect, if they will power down any influences of comfort, O happy I: but if by the sacrifice of a faithfull hart; they will not be called vn to me, let me languish, & wither with languishing, & griewe with withering, but never so much as repine with never so much grievuing. Mother, ô Mother, lust may well be a tyrant, but true- loue where it is indeed, it is a servant. Accursed more then I am, may I be, if euer I did approch her, but that I friezed as much in a fearefull reverence, as I burned in a vehement desire. Did euer mans eye looke thorough loue vp o the maiesty of vertue, shining through beauty, but that he became (as it wel became him) a captiue? & is it the stile of a captiue, to write, Our will and pleasure? Tush, tush sonne (said Cecropia) if you say you loue,
but withall you feare; you feare left you should offend; offend; & how know you, that you should offend; because she doth denie: denie: Now by my truth; if your fadnes would let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negatue in a womans mouth. My forne, belecue me, a woman, speaking of women: a louers modesty among vs is much more praied, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like it, that for marring of his modestie, he shall neuer proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you comand your solladier to march formost, & he for curtesie put others before him, would you praise his modesty? Love is your Generall: he bids you dare: & will Amphialus be a daftard? Let examples ferue: doo you thinke Theseus should euer have gotten Antiope with sighting, & crossing his armes: he rauifh'd her, and rauifh'd her that was an Amazon, and therefore had gotten a habite of stoutnes aboue the nature of a woman; but hauing rauifh'd her, he got a child of her. And I say no more, but that (they say) is not gotten without consent of both sides. Iole had her owne father killed by Hercules, & her selfe rauifh'd, by force rauifh'd, & yet ere long this rauifh'd, & vnfathered Lady could sportfully put on the Lions skin vpon her owne faire shoulders, & play with the clubbe with her owne delicate hands: so easily had she pardoned the rauisher, that she could not but delight in those weapos of rauifhing. But aboue all, mark Helen daughter to Jupiter, who could neuer brooke her manerly-wooing Menelans, but disdain'd his humblenes, & loathed his softnes. But so well she could like the force of enforcing Paris, that for him she could abide what might be abidden. But what? Menelans takes hart; he
he recoveres her by force; by force carries her home; by force intioies her; and she, who could never like him for serviceableness, ever after loved him for violence. For what can be more agreable, then upon force to lay the fault of desire, and in one instant to ioyne a deare delight with a just excuse; or rather the true cause is (pardon me for woman-kinde for revealing to mine owne sonne the truth of this mystery) we thinke there wants fire, where we find no sparkles at left of furie. Truly I haue knowen a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wife, most beautifull, most valiant persons; neuer wonne; because they did ouer-suspiciously felicite her: the same Ladie brought vnder by an other, inferiour to all them in all those qualities, onely because he could vse that imperious maisterfulnesse, which nature giues to men aboue women. For indeede (sonne, I confesse vnto you) in our very creation we are seruants: and who prayleth his seruants shall never be well obeyed: but as a ready horfe streight yeeldes, when he findes one that will haue him yeelde; the same fals to boundes when he feeles a fearefull horfeman. Awake thy spirits (good Amphialus) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weep, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten, she can but weep, and chide, and protest, when it is gotten. Thine, she would not striue, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my Amphialus, know thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man: and (beleeue me vpon my word) a woman is a woman.
CHAP. 18.

The forsaken Knights desir. Amphialus answere. The one, and others armour and imprese. The issue of their quarrell. Their heroical monomachy on horse, and foot. Their breathings, & reencounters. Amphialus rescued by Anaxius brethren, the Blacke Knight by the greene and white. The supply of both sides to carry away the breathles Knights. The Blackknights grievances.

Amphialus was aboute to answere her, when a Gentlema of his made him ynderstande, that there was a messengericome, who had brought a letter vnto him from out of the campe: whom he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

To thee Amphialus of Arcadia, the forsaken Knight wisthes health, and courage, that by my hand thou maist receive punishment for thy treason, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occasioned, thou haaste proudly begun, and accursedly mainteyned. I will presently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltinesse) meete thee in thy land, in such order, as beth by the former beene used: or if thou likest not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reasonable choyse in any of them; so as thou do perfore me the substaunce. Make me such answere as may show that thou haaste some taste of honour: and so I leave thee, to line till I meete thee.

Amphialus
Amphialus read it, and with a deepe sigh (according to the humour of inward affection) seemed even to condemn him selfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howsoever the dulnes of Melancholy would have languishingly yielded thereunto, his Courage (vnused to such injuries) desired helpe of Anger to make him this answer.

_Forsaken Knight, though your namelesse challenge might_ carry in it selfe excuse for a man of my birth and estate, yet herein set your harte at rest, you shall not be forsaken. I will without stay answer you in the woonted manner, and come both armed in your foolish threatnings, and yet the more fearelesse, expectinge weake blowes, where I finde so strong wordes. You shall not therefore long attende me in the Ilande, before profe teache you, that of my life you haue made your selfe too large a promise. In the meane time, Farewell.

This being written, and delivered, the messenger tolde him, that his Lord would (if he liked the same) bring two Knights with him to be his Patrons. Which Amphialus accepted, and withall shaking of (with resolution) his mothers importunate disswasions, he furnished him selfe for the fight: but not in his woonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inside outwarde) he would needes appeare all in blacke, his decking both for him selfe, and horse, being cut out into the fashion of very ragges: yet all so dainty, joyned together with pretious stones, as it was a braue raggednesse, and a riche pouertie: and so cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that

Sf3
The Countesse of Pembroke

he had giuen it a rustie shewe, and yet so, as any man might perceiue was by arte, and not negligence; carrying at one instant a disgraced handsomness, and a new oldnes. In his shield he bare for his devise, a Night, by an excellently painter, with a Sunne with a shadow, and upon the shadow with a speeche signifying, that it only was barred from injuring that, whereof it had his life: or, From whose I am banished. In his creste he caried Philocles kniues, the onely token of her forwarde fauour.

So past he ouer into the Iland, taking with him the two brothers of Anaxius, where he founde the forsaken Knight, attired in his owne liuerie, as blacke, as sorrowe it selfe could see it selfe in the blackest glasse: his ornaments of the same hew, but formed in the figure of Rauens, which seemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were snakes, which finely wrapping themselves one within the other, their heads came together to the cheeckes and booles of the bit, where they might seeme to bite at the horse, and the horse (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was engendred by the poysnous furie of the combatt. His Impresa was a Catoblepta, which so long lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath so naturall a sympathetic) wants her light. The worde signified that The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light. He had in his headpiec, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentance: Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not hauing so much as one starre to give light to their night of blackenesse: so as one would haue thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their
their birth-right in that forie inheritance.

Which alliance of passions so mowed Amphialus (al-
ready tender-minded by the afflictions of Loue) that
without staffe or sword drawne, he trotted fairely to
the forfaken Knight, willing to haue put off his combat,
to which his melancholy hart did (more then euer in
like occasion) misgibe him: and therefore saluting him,
Good Knight (said he) because we are men, and should
knowe reaon why we doe things; tell me the cause,
that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I
affirme (answered the forfaken Knight) that thou dost
most rebellious iniurie to those Ladies, to whom all
men owe service. You shall not fight with me (said
Amphialus) vpon that quarrell: for I confesse the same
too: but it proceeds from their owne beauty, to inforce
Loue to offer this force. I maintaine then (said the for-
saken Knight) that thou art not worthy so to loue.
And that confesse I too (said Amphialus) since the
world is not so richly blessed, as to bring forth any
thing worthy thereof. But no more vnworthy then any
other, since in none can be a more worthy loue. Yes,
more vnworthy then myself (said the forfaken Knight)
for though I deserre contempt, thou deserest both
contempt, and hatred.

But Amphialus by that thinking (though wrongly,
each indeede mistaking other) that he was his riuall,
forget all minde of reconciliation, and hauing all his
thoughts bold vp in choler, neuer staying either judge,
trupet, or his owne laüce, drew out his sword, & saying,
Thou lyest false villain, vnto him, his words & blowes
came so quick togethers as the one seemed a lightning of
the others thüder. But he fould no barre groud of such
seed: 
The Countesse of Pembroke

feede: for it yeelded him his owne with such encrease, that though Reaſon and Amazement go rarely togethers, yet the moſt reasonable eies that saw it, founde reaſon to be amazed at the fury of their combat. Neuer game of death better plaid; neuer fury set it self forth in greater brauerie. The curteous Vulcan, whe he wrought at his owe more curteous wyues request, Æneas an armour, made not his hammer beget a greater founde; then the swordes of those noble Knights did, they needed no fire to their forge; for they made the fire to shine at the meeting of their swordes, & armours; ech side fet-ching newe spirit from the castle window, and careful of keeping their fight, it was a matter of greater considera-
tion in their combat, then either the aduantage of Sun or winde: which Sunne and wind (if the aſtoniſhed eies of the beholders were not by the aſtonishment deceiued) did both stand still to be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their amazed eies difcrerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of wind stirred, as if either for feare it would not come among fuch blows, or with delight had his eies to bufie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight being the more cruell, since both Loue and Hatred conſpired to fharpen their hu-
mours, that hard it was to fay, whether Loue with one trumpet, or Hatred with another, gaue the lowder alar-
um to their courages. Spite, rage, disdain, shame, re-
uenge, came weighting vpon Hatred: of the other fide came with loue-longing Defire, both invincible Hope, and feareleffe Delpaire, with riuallike Jealousie, which (although brought vp within doores in the schoole of Cupid) woulde fhewe themselves no leffe forwarde, then the other dustie bande of Mars, to make themselves
themselves notable in the notableness of this combat. Of eyther side Confidence, vnaquainted with Losse, but assured trust to overcome, and good experience howe to overcome: nowe seconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horses, to winne ground of the enimie; now unlooked-for parting one from the other, to win advantage by an advantageous retourne. But force against force, skil against skil, so enterchangeably encountred, that it was not easie to determine, whether enterprising, or preventing came former: both, sometimes at one instant, doing and sufferinge wrong, and choller no lesse rising of the doing, then of the suffering. But as the fire, the more fuel is put to it, the more hungrie still it is to devour more: so the more they strake, the more unsatisfied they were with striking. Their verie armour by piecemeale fell away from them: and yet their flesh abode the wounds constantly, as though it were lesse sensible of smarte, then the senselesse armour: their blood in most places stayning the blacke, as if it would giue a more lively coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And so a long space they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune seemed partiall of either side: which so tormented the vnquiet hart of Amphialus, that he resolved to see a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding strength to his blow, he strake in such wise upon the side of the others heade, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: so as he was quite from himselfe, casting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his sword likewiise went out of his hande, but that being fast by a chaine to his arme, he could not loose. And Amphialus vfed the fa-
our of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the master) carried his master away, till he came vnto himselfe: But then who could have seene him, might well have discerned shame in his cheekes, and revenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth together with rage, he came running vpon Amphialus, reaching out his arme, which had gathered vp the sword, meaning with that blow to have cleaved Amphialus in two. But Amphialus seeing the blow coming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse aside; wherewith the forfaken Knight over-strake himself so, as almost he came downe with his owne strength. But the more hungrie he was of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdaining the resistance, both of force, and fortune, he returned vpon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence vpon Amphialus, that his horse with the force of the shocke rose vp before, almost overturned: which Amphialus perceiving, with rayne and spurre put forth his horse; and withall gave a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, vpon the shoulder of the forfaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell vpon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was vp on his feete againe, with braue gesture shewing rising of corage, in the falling of fortune.

But the curteous Amphialus excused himselfe, for having (against his will) kild his horse. Excelse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forfaken Knight) and use this poore advantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickly finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (laid Amphialus) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse.
horse, because he would not have fortune come to claim any part of the victory. Which courteous act would have mollified the noble harte of the forsaken Knight, if any other had done it, besides the tailor of his mistres: but that was a sufficient defeazance for the firmeft bonde of good nature; and therefore he was no sooner alighted, but that he ranne vnto him, re-entering into as cruel a fight, as eye did ever see, or thought could reasonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to be able to expresse it. For what they had done on horsebacke, was but as a morsell to keep their stomakes in appetite, in comparison of that, which now (being themselves) they did. Nor euer glutton by the change of daintie diet could be brought to fetch feeding (when he might haue bene satisfied before) with more earnestnes, then those (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any else would haue thought they had had their fill alredy. Amphialus being the taller man, for the most part stood with his right legge before, his shield at the vtermoست length of his arme, his sword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But whē he strake, which came so thick, as if euer blow would striue to be foremost, his arme seemed still a postillion of death. The forsaken Knight shewed with like skil, vnlike gesture, keeping himselfe in continual motion, proportioning the distance betweene the to any thing that Amphialus attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conueighed his hand; and since nature had made him something the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not striue with nature: shunning rather the warding his blowes, like a cunning mastiffe, who knowes the sharpnes of the horne, and streth of the Bull; fights low to get his proper advantage; answering
The Countesse of Pembrokes

anwering mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times implying his wonderfull force, wherein he was seconde to none. In summe, the blowes were stronge, the thrusts thicke, and the auoydings cunning. But the forsaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being con- quered to be long in conquering) strake so mightie a blow, that he made Amphialus put knee to the ground, without any humbленes. But when he felt himselfe striken downe, and saw himselfe striken downe by his riuall, then shame seemed one arme, and disdaine another; fury in his eyes, and reuenge in his hart; skil and force gave place, & they tooke the place of skil & force: with so vnweariable a manner, that the forsaken Knight was also druen to leaue the streame of cunning, and give himselfe wholly to be guided by the storme of fury: there being in both (because hate would not suffer admiration) extreame disdaine to finde themselves so matched.

What (faid Amphialus to himselfe) am I Amphialus, before whom so many monsters & Gyants haue falne dead, when I onely fought causelesse adventures: and can one Knight now withstand me in the presence of Philoclea, and fighting for Philoclea; or since I lost my liberty, haue I lost my courage: haue I gotten the hart of a slauce, as well as the fortune? If an armie were against me in the sight of Philoclea, could it reffist me? O beast, one man refisteth thee; thy riuall refisteth thee: or am I indeed Amphialus? haue not passions kild him, and wretched I (I know not how) suceeded into his place? Of the other side the forsaken Knight with no lesse spite, fell out with himselfe; Haft thou broke (faid he to himselfe) the cömademét of thy only Princesse to come now in-
her presence, & in her presence to prove thyself a coward? Doth Asia and Egypt let vp Trophes vnto thee, to be matched here by a traytor? O noble Barfanes, how shamed will thy soule be, that he that slew thee, should be resifted by this one man? O incomparable Pyrocles, more grieued wilt thou be with thy friends shame, the with thine owne imprisonment, when thou shalt know how little I have bene able to doo for the deliverie of thee, and those heauenlie Princes? Am I worthie to be friend to the most valourous Prince that euer was entituled valourous, and shewe my selfe so weake a wretch? No, shamed Musidorus, worthie for nothing, but to keepe sheepe, get thee a sheephooke again, since thou canst vse a sword no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with another, sharpen their ouer-sharpe humors, like the Lion, that beats himselfe with his owne taile, to make himselfe the more angrie. These thoughtes indeede not stayinge, but whetting their angrie swords, which now had put on the apparaile of Crueltie: they bleeding so abundantly, that euery bodie that sawe them, fainted for them, & yet they fainte not in themselves: their smart being more sensible to others eyes, then to their owne feeling: Wrath and Courage barring the common sense from bringing any message of their case to the minde: Paine, Wearines, and Weakenes, not daring to make knowne their case (though already in the limits of death) in the presence of so violent furie: which filling the veines with rage, instead of bloud, and making the minde minister spirits to the bodie, a great while held out their fight, like an arrowe shotte vpward by the force of the bowe, though by his owne
owne nature he would goe downward. The forfaken Knight had the more wounds, but Amphialus had the soarer whicb the other (watchinge time and place) had coningly geuen vnto him. Who euery saw a well-mand Galley fight with a tall ship, might make vnto himselfe some kind of comparison of the difference of these two Knights; a better couple then which, the world could not bragge of. Amphialus seemed to excell in strength, the forfaken Knight in nimblenes; and yet did the ones strength excell in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in strength: but now, strength and nimblenes were both gone, and excesse of courage only maintayned the fight. Three times had Amphialus with his mightie blowes driuen the forfaken Knight to go staggering backwarde, but euery one of those times he requited pain with smarte, and shame with repulse. And now, whether he had cause, or that ouer-much confidence (an ouer-forward scholer of vnconquered Courage) made him think he had cause, he bega to persuade himselfe he had the aдуantage of the combat, though the aдуantage he toke himselfe to haue, was onely that he should be the later to die: which hopes, Hate (as vnsecrete as Love) could not conceale, but drawing himselfe a little back fro him, brake out in these maner of words.

Ah Amphialus (said the forfaken knight) this third time thou shalt not escape me, but thy death shall satisfie thy injury, & my malice; and pay for the cruelty thou shew-did in killing the noble Argalus, & the fair Parthenia. In troth (said Amphialus) thou art the best knight that euery I fought withal, which would make me willing to grant thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy courage; that (besides other follies) layest that to my charge, which most
most against my will was committed. But whether my death be in thy power, or no, let this tel thee; And upon the worde wayted a blow, which parted his shield into two pieces; & despising the weak resistance of his already broken armor, made a great breach into his heart-side, as if he would make a passage for his love to get out at.

But paine rather seemed to increase life, then to weaken life in those champions. For, the forsaken Knight comming in with his right leg, and making it guide the force of the blow, strake Amphialus upon the bellie, so horrible a wound, that his guts came out withall. Which Amphialus perceiving (fearing death, onely because it should come with overthrow) he seemed to conjure all his strength for one moments service; and so, lifting vp his sword with both hands, hit the forsaken knight vpon the head, a blow, wherewith his sword brake. But (as if it would do a notable service before it died) it preyayled so, even in the instant of breaking, that the forsaken Knight fell to the ground, quite for that instant forgetting both love and hatred: and Amphialus (finding himself also in such weakness, as he looked for speedy death) glad of the victorie, though little hoping to enjoy it, pul’d vp his visor, meaning with his dagger to giue him death; but in stead of death, he gave him life: for, the aire so renewed his spirits, that comming to himself, and seeing his present danger, with a life conquering death, he tooke Amphialus by the thigh, & together rose himselfe, and overturned him. But Amphialus scrambled vp againe, both now so weake indeede, as their motions rather seemed the afterdrops to a storme, then any matter of great furie.

But Amphialus might repent himselfe of his wilfull breaking
The Countesse of Pembrokes

breaking his good sword: for, the forlaken Knight (having with the extremitie of iustly-conceived hate, and the vnpitifullnes of his owne neere-threatening death, blotted out all complements of courtesie) let flye at him, so cruely, that though the blowes were weake, yet weaknes vpon a weakened subject, proved such streth, that Amphialus having attempted in vaine, once or twice to close with him, receaving wound vpō wound, sent his whole burden to strike the earth with falling, since he could strike his foe no better in standing: gaining no other tokens of himself, then as of a man eu'n ready to take his oath to be Deathes true servuant.

Which when the hardie brothers of Anaxius perceaued, not recking law of armes, nor use of chiualrie, they flew in to defende their friend, or reuenge their losse of him. But they were forthwith encountered with the two brayne companions of the forlaken Knight; whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it seemed a pleasan garden, wherein grewe orange trees, which with their golden fruiteS, cunningly beaten in, & embroidered, greatly enriched the eye-pleasing colour of greene. In his shield was a sheep, feeding in a pleasan field, with this word, Without feare, or enuie. And therefore was called the Knight of the sheepe.

The other Knight was all in milke white, his attiring els, all cutte in starres, which made of cloath of siluer, and siluer spangles, each way seemed to cast many aspects. His devise was the very Pole it selfe, about which many starres stirring, but the place it selfe lefte voide. The word was, The best place yet reserved. But these foure Knights, inheriting the hate of their friends, began a fierce combat: the forlaken Knight himselfe not able
able to helpe his side, but was driuen to fit him downe, with the extreame faintnesse of his more & more fainting body. But those valiant couples seeking honour by dishonouring, and to build safety upon ruine, gave new appetites, to the almost glutted eies of the beholders: and now bloud began to put sweat from the full possession of their outsidese, no aduantage being yet to be feene; onely the Knight of the sheepe seeming most deliver, and affefting most all that viewed him, when a company of souldiers sent by Cecropia, came out in boates to the Ilande: and all came running to the destruction of the three Knights, whereof the one was ytterly vnable to defend himselfe.

But then did the other two Knights shewe their wonderfull courage, and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and bothe bestriding the blacke forsaken Knight (who had fainted so long til he had loft the feeling of faintnesse) they helde playe against the rest, though the two brothers vnknightly helped them; till Philanax (who watchfully attended such traiterous practises) sent likewise ouer, both by boate and swimming, so choife a number as did put most of the other to the sworde. Onely the two Brothers, with some of the brauest of them, carrying away the body of Amphialus, which they would rather haue died, then haue left behind them.

So was the forsaken Knight (layed vpon clokes) carried home to the campes. But his two friends knowing his earnest desire not to be knowne, couering him from any bodies eyes, conueyed him to their owne tente: Basilius himselfe conquering his earnest desire to see him, with feare to displease him, who had fought
so notably in his quarrell. But Fame set the honour
upon his backe, which he would not suffer to shine in
his face: no mans mouth being barrein of prayles to
the noble Knight, that had bettered the most esteem
ed Knight in the world: every bodie praying for his
life, and thinking that therein they prayed for them-
seues. But he himselfe, when by the diligent care of
friends, and well applied cunning of surgeons, he came
to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and
body, then fell he to a freshe warre with his owne
thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, lay-
ing cowardise to him selfe, whose the impudentest
backbiter would not so haue wroged. For his courage
(ved to vse victory as an inheritaunce) could brooke
no resitance at any time: but now that he had promi-
sed him selfe not onely the conquest of him, but the
scaling of the walles, and delivery of Pamela, though
he had done beyond all others expectation, yet so short
was he of his owne; that he hated to looke vpon the
Sonne, that had seene him do so weakely: and so much
abhorred all visitation or honour, whereof he thought
him selfe vnworthy; that he besought his two noble
friends to carry him away to a castle not far of, where
he might cure his wounds, and never be knowne till
he made successfull excuse this (as he thought) want in
him. They louingly obeyed him, leaving Basilius and
all the campe very forrie for the parting of these three
vnknowne Knights, in whose prowesse they had repo-
sed greatest trust of victory.
CHAP. 19.

The state of the league, and beleaguered. The agonies of Amphialus. The wit-craft of Cecropia, to threaten Basilius with the three Ladies death. Kalanders compassion. Philanax his counter-counsell. The breaking up the siege.

Vt they being gone, Basilius and Philanax gave good order to the strengthening of the siege, fortifying themselves, so as they feared no more any such suddaine onset, as that of Anaxius. And they within (by reason of Anaxius hurt, but especially of Amphialus-his) gave themselves only to diligent watch & ward, making no sallies out, but committing the principall trust to Zoilus and Lycurgus. For Anaxius was yet forced to keepe his chamber. And as for Amphialus, his body had such wounds, and gave such wounds to his mind, as easily it could not be determined, whether death or he made the greater haft one to the other: for when the diligent care of cunning surgeons, had brought life to the possession of his owne right, Sorrowe and Shame (like two corrupted seruants) came waiting of it, perswading nothing but the giving ouer of it selve to destruction. They laide before his eyes his present case, painting every piece of it in moste ougly colours: they shewed him his loue wrapped in despaire, his fame blotted by overthrow; so that if before he languished, because he could not obtaine his
desiring, he now lamented because he durst not desire the obtaining. Recreant Amphialus, (would he say to him selfe) how darest thou intitle thy selfe the louer of Philoclea, that haft neither shewed thy selfe a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law can quite, nor grace haue pite of? Alas life, what little pleasure thou doost me, to giue me nothing but sense of reproach, and exercise of ruine? I would sweete Philoclea, I had died, before thy eies had seene my weaknes: & then perchaunce with some figh thou wouldest haue confessed, thou hadst lost a worthy seruaunt. But now, caitife that I am, what euery I haue done, serues but to builde vp my rivals glory. To these speeches he would couple such gestures of vexation, & would fortifie the gestures with such effects of furie, as sometimes offering to teare vp his wouds, sometimes to refuse the sustenance of meat, & counsell of phisitons, that his perplexed mother was druen to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corsey to her selfe, & annoiance to him: till in the end he was contented to promise her, he would attempt no violence vpon himself, vpon condition he might be troubled by no body, but onely his Phisitons: his melancholy detesting all company, so as not the very surgeons nor seruants durst speak vnto him in doing him service: only he had praied his mother, as she tendered his life, she would procure him grace, and that without that, she would never come at him more.

His mother, who had confined all her loue only vnto him, set onely such about him, as were absolutely at her commandement, whom she forbad to let him know any thing that passed in the castle, till his wounds were cur-
red, but as she from time to time should instruct them: she (for her selfe) being resolved, now she had the government of all things in her owne hands, to satisifie her sonnes love, by their yealding, or satisifie her owne revenge in their punishment. Yet first, because he should be the freer from outward force, she sent a messenger to the camp, to denounce unto Basilius, that if he did not presently raise his siege, she would cause the heads of the three Ladies, prisoners, to be cut of before his eyes. And to make him the more feare a present performance, she caused his two daughters & Zelmane to be led unto the walls, where she had made a scaffold, easie to be seen by Basilius: and there caused the to be kept, as ready for the slaughter, till answer came from Basilius. A sight full of pittie it was, to see those three (all excelling in all those excellencies, wherewith Nature can beautifie any body. Pamela giuing sweetnes to majesty, Philoclea enriching noblenes with humblenes, Zelmane setting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus subiectet to the basest injury of vnjust Fortune. One might see in Pamela a willingnesse to die, rather then to haue life at others discretion, though sometimes a princely dislaigne would sparkle out of her Princely cies, that it should be in others power to force her to die. In Philoclea a pretie feare came vp, to endamaske her rosie checkes: but it was such a feare, as rather seemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other dismaiednes: or if she were dismaied, it was more for Zelmane, then for her selfe; or if more for her selfe, it was because Zelmane should loose her. As for Zelmane, as she went with her hands bound (for they durst not aduenture on her wellknowne valour, especially among people
people which perchance might be moved by such a spectacle to some revolte) she was the true image of overmaistr'd courage, & of spite, that sees no remedie. For her breast swelled withal, the blood burst out at her nose, and she looked paler then accustomed, with her eyes cast on the ground, with such a grace, as if she were fallen out with the heavens, for suffering such an injury. The lookers on were so moved withal, as they misliked what themselves did, and yet still did what themselves misliked. For some, glad to rid themselves of the dangerous annoyance of this siege, some willing to shorten the way to Amphialus—his succession (whereon they were dependents) some, & the greatest some, doing because others did, and suffering because none durst begin to hinder, did in this sort set their hands to this (in their own conscience) wicked enterprize.

But whè this message was brought to Basilis, & that this pittifull preparation was a sufficient letter of credit for him to beleue it, he called vnto him his chief coucelors: among which, those he chiefly trusted were Philanax and Kalander (lately come to the campe at Basilis commandement, & in him selfe wery of his solitary life, wanting his sons presence, & never hauing heard him his beloued guestes since they parted from him). Now in this doubt what he should do, he willed Kalander to give him his advice: who spake much to this purpose. You commaund me Sir (said he) to speake, rather because you will kepe your wonted graue, & noble manner, to do nothing of importace without coucell, then that in this cause (which indeed hath but one way) your mind needs to haue any counsell: so as my speeche shall rather be to confirme what you haue already determined, the to-
argue against any possibility of other determination. For what sophistical scholler can finde any question in this, whether you will have your incomparable daughters live, or dye: whether since you be here to cause their deliverance, you will make your being here the cause of their destruction? for nothing can be more un-sensible, then to thinke what one doth, & to forget the end why it is done. Do threfore as I am sure you meane to doo, remoue the siege, and after seeke by practise, or other gentle meanes, to recover that which by force you cannot: & therof is indeed (whē it please you) more cou-
self to be take. Once, in extremities the winning of time is the purchase of life, & worse by no meanes then their deaths cā befall vnto you. A man might use more words, if it were to any purpose to guild gold, or that I had any cause to doubt of your mind: But you are wise, & are a father. He said no more, for he durft not attempt to per-
wade the marryng of his daughter to Amphibias, but left that to bring in at another consallation. But Basilius made signe to Philanax, who standing a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at last thus deliuered his opiniō.

If ever I could wish my faith vntried, & my counsell vntrusted, it should be at this time, whē in truth I must confess I would be content to purchase silence with discred.

it. But since you command, I obey: only let me say thus much, that I obey not to these excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whō I giue cou
self. Therefore as to a Prince I say, that the graue and (I well know) true-minded counsell of my Lord Kalander had come in good time whē you first tooke armes, before all your subiects gate notice of your intention, before so much blood was spēt, & before they were driue to seek this shift for their last remedy. But if now, this force you away
away, why did you take arms? Since you might be sure when ever they were in extremity they would have recourse to this threatening: and for a wise man to take in hand that which his enimie may with a word overthrow, hath in my conceit great incongruity, & as great not to forethink what his enimie in reason will do. But they threaten they will kill your daughters. What if they promised you if you removed your siege, they would honorably send home your daughters? would you be angred by their promises: truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatenings. For yet of the two, promise binds faith more then threatening. But indecde a Prince of judgment ought not to consider what his enimies promise, or threaten, but what the promisers and threatners in reason will do: & the nearest conjecture thenceunto, is what is best for their own behoofe to do. They threaten if you remove not, they will kill your daughters, and if you do remove, what surety have you, but that they will kill the, since if the purpose be to cut off all impediments of Amphialus his ambition, the same cause will continue when you are away; & so much the more encouraged, as the reuenging power is absent, & they have the more opportunity to draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their security onely, the same cause will bring forth the same effect: & for their security they will prefer the. But it may be said, no man knows what desperate folkes will do: it is true, and as true that no reason nor policie can prevent what desperate folks will do: & therefore they are among those dangers, which wildome is not to recke. Only let it suffice to take away their despaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is past; so as the Ladies may be freely delivered.

And
And let them that are your subjects, trust you that are their Prince: do not you subject your self to trust them, who are so untrust as to be manifest traitors. For if they finde you so base-minded, as by their threatning to remove your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you vnto, still by the same threatning? since then if Loue stir them, Loue will keep them from murthering what they loue; and if Ambition prouoke them, ambitious they will be, when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, & bridels the other. For as for their shewes and words they are but to feare babes, not worthy once to moue a worthy mans conceit, which must still consider what in respect they are like to do. Their despaire I grant you shall do wel to prevent, which as it is the last of all resolutions, so no man falls into, while so good a way as you may offer, is open vnto the. In su, you are a Prince, & a father of people, who ought with the eye of wisedome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart of justice to set downe all private conceits, in comparison of what for the publike is profitable.

He would have proceeded on, when Cynecia came running in amazed for her daughter Pamela, but mad for Zelmane, & falling at Basilius feet, besought him to make no delay: using such gestures of compassio instead of stopped words, that Basilius, otherwise enough tender minded, easily granted to raise the siege, which he saw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more carefull for Zelmane, by whose besieged person, the poore old man was streightly besieged: so asto rid him of the famine of his minde, he went in spee speed away, discharging his soldiers: only leaving the authority, as before, in Philanax his
The Countesse of Pembroke

his hands, he himselfe went with Gynecia to a strong Castle of his, where he took counsell how first to deliver Zelmune, whom he called the poore stranger, as though onely Law of hospitalitie moved him; and for that purpose sent divers messengers to traffick with Cecropia.

CHAP. 20.

he sweete resistence of the true sisters' to the sour Assaultes of their false Aunt. The whipping of Philoclea and Pamela. 'The patience of both' and passions for their lovers.

Cecropia by this meanes rid of the present dangerous of the siege (deferring Zoilus and Lycurgus to take the care, till their brother recovered of reuictuallings, and furnishing the Citie, both with men and what else was wanted, against any new occasion should urge them, she herselfe disdaining to harken to Basilius, without he would grant his daughter in mariage to her son, which by no means he would be brought vnto) bent all the sharpenesse of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable graunt to her sonne, whereupon she well found no lesse then his life depended. Therefore for a while she attempted all meanes of eloquent praying and flattering persuasion, mingling sometimes gifts, sometimes threatnings, as she had cause to hope, that either open force, or vntermining, would best winne the castle of their Resolution. And euer as much as she did to Philoclea, so much did she to Pamela, though in manner sometimes differing.
ring, as she found fit to leuell at the ones noble height, and the others sweet lowliness. For though she knew her sonnes harte had wholly given it selfe to Philoclea, yet seeing the equall gifts in Pamela, she hoped, a faire grant would recover the sorrow of a faire refusal: cruelly enteding the present impoysoning the one, as soone as the others affection were purchas'd.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. Pamelaes determination was built upo a Rock, that no shot of hers could reach vnto it: and Philoclea (though humbly seated) was so inuironed with sweete riuers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battred, nor undermined: her witty persuasions had wise answers; her eloquence recompenced with sweetnes; her threatenings repelled with disdaine in the one, & patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as Cecropia in nature violent, cruel, because ambitious, hateful, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now spitefull because she could not prevaile with girls, as she counted them; lastly, drawn on by her loue to her son, & held vp by a tyrannical authority, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked disposition, & doubling and redoubling her threatenings, fel to confirm some of her threaten'd effects: first withdrawing al confort, both of seruants, & service from the. But that those excellët Ladies had bene vld vp, euë at home, & the foud in them how much good he hardnes of educati5 doth to the resitance of misery. Then dishonorably vling them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the consideration of a prison had disgraced al ornament, so now the same consideratiõ made
made the attendal diseasfulnes. Then ful, as she found
those not preuail, would she go forward with giuing
them terrors, sometymes with noies of horror, somet-
tymes with fuddaine frightings in the night, when the
solitary darkenesse thereof might easer attonish the
disarmed senses. But to all Vertue, and Loue resifted,
strengthened one by the other, when each found it selfe
ouer-vehemently assaulted. Cecropia still sweetning her
fierceneses with faire promises, if they would promise
faire, that feeling enuill, and seing a way far better, their
minds might the sooner be mollisied. But they that
could not tate her behauiour, when it was pleasing,
indeed could worse now, when they had lost al taste by
her injuries.

She resouling all extremities, rather then faile of co-
quest, pursued on her rugged way: letting no day
passe, without new and new perplexing the poore La-
dies minds, and troubling their bodies: and still swel-
ling, the more she was stopped, and growing hot with
her owne doings, at length, abhominable rage carried
her to absolute tyrannies, so that taking with her certaine
olde women (of wicked dispositions, and apt for en-
uiie-fake to be cruel to youth and beautie) with a coun-
tenance impoysoned with malice, flew to the sweet Phi-
toclae, as if so many Kites should come about a white
Doue, & matching violent gestures with mischicuous
threatnings, she hauing a rod in her hand (like a fury that
should carry wood to the burning of Dianas temple)
set to scourge that most beautifull body: Loue in vaine
holding the shield of Beautie against her blind cruelty.
The Son drew clouds vp to hide his face from so pitifull
a sight & the very stone walls did yeeld drops of sweate
for
for agonie of such a mischiefe: each seneleffe thing had sense of pittie: only they that had sense, were seneles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenes more, then by the oppression of that day: and weeping Cupid told his weeping mother, that he was sorie he was not deaf, as well as blind, that he might neuer know so lamentable a worke. Philoclea, with tearefull eyes, and sobbing breaste (as soon as her wearines rather then compassion, gauue her repitse) kneele to Cecropia, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, besought her, since she hated her (for what cause she tooke God to witnesse she knew not) that she would at once take away her life, and not please her self with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (said she) the common courfe of liuanitie cannot moue you, nor the hauing me in your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere alliance, nor remembrance (how miserable so ever now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the loue (you haue often tolde me) your sonne beares me, so much procure, that for his sake, one death may be thought inough for me; I haue not liued so many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither haue my faults, I hope, bene so many, but that one death may satisfie them. It is no great suite to an enemie, when but death is desir'd. I craue but that, and as for the graunting your request, know for certaine you lose your labours, being every day further-of-minded from becoming his wife, who vseth me like a slaue. But that in stead of getting grace romued againe Cecropia, fury: so that (excellent creature) she was newly again tormented by those hellich monsters: Cecropia, viting no other words, but that
The Countesse of Pembroke

she was a proud and vngratefull wench: and that she would teach her to know her owne good, since of her selfe she would not conceaue it.

So with silence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, hammered vpon by an ilfavoured Smith) she abode their pittiles dealing with her: till, rather reffering her for more, then meaning to end, they left her to an uncomfortable leysure, to consider with her selfe her fortune; both helplesse her selfe, being a prisoner, and hopeles, since Zelmane was a prisoner: who therein onely was short of the bottome of miserie, that she knew not how vnworthilie her Angell, by these deuils was abused: but wanted(God wot) no stings of grieue, when those words did but strike vpon her hart, that Philoclea was a captaine, and she not able to succour her. For well she knew the confidence Philoclea had in her, and well she knew, Philoclea had cause to haue confidence: and all troden vnder foot by the wheele of senselesse Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious power in the soule, as it can deliuer knowledge to another, without bodilie organs; so vehement were the workings of their spirites, as one mette with other, though themselfes perceaued it not, but only though it to be the doubling of their owne louiing fancies. And that was the onely worldly thing, whereon Philoclea rested her minde, that she knew she should die beloued of Zelmane, and shoulde die, rather then be faile to Zelmane. And lo this most daintie Nimphe, easing the paine of her minde with thinking of anotheres paine; and almost forgetting the paine of her bodie,through the paine of her minde, she wafted, even longinge for the conclusion of her tedious tra-
gedie.

But for a while she was vnuiifited, Cecropia employing her time in vfling the like crueltie vpon Pamela, her harte growing not onely to desire the fruite of punishing them, but even to delight in the punishing them. But if euer the beames of perfection shined through the clowdes of afflication, if euer Vertue tooke a bodie to shewe his (els vnconceauable) beautie, it was in Pamela. For when Reason taught her there was no resistance, (for to iuft resistance first her harte was enclined) then with so heavenly a quietnes, and so gracefull a calmenes, did she suffer the divers kindes of torments they vfed to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it seemed, that she rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when Cecropia ended, and asked whether her harte woulde ycelde: she a little smiled, but such a smiling as shewed no loue, and yet could not but be louelie. And then, Bealtly woman (faide she) followe on, doo what thou wilt, and canft vpon me: for I know thy power is not vnlimited. Thou maift well wracke this fillie bodie, but me thou canft neuer ouerthrowe. For my part, I will not doo thee the pleasure to desire death of thee: but assure thy self, both my life and death, shall triumph with honour, laying shame vpon thy detesta-ble tyranny.

And fo; in effect, conquering their doing with her suffering, while Cecropia tried as many forts of paines, as might rather vexe them, then spoyle them (for that she would not do while she were in any hope to winne either of them for her sone,) Pamela remained almost as much content with triall in her selfe, what vertue could
The Countesse of Pembroke's

could doo, as grieued with the miserie wherein she found her selfe plunged: only sometimes her thoughts softned in her, when with open wings they flew to Mufidor. For then she would thinke with her selfe, how grievously Mufidor would take this her miserie; and she, that wept not for her selfe, wept yet Mufidor-his teares, which he would weep for her. For gentle Loue did easlier yeeld to lamentation, then the constancy of vertue would els admitte. Then would she remember the case wherein she had left her poore shepheard, and she that wished death for her selfe, feared death for him; and she that condemned in her selfe the feeblenes of sorrow, yet thought it great reason to be sorry for his sorrow: & she that long had prayed for the vertuous ioyning themselves together, now thinking to die herself, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be seperated. Liue long my Mufidor (would she say) and let my name liue in thy mouth; in thy harte my memorie. Liue long, that thou mayft loue long the chaft loue of thy dead Pamela. Then would she wish to her selfe, that no other woman might euere possesse his harte: and yet scarcely the wish was made a wish, when her selfe would finde fault with it, as being too vniiust, that so excellent a man should be banished from the comfort of life. Then would she fortifie her resoluti- on, with bethinking the worste, taking the counsell of vertue, and comfort of loue.

CHAP. 21.

' Cecropias indurate tyrannies. ' Her devise with the death of one to threaten another. ' Philoclea threatened, persi- steth. ' The execution done in sight of Philoclea & Zel- mane. ' Philoclea sorrow for her sister.
O these diamonds of the world, whom Nature had made to be preciously set in the eyes of her creatures, to be the chiefe workes of her workmanship, the chiefe ornaments of the worlde, and Princesses of felicitie, by rebellious injury were brought to the uttermost distres that an enemies hart could wish, or a womans spire inuent: Cecropia dayly in one or other sorte punishing the, still with her euill torments giving them feare of worse, making the feare it selfe the forrest torment of all, that in the end wearie of their bodies they should be content to bestow them at her appointmet. But as in labour, the more one doth exercise it, the more by the doing one is enabled to doo, strength growing vpó the worke, so as what at first would have seemed impossible, after growes easie: so these Princesses second to none, and far from any second, only to be matched by theselues, with the vse of suffering their minds gat the habit of suffring so, as all feares & terrors were to them but summons to a battaile, whereof they knew before had they would be victorius, & which in the suffering was painfull, being suffered, was a trophè to it self: whereby Cecropia found her self still farder of: for where at first she might perchance have persuaded them to haue visited her sonne, and haue giuen him some comforte in his sicknesse, drawing neere to the cosines of Deaths kingdome, now they protested, that they would never otherwise speake to him, then as to the enemy, of most vnust cruelty towards them, that any time or place could ever make them know.

Vu

This
This made the poison swell in her cankred breast, perceiving that (as in water) the more she grasped the lefse she held: but yet now having run so long the way of rigour, it was too late in reason, and too contrary to her passion, to return to a course of meekenesse. And therefore (taking counsel of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in wickednesse as that she had not onely lost all feeling of conscience, but had gotten a very glory in eeuill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a waman's harte, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger, making their teder harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, & owly eied in the night of wickednes interpret of it) & that therefore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no question would doe most with them) they had bene so often threatened, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to esteeme threatening wordes to be but words. Therefore the last, but best way now was, that the one seeing the others death, should perceiue, there was no dallying meant: and then there was no doubt, that a woman's soule would do much, rather then leue so beautifull a body.

This being concluded, Cecropis went to Philoclea, and tolde her, that now she was to come to the last parte of the play: for her part, though she found her hard harted obstinacie such, that neither the sweetnesse of louing meanes, nor the force of harde meanes could preuaile with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree of extremity, she had sought to win her sister; in hope, that
that her sonne might be with time satisfied with the loue of so faire a Lady: but finding her also rather more then lesse wilful, she was now minded that one of their deaths should serue for an example to the other, that despising worthy folks was more hurtfull to the despi-
ser, then the despised: that yet because her sonne especi-
ally affected her, & that in her owne selhe she was more
incliable to pittie her, the she had deserued, she would
begin with her sister, who that afternoone should haue
her head cut of before her face, if in the mean time one
of them, did not pull out their il-wrought stiches of vn-
kindnes, she bad her looke for no other, nor longer time
the she told her. There was no assault giue to the sweet
Philoceas mind, that entered so far, as this: for where to
all paines and dangers of her selle, foresight with (his
Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready defence, now
with the loue she bare her sister, she was driuen to a
stay, before she determined: but long she staied not,
before this reason did shine vnto her, that since in her
selle she preferred death-before such a base servitude,
loue did teach her to with the same to her sister. There-
fore crossing her armes, & looking sideward vpon the
groud, Do what you wil(said she) with vs: for my part,
heauen shall melt before I be remoued. But if you will
follow my counsell, for your owne sake (for as for prai-
ers for my sake I haue felt how little they preuaile) let
my death first serue for example to win her, who per-
chaunce is not so resolued against Amphialus, and so
shall you not onely justly punish me (who indeede
do hate both you and your sonne) but, if that may
mooue you, you shal doo more vertuously in pre-
seruing one most worthy of life, and killing an other
The Countesse of Pembroke's

most desirous of death: lastly in winning her, in stead of a p euchish unhappie creature, that I am, you shall bless your sonne with the most excellent woman in all prai se-worthy thinges, that the worlde holdeth. But Cecropia, (who had already set downe to her selfe what she would do) with bitter both termes, & countenance, told her, that she should not neede to woo death ouer-egerly: for if her sister going before her did not teach her witt, herselle should quickly follow. For since they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her sonnes quiet, but to know, that they were past getting. And so since no intreating, nor threatning might preuayle, she bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which she should see within fewe houres in the hall of that castell.

A place indeed ouersit for so vnfit a matter: for being so stately made that the bottome of it being eu en with the grounde, the rooffe reached as hie as any part of the castell, at either ende it had conuenient lodg eings. In the one end was (one storie from the ground) Philoclea abode, in the other of eu en height, Pamela, and Zelmanes in a chamber aboue her: but all so vaulted of strong, and thickly built stone, as one could no way heare the other: each of these chambers had a little wind owe to looke into the hall, but because the sitters should not haue so much comforte, as to looke out to one another, there was (of the outsides) curtaynes drawne, which they could not reach with their hands, so barring the reach of their sight. But when the houre came that the Tragedie should beginne, the curtaynes were withdrawn from before the windowes of Zelmane, and of Philoclea: a sufficient challenge to call their eyes
eyes to defende themselves in such an encounter. And by and by came in at one ende of the hall, with about a dozen armed souldiers a Ladie; led by a couple, with her handes bounde before her: from above her eyes to her lippes muffled with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the shoulders all bare: and so was led on to a scaffold raised a good deale from the floore, and all couered with crimsin velvet. But neither Zelma[n], nor Philoclea needed to be tolde, who she was: for the apparel she ware made them too well assured, that it was the admirable Pamela. Whereunto the rare whitenesse of her naked necke gau sufficient testimonie to their astonnished senses. But the fayre Ladie being come to the scaffold, and then made to kneele downe, and so lette by her vnkinde supporters, as it seemed that she was about to speake somewhat (whereunto Philoclea, poore foule, earnestly listen'd, according to her speach eu'n minded to frame her minde, her harte neuer till then almost wauering to saue her sisters life) before the vnfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes, the executioner cutt of the ones speech, and the others attention, with making his sworde doo his cruell office vpon that beautifuLL necke. Yet the pittileffe sworde had such pittie of so pretious an obiect, that at first it did but hitte flat long. But little auail'd that, since the Ladie falling downe astonnished withall, the cruell villayne forced the sworde with another blowe to diuorce the faire marriage of the head and body.

And this was done so in an instant, that the very act did ouerrun Philocleas sorrow (sorrow not being able so quickly to thunderbolte her harte thorough her senses)
The Countesse of Pembroke

sence, but first onely opprest her with a storme of a-
mauzement) but when her cies saw that they did see, as
condemning themselves to have seene it, they became
weary of their owne power of feign: & her soule then
drinking vp woe with great draughts, she fell downe to
deadly trauces: but her waiting iaylers with cruell pitty
brought loathed life vnto her; which yet many times
tooke his leave as though he would indeed depart: but
when he was staiied by force, he kept with him deadly
Sorrow, which thus exercis'd her mourning speech.
Pamela my sister, my sister Pamela, woe is me for thee, I
would I had died for thee. Pamela neuer more shall I
see thee: neuer more shall I enjoy thy sweet companie,
and wise counsell. Alas, thou art gone to beautifie
heauen, and hast thou lefte me here, who haue no-
thing good in me, but that I did euer loue thee, and
euer will lament thee? Let this day be noted of all
vertuous folkes for most vnfortunate: let it never be
mentioned, but among curses; and cursed be they that
did this mischiefe, and most accursed be mine eyes
that behelde it. Sweete Pamela, that head is striken of;
where onely wisdome might be spoken withall; that
bodie is destroied, which was the living booke of ver-
tue. Deare Pamela, how haft thou lefte me to all
wretchednesse, and miserie? Yet while thou liuedst,
in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O Pamela, how
much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then
my mother, and loue thee more then my selfe? Ne-
uer more shall I lie with thee: neuer more shall we
bathe in the pleasant riuer together: neuer more shall
I see thee in thy shephearde apparell. But thou arte
gone, and where am I? Pamela is dead; and liue I? My
God
God, And with that she fell againe in a sounce, so as it was a great while before they could bring her to her selfe againe; but being come to her selfe, Alas (said she) vnnkind women, since you have giuen me so many deathes, torment me not now with life: for Gods sake let me goe, and excuse your hands of more blood. Let me follow my Pamela, whom Iuer I fought to follow. Alas Pamela, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keepe promis, I shall trudge thine owne steppes after thee. For to what am I borne (miserable soule) but to be most vnhappy in my selfe, and yet more vn-happy in others? But 0 that a thousand more miseries had happened vnto me, so thou haddest not dyed: Pamela, my sister Pamela. And so, like lamentable Philomela, complained she the horrible wrong done to her sister, which if it stird not in the wickedly closed minds of her tormentors, a pittie of her sorow, yet brede it a wearinesse of her sorow: so as onely leaving one to prevent any harme she should doo her selfe, the rest went away, consulting againe with Cecropia, how to make profite of this their late bloodie act.

CHAP. 22.

Cecropias pollieie to ufe Zelmanes intercession. * Zelmanes selfe-confict. 1 Her motion to Philoclea rather to dissemble then dye. * Philocleaes resolution rather to dye then dissemble. 1 At sight of Philocleas head Zelmanes ex-saies, 7 desperate desaignes, 8 and comfortlesse complaints.

V u 4 In
In the ende, that woman that used most to keep company with Zelma-
ne, told Cecropia, that she found by many most sensible prooves in Zel-
mane, that there was never woman so loured another, as she loured Phi-
loclea: which was the cause that she (further then the commandement of Cecropia) had cau-
sed Zelmanes curtaines to be also drawne: because having the fame spectable that Philocelea had, she might stand in the greater sære for her, whom she loured so wel: and that indeed she had hit the needle in that de-
uise: for never saw she creature so astonished as Zelma-
ne, exceedingly sory for Pamela, but exceedingly exee-
ding that exceedingnes in sære for Philocelea. Therefore her aduice was, she should cause Zelmane to come and speake with Philocelea. For there being such vehemencie of friendship between them, it was both likely to moue Zelmane to perswade, and Philocelea to be perswaded. Ce-
cropia liked wel of the counsell, and gaue order to the same woman to go deale therein with Zelmane, and to affure her with othe, that Cecropia was determined Phi-
locelea should passe the same way that Pamela had done, without she did yeeld to satiifie the extremitie of her sones affection: which the woman did, adding ther-
vnto many (as she thought) good reasons to make Zel-
mane thinke Amphialus a fit match for Philocelea.

But Zelmane (who had from time to time understoo
stood the cruell dealing they had vfed to the sisters, & how had her owne cies wounded with the sight of ones death) was so confused withall (her courage still rebel-
ling against her wit, desiring still with force to doo im-
possible
possible matters) that as her desire was stopped with power, so her coëctit was darkned with a mist of desire. For blind Loue, & invincible value still would cry out, that it could not be, Philoclea should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieue her: and so while she haled her wit to her courage, she drew it from his owne li-
mits. But now Philoclea's death (a word able to marshall all his thoughts in order) being come to so short a point either with final delay to be stiffered, or by the giuing her selfe to another to be prevented, she was driue to think, and to desire some leasure of thinking: which the woman granted for that night vnto her. A night that was not halfe so blacke, as her mind; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musing thoughts. At last, he that would faine haue desperately lost a thousand liues for her sake, could not finde in his harte, that she should loose any life for her owne sake; and he that despi.de his owne death in respect of honour, yet could well naye dispense with honor it self in respect of Philoclea's death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to Philoclea's death for any bargainc. Then how to prevent the next degree to death (which was her being posleit by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but that Philoclea should pretend a yeelding vnto Cecropias request; & so by spea-
king with Amphialus, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie for Zelmene, who onely willit but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy them all, and deliver Philoclea: so little did both the me, and their forces seeme in her eyes, looking downe vp-
on them from the hye toppe of affections tower.

With
With that minde: therefore (but first well bound) she was brought to Philoclea, having already plotted out in her conceit, how she would deal with her: 

so came she with hart and eyes, which did each sacrifice either to Love upon the altar of Sorrow: and there had she the pleasing displeasing sight of Philoclea: Philoclea, who alreadie the extreme sense of sorrow had brought to a dulnesse therein, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miseries cruelly battered: 

yet shewed it most the perfection of the beautie, which could remaine vnouerthrown by such enemies. 

But when Zelmane was set downe by her, 

& the woman gone away (because she might be the better perswaded whenebody was by, that had heard her say she would not be perswaded) then began first the eyes to speake, and the harts to cry out: Sorrow a while would needes speake his owne language without vsing their tongues to be his interpreters. At last Zelmane brake silence, but spake with the onely elocution of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by such kinde of speeches. Deare Ladie, in extreme necessities we must not. But alas unfortunat wretch that I am, that I liue to fee this day. And I take heaven and earth to witnesse, that nothing: and with that her brest swelled so with spite and griefe, that her breath had not leasure to turne her selfe into words. But the sweet Philoclea that had alreadie dyed in Pamela, and of the other side had the haunices of her heart some thing quickned in the most beloued sight of Zelmane, gesled somewhat at Zelmanes minde; and therefore spake vnto her in this fort. My Pyrocles (said she) I know this exceeding comfort of your presence, is not brought vnto me for any good
good-will that is owed unto me: but (as I suppose) to make you persuade me to save my life with the ransom of mine honour: although no bodie should be so vnfit a pleader in that cause, as your selfe, yet perchance you would have me liue. Your honour? God forbid (said Zelma) that ever, for any cause, I should yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend some affection, til time, or my libertie might worke somthing for your service: this, if my astonished senses would giue me leaue, I would faine have persuaded you.

To what purpose my Pyrocles? (said Philoclea) of a miserable time what gaine is there? hath Pamelaes example wrought no more in me? is a captiue life so much worth: cæ euer it goe out of these lips, that I loue any other but Pyrocles? Shal my tongue be so false a traitor to my hart, as to say I loue any other but Pyrocles? And why should I do all thise to liue? O Pamela, sister Pamela, why should I liue? onely for thy sake Pyrocles I would liue: but to thee I know too well I shal not liue; and if not to thee, hath thy loue so base allay, my Pyrocles, as to wish me to liue for dissimulation, my Pyrocles, my simplicitie is such, that I haue hardly bene able to keepe a straight way; what shal I doo in a crooked? But in this case there is no meane of dissimulation, not for the cunningest: present answer is required, and present performance upon the answer. Art thou so terrible, O Death? No my Pyrocles; and for that I doo thanke thee, and in my soule thanke thee; for I confesse the loue of thee is herein my chiefest vertue. Trouble me not therefore, deare Pyrocles, nor double not my death by tormenting my resolution: since I cannot liue with thee, I wil dye for thee. Onely
The Countesse of Pembroke

Onely remember me deare Pyrocles; and loue the remembrance of me: and if I may craue so much of thee, let me bee thy last loue, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthieth creature liuing) yet remember that my loue was a worthy loue. But Pyrocles was so overcome with sorrow (which wisdome & vertue made just in so excellent a Ladies case, ful of so excellent kindnes) that words were ashamed to come forth knowing how weake they were to express his mind, & her merit: and therefore so stayed in a deadly silence, forsaken of hope, & forsaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to see the fruits of Zelmanes labour: & then Zelman warned by their presence, fcl againe to perswade, though scarcely her selfe could tell what; but in sum, desirous of delays. But Philoclea sweetly continuing constant, & in the end punishing her importunity with silence, Zelman was faine to ende. Yet craving an other times conference, she obtained it, & divers others; till at the last Cecropia found it was to no purpose, and thersore determined to follow her owne way. Zelman yet still desirous to win (by any meanes) respite, even wafted with sorrow, & vnclertaine, whether in worse case in her presence, or absence, being able to do nothing for Philoclea succour, but by submitting the greatest courage of the earth to fall at the feete of Cecropia, and craue stay of their sentence till the uttermost was seene, what her persuasions might doe.

Cecropia seemed much to be moved by her importunitie, so as divers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent Philoclea: while Zelman suffred some hope to cherish her mind, especially trusting vpon the helpe of Musidorus, who (she knew) would not be idle in this matter:
matter, till one morning a noife awaked Zelmame, from whose over-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolen a little sleep: and freight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking the woonted place, she ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noife guided her,) and there might she see (the curtaine being lett open euere since the last execution) seuen or eight persons in a cluster vpon the scaffold: who by & by retiring themselues, nothing was to be seene therevpon, but a baseon of golde, pitifully enameled with bloud, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautiful Philoclea. The horriblenes of the mischiefe was such, as Pyrocles could not at first beleue his own sences, but bent his woful eyes to discerne it better: where too well he might see it was Philoclea selfe, haung no veile, but beautie, ouer the face, which still appeared to be alieue: so did those eyes shine, euén as they were wont, and they were wont more then any other: and sometimes as they moued, it might well make the beholder think, that death therin had borrowed their beautie, and not they any way disgraced by death: so sweet and pearling a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow which then laid holde on Pyrocles, but a wilde furie of desperate agonie, so that he cried out, O tyrant heauen, traitor earth, blinde prudence; no justice, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a gouernment? If it haue, let it poure out all his mischifes vpon me, and see whether it haue power to make me more wretched then I am. Did she excell for this? haue I prayed for this? abominable hande that did it, detestable deuil that commaunded it; cursed light
light that beheld it: and if the light be cursed, what are then mine eyes that haue seene it? And haue I seen Philoclea dead, and doo I liue? and haue I liued, not to help her, but to tale of her? and stande I still talking? And with that (caried with the madnes of angish, not having a redier way to kill himselfe) he ranne as hard as euer he could, with his head against the wall, with intention to braine himself, but the haste to doo it, made the doing the flower. For, as he came to giue the blow, his foot tript, so as it came not with the full force: yet forcible inough to strike him downe, and withall, to deprive him of his sense, so that he lay a while, comforted by the hurt, in that he felte not his discomfort.

And when he came againe to himselfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voice, which cried, Reuenge, Reuenge; whether indeed it were his good Angel, which vfed that voice to stay him from unnaturall murdering of him selfe, or that his wandering spirites lighted up on that conceite, and by their weaknesses (subject to apprehensions) supposed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant seruant Anger, stopped him from present destroying himselfe: yielding in reason and manhoode, first to destroy, man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were accessarie to this crueltie; then to raze the Castle, and to builde a sumptuous monument for her sister, and a most sumptuous for her selfe; and then, himselfe to die upon her tomb. This determining in himselfe to do, and to seeke all meanes how (for that purpose) to get out of prison: he was content a while to beare the thirst of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kisse the beloued head with
with his eies, but there saw he nothing but the scaffold,
all covered over with scarlet, and nothing but solitary silence, to mourn this mischief. But then, Sorrow having dispers'd it selfe from his harte, in all his noble partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares, and with a more gentle dolefulnes, could pour out his inward euill.

Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so soon from mine eies? What, mine eies, perhaps they enuie the excellencie of your sorrow? Indeede, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all mankind, but teares: and who be to me, if any exceede me in wofulnes. I do conjure you all, my senses, to accept no object, but of Sorrow: be ashamed, nay, abhor to thinke of comfort. Unhappy eies, you have seene too much, that euer the light should be welcome to you: unhappy eares, you shall never heare the musicke of Musick in her voice: unhappy harte, that hast liued to feel these pangues. Thou hast done thy worst, World, & cursed be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selfe thou hast done the worst thou couldst doo. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces. Widowed Musick, let now thy tunes be roorings, and lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and flie after her into heauen; here is no dwelling place for thee. Why liued I, alas? Alas why loved I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heauens hate? And hate, & spare not, for your worst blow is striken. Sweet Philoclea, thou art gone, and hast caried with thee my love; & hast thy love in me, & I wretched ma' do liue; I liue, to die continually, till thy reveuenge do give me leaue to dy: & then dy I will, my Philoclea, my hart willinglie makes...
The Countesse of Pembroke's

makes this promise to it selfe. Surely he did not looke vpon thee, that gaue the cruell blow: for no eye could haue abidden to see such beautie ouerthrown by such mischief. Alas, why should they divide such a head from such a bodie? no other bodye is worthy of that head; no other head is woorthie of that body: O yet, if I had taken my last leaue, if I might have taken a holie kisse from that dying mouth. Where art thou Hope which promisest neuer to leaue a ma while he liueth? Tell me, what canst thou hope for? nay tel me, what is there which I would willingly hope after? Wisling power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wish for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, all my wishing. Loue, be ashamed to be called Loue: cruel Hate, vnspeakeable Hate is victori- ous ouer thee. Who is there now left, that can iustifie thy tyrannie, and giue reason to thy passion? O cruel divorce of the sweetest mairie that euer was in Na- ture: Philoclea is dead, and dead is with her all good- ness, all sweetness, all excellencie. Philoclea is dead, and yet Life is not ashamed to continue vpon the earth. Philoclea is dead: O deadly word, which containeth in it selfe the vtermost of all misfortunes. But happie worde when thou shalt be saide of me, and long it shall not be, before it be saide.

CHAP. 17.

1 A Ladies kinde comforts to Pyrocles comfortlesse unkind- nesse. 2 His hardly knowing her. 3 Her unmasking of Cecropias fruitlesse sophistrie. 4 Their medley of so- lace and sorowe.

Then
Hen stopping his wordes with sighes, drowning his sighes in tears, & drying againe his tears in rage, he would sitte a while in a wandring muse, which represented nothing but vexations vnto him: then throwing himselfe sometimes vpon the floore, and sometimes vpon the bedde: then vp againe, till walking was wearesome, and rest loathsome: and so neither suffering foode, nor sleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but wepe Philoclea, sigh Philoclea, and crie out Philoclea: till as it happened (at that time vpon his bed) toward the dawning of the day, he heard one stirre in his chamber, by the motion of garmets, and he with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (answered the partie) that wish long life vnto you. And I soone death to you (said he) for the horrible curse you haue giuen me. Certainly (said she) an vnkinde answered, and far vnworthy the excellencie of your mind; but not unsutable to the rest of your behauiour. For most parte of this night I haue hearde you (being let into your chamber, you neuer perceiving it, so was your minde estranged from your senses) and haue hearde nothing of Zelmane, in Zelmane, nothing but weake waylings, fitter for some nurse of a village, then so famous a creature as you are. O God (cried out Pyrocles) that thou wert a man that vseth these wordes vnto me. I tell thee I am sory: I tell thee I will be sory in despite of thee, and all them that would haue me joyfull. And yet (replied she) perchaunce Philoclea is not dead,
dead, whom you so much bemone. I would we were
both dead of that condition, said Pyrocles. See the folly
of your passion (said she) as though you should be nee-
er to her, you being dead, and she alive; then she being
dead, & you alive: & if she be dead, was she not borne
to die? what then do you cry out for? not for her, who
must have died one time or other; but for some fewe
yeares: so as it is time, & this world that seeme so loue-
ly things, and not Philoclea vnto you. O noble Sisters
(cried Pyrocles) now you be gone (who were the onely
exalters of all womankind) what is left in that sex, but
babling, and businesse? And truly (said she) I will yet a
little longer trouble you. Nay, I pray you doo (said
Pyrocles) for I will he for nothing in my shorte life, but
mischiefes, and combers: and I am content you shall
be one of them. In truth (said she) you would thinke
your selfe a greatly pruiledged person, if since the
strongest buildings, and lastingest monarchies are sub-
ject to end, onely your Philoclea (because she is yours)
should be exempted. But indeede you bemone your
selfe, who have lost a frende: you cannot her, who
hath in one act both preferued her honour, and left
the miferies of this worlde. O womans philosophie,
childish follar (said Pyrocles) as though if I do bemone
my selfe, I have not reafon to doo so, having lost more
then any Monarchie, nay then my life can be wooth
unto me. Alas (said she) comfort your selfe, Nature
did not forget her skill, when she had made them; you
shall find many their superiours, and perchance such,
as (when your eyes shall looke abroad) your selfe will
like better.

2 But that speech put all good maners out of the con-
ceit of Pyrocles; in so much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to have striken her: but comming neere her (the morning then winning the field of darkenesse) he saw, or he thought he sawe, indeede, the very face of Philo-
colea; the same sweetenesse, the same grace, the same 
beautie: with which carried into a diuine astonish-
ment, he fell downe at her feete. Most blessed Angell 
(said he) well haste thou done to take that shape, since 
thee wouldst submit thy selfe to mortall sense; for a 
more Angelicall forme could not haue bene created 
for thee. Alas, even by that excellent beautie, so be-
loued of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, 
what is the cause, that she, that heauenly creature, 
whose forme you haue taken, shoud by the heauens be 
destined to so vnripe an ende? Why should vnir-
ficie so preuaile? Why was the scene to the world, so 
foone to be rauished from vs? Why was she not suffe-
red to liue, to teach the world perfection? Doo not de-
ceive thy selfe (answered she) I am no Angell; I am 
Philoclea, the same Philodlea, so truely louing you, so 
truly beloued of you. If it be so (said he) that you are 
indeede the soule of Philoclea, you haue done well to 
kepe your owne figure: for no heauen could haue gi-
uen you a better. Then alas, why haue you taken the 
paines to leauie your blisfull seate to come to this place 
most wretched, to me, who am wretchednes it selfe, & 
not rather obtain for me, that I might come where you 
are, there eternally to behold, & eternally to loue your 
beauties: you know (I know) that I desire nothing but 
death, which I only stay, to be iustly revenged of your 
vnjust murtherers. Deare Pyrocles (said she) I am thy Phi-
loclea, and as yet liuing; not murthered, as you supposed,
and therefore to be comforted. And with that gave him her hand. But the sweet touch of that hand, seemed to his affrayed powers so heavenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former belief: till she, with vehement protestations (and desire that it might be so, helping to persuade that it was so) brought him to yield; yet doubtfully to yeld, to this height of comfort, that Philoclea liued: which witnessing with the teares of joy, Alas (said she) how shall I beleue mine eyes any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus vnto me, to stay me from some desperate end? For alas I sawe the excellent Pamela beheaded: I saw your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes) standing in a disthe of golde, too meane a thrine (God wote) for such a relike. How can this be, my onely deare, and you liue? or if this be not so, how can I beleue mine owne senses? and if I cannot beleue the, why should I now beleue these blessed tidings they bring me?

The truth is (said she) my Pyrocles, that nether I (as you finde) nor yet my deare sister is dead: although the mischieuously subtle Cecropta vsed flightes to make either of vs thinke so of other. For, hauing in vaine attempted the fardest of her wicked eloquence, to make eyther of vs yeeld to her sonne, and seeing that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche presents, could get any grounde of vs, nor yet the violent way she fell into of crueltie, tormenting our bodies, could preuayle with vs; at last, she made either of vs thinke the other dead, and so hoped to have wrested our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: and first she gave to mine eyes the miserable spectacle of my sisters (as
I thought) death: but indeede not my fister: it was onely Artesia, she who so cunningly brought vs to this misery. Truly I am sorry for the poore Gentlewoman, though iutly she be punished for her double falshood: but Artesia muffled so, as you could not easily discerne her; and in my sisters apparell (which they had taken from her vnder colour of giuing her o- ther) did they execute: And when I (for thy fake e- specially deare Pyrocles) could by no force, nor feare be won, they asayed the like with my fister, by bring- ing me downe vnder the scaffold, and(making me thrust my head vp through a hole they had made ther- in) they did put about my poore necke a dishe of gold, whereout they had beaten the bottome, so as hauing fet bloud in it, you sawe how I played the parte of death (God knowes euens willing to have done it in earnest) and so had they set me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the gronde, so as scarcely I could breathe, much leffe speake: And truely if they had kepte me there any whit longer, they had strangled me, in stead of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and feeking to see their issue of this practise, they found my noble fister (for the deare loue she vouchsafeth to beare me) so grieued withall, that she willed them to doo their yttermost crueltynto her: for she vowed, neuer to receiue sustenaunce of them, that had bene the causers of my murther: and finding both of vs, eu- en giuen ouer, not like to liue many houre longer, and my fister Pamela, rather worse then my felse, (the strength of her harte worse bearing those indignities) the good woman Cecropia (with the same pittie as folkes keepe foule, when they are not fatte inough for
their eating) made vs know her deceipt, & let vs come one to another; with what ioye you can well imagine, who I know feel the like, sauing that we only thought our selues refereed to miseries, and therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my parte, I am fully perswaded, it is but with a little respite, to have a more feeling of the tormentes she prepares for vs. True it is, that one of my guardians would haue me to beleue, that this proceeds of my gentle cousin Amphialus: who hauing hearde some inckling that we were euill entreated, had called his mother to his bedside, from whence he neuer rofe since his last combat, and besought, & charged her vpon all the loue she bare him, to vse vs with all kindiffe: vowing, with all the imprecations he could imagine, that if euer he understood for his fake, that I receiued further hurt then the want of my libertie, he woulde not liue an heoure longer. And the good woman sware to me that he would kill his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealt with; but that Cecropia keepes him from understanding things how they passe, onely hauing heard a whispering, and my selfe named, he had (of abounded, forlooth, of honorable loue) giuen this charge for vs. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was grown: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leaue no mony vnoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleue any worde they say, but (my deare Pyrocles) euens looke for the worste, and prepare my selfe for the fame. Yet I must confesse, I was content to robbe from death, and borrowe of my misery the sweet comfort of seeing my sweet sister, and moste sweete comforte of thee my Pyrocles. And so hauing leaue,
leauıe, I came stealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a joy it was unto me, to heare you solemnifie the funerals of the poore Philoclea? That I my selfe might liue to heare my death bewailed: and by whom? by my deere Pyrocles. That I saw death was not strong enough to diuide thy loue from me: O my Pyrocles, I am too well payde for my paines I have suffred: joyfull is my woe for so noble a cause; and welcome be all miseries, since to thee I am so welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me; and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to interrump thee, but often had euerm pleasure to weep with thee: and so kindly came forth thy lamentations, that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had beene a looker on, to see poore Philoclea dye. Til at laſt I spake with you, to try whether I could remoue thee: sorrow, till I had almost procured my selfe a beating.

And with that she pretily smiled, which, mingled with her tears, one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleasure, or a delightful sorrow: but like when a few Aprill drops are scattered by a gentle Zephyrus among fine coloured flowers. But Pyrocles, who had felt (with so final distance of time) in himself the overthrow both of hope and despair, knew not to what key he should tune his mind, either of joy, or sorrow. But finding perfect reason in neither, suffered himselfe to be carried by the tide of his imagination, & his imaginations to be raised euem by the sway, which hearing or seing, might giue vnto the: he saw her alive, he was glad to see her alive: he saw her weep, he was sorry to see her weep: he heard her comfortable speecches, nothing more gladsome: he hard her prognosticating her own destruction,
nothing more dolefull. But when he had a little taken 
breath from the panting motion of such contrarietie 
in passions, he fell to consider with her of her present 
estate, both comforting her, that certainly the worst 
of this storme was past, since alreadie they had done 
the worst, which man's wit could imagine: and that if 
they had determined to have killed her, they would 
have now done it: and also earnestly counselling her, 
and inhabling his counsels with vehement prayers, 
that she would so far second the hopes of Amphialus, as 
that she might but procure him liberty; promising then 
as much to her, as the liberalitie of loving courage durst 
promise to himselfe.

CHAP. 24.

seeking their death * findeth her owne. * Amphialus-his 
death-panges and selfe-killing. * The worse knowledge of it.

Vt who would liuely describe the 
manner of these speeches, should 
paint out the lightsome coulours 
of affection, shaded with the dee-
pest shadowes of sorrow, finding 
them betweene hope and feare, a 
kind of sweetenes in teares: til Philo-
locles content to receive a kisfe, and 
but a kisfle of Pyrocles, sealed vp with mouing lippes, and 
closed them vp in comfort: and her-selfe ( for the pas-
sage was left betweene them open ) went to her sister: 

with
with whom she had stayed but a while, fortifying one another (while Philoclea tempered Pamela's iust disdain, and Pamela ennobled Philoclea's sweete humblenesse) when Amphialus came vnto them: who never since he had heard Philoclea named, could be quiet in himselfe, although none of them about him (fearing more his mothers violence the his power) would discouer what had passed: and many messages he sent to know her estate, which brought anfwere backe, according as it pleased Cecropia to indite them, till his hart full of vnfortunate affliction, more and more misgiving him, hauing impatiently borne the delay of the nights vnfitnesse, this morning he gat vp, and though full of wounds (which not without daunger could suffer such exercise) he appareled himselfe, and with a countenance, that shewed strength in nothing but in grieue, he came where the sisters were; and weakely kneeling downe, he befought them to pardon him, if they had not bene vsed in that castle according to their worthines, and his dutie; beginning to excuse small matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what sort they had bene handled.

But Pamelaes yhe hart (hauing conceiued mortall hate for the injurie ofred to her and her sister) could scarce abide his sight, much lesse heare out his excuses, but interrupted him with these words. Traitor (said she) to thine owne blood, and false to the profession of so much loue as thou haft vowed, doo not defile our eares with thy excuses; but pursue on thy crueltie, that thou and thy godly mother haue vsed towards vs: for my part, assure thy self, and so do I anfwere for my sister (whose mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne
The Countesse of Pembroke

safetie then thy destruction. Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye, ful of humble sorrowfulness, to Philoclea. And is this (most excellent Ladie) your doome of me also? She, sweete Ladie, fate weeping: for as her most noble kinsman she had ever sauoured him, 2 loyed his loue, though she could not be in loue with his person; and now partly vnkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie of his case, made her sweete minde yeelde some teares, before she could answere, and her answere was no other, but that she had the fame caufe as her fitter had. He replied no further, but deliuering from his hart two or three (untaught) sighes, rose, and with moft low reverence went out of their chamber: and streight by threatning torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible manner those Princesses had benevled. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to lay any more (for his speech went backe to rebounde woe vpon his hart) he needed no judge to goe vpon him: for no man could ever thinke any otherworthy of greater punishmet, the he thought himselfe.

Ful therefore of the horribleft despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, understanding his mother was on the toppe of the leades, he caught one of his servants swords from him, and none of them daring to lay him, he went vp, carried by furie, in steede of strength, where she was at that time, musing how to goe thorough with this matter, and resoluing to make much of her Neeces in shew, and secretly to impoifon them; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes loue woulde no otherwise be mitig-
mitigated.

But when she sawe him come in with a sword, drawne, and a looke more terrible then the sworde, she straights was strické with the guiltines of her own conscience: yet the well known humblenes of her son so much animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth such a monster of unhappines as I am; she fearing he would have stricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himselfe in her presence) went backe so far, til ere she were aware, she overthrew her selfe from ouer the Leades; to receive her deathes kisse at the ground: and yet was she not so happie as presently to dye, but that she had time with hellish agonie to see her sonnes mischiefe (whom she loued so well) before her end; when she confess (with most desperate, but not repeting mind) the purpose she had to imposon the princesses, & would then had them murthred. But euerie bodie being, and glad to see her end, had left obedience to her tyranny.

And (if it could be) her ruine increased woe in the noble hart of Amphialius, who when he saw her fal, had his owne rage stayed a little with the soddenenes of her destruction. And was I not enough miserable before (said he) but that before my end I must be the death of my mother? who how wicked so euer, yet I would she had receaued her punishmet by some other. O Amphialius, wretched Amphialius; thou haft liued to be the death of thy most deere copanion & friend Philoxenus, and of his father, thy most carefull fosterfather. Thou haft liued to kill a Ladie with thine owne handes, and so excellent, and vertuous a Ladie, as the faire Parthenia was.
The Countesse of Pembroke

was: thou hast liued to see thy faithfull Isemenus flaine
in succouring thee, and thou not able to defende him:
thou hast liued to shew thy selfe such a coward, as that
one unknowne Knight could overcome thee in thy
Ladies presence: thou hast liued to beare armes against
thy rightfull Prince: thine owne vnkle: Thou hast
liued to be accounted, and justly accounted, a traitor,
by the most excellent persons, that this world hol-
deth: Thou hast liued to bee the death of her, that
gave thee life. But ah wretched Amphialus, thou hast
liued for thy sake, and by thy authoritie, to have Philo-
lætea tormentted: O heauens, in Amphialus castle,
where Amphialus commaunded; tormentted, torment-
ted: torment of my soule, Philoætea tormentted: and
thou hast had such comfort in thy life, as to live all
this while. Perchance this hande (vied onely to mis-
chievous acts) thinkes it were too good a deed to
kill me; or else filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill
women, thou art afraid to strike a man. Feare not
cowardly hand, for thou shalt kill but a cowardly tra-
tor: and doo it gladlie; for thou shalt kill him,
whome Philoclea hateth. With that, furiously he tare
open his doublet, and setting the pommell of the
sworde to the grounde, and the point to his brest,
hee fell vpon it. But the sworde more mercifull
then hee to himselfe, with the slipping of the pom-
mell, the point swarued, and razed him but vpon
the side: yet with the fall, his other wounds open-
ed so, as hee bledde in such extremtie, that Char-
rons boate might verie well be carried in that flood:
which yet he sought to hasten by this meanes. As
he opened his dubler, and fell, there fell out Philo-
loclear
locleas' kniues, which Cecropia at the first had taken from her, and delivered to her sonne; and he had ever wore them next his hart, as the only relique he had of his Saint: now seeing them by him, (his sworde being so, as weakenes could not well draw it out from his doublette) he tooke the kniues, and pulling one of them out, and many times kissing it, and then, first with the passions of kindnes, and ynkidnes, melting in teares, O deare kniues, you are come in a good time, to revenge the wrong I haue done you all this while, in keeping you from her blessed side, and wearing you without your mistresse leaue. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you may, for you haue layn next my hart) that by my consent, your excellent mistresse should haue had as much honour, as this poore place could haue brought forth, for so high an excellency; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far other hope would my desire often haue giuen me: but other event it hath pleased her to lay vpon me. Ah Philoclea (with that his teares gushed out, as though they would strive to overflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewest how I love thee. Vnworthie I am, vnhappe I am, false I am; but to thee, alas, I am not false. But what a traitor am I, any way to excufe him, whom she condemneth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her service, but in punishing him, who hath so offended her. Deare knife, then doe your noble mistresses commaundement. With that, he stabbed himselfe into divers places of his breast, and throte, vntill those wounds (with the old, frehly bleeding) brought him to the senfleffe gate of Death.

By which time, his servaunts hauing (with feare of his
The Countesse of Pembroke's

his furie) abstained a while from comming vnto him, one of them (preferring duetifull affection before fearfull duetie) came in, and there found him swimming in his owne bloud, there giuing a pittifull spectacle, where the conquest was the conquerors overthrow, and self-ruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betwene him, and himselfe. The time full of danger, the person full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie astonish all the beholders; so as by and by, all the town was full of it, and then of all ages came running vp to see the beloued body; every body thinking, their safetie bledde in his woundes, and their honor died in his destruction.

CHAP. 25.

Anaxius—his rages for the death, Queen Helens comming for the cure of Amphialus. 3 Her complaints over him. 4 Her pasport and safeconduet, to carrie him to her Chirurgerian. 5 The peoples sorow, 6 set downe in a song.

But when it came, (and quickly it came) to the cares of his proude friende Anaxius, (who by that time was growe well of his wouid, but never had come abroad, dayning to abase himselfe to the compaine of any other but of Amphialus) he was exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud hart be not capable therof) with disdaine, that he, who had the honor to be called the frend of Anaxius, should come to such an un-expectad ruine. Therefore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddes ray-
rayfed vp, and eyes leuelling from toppe to the toe of
them that met him, treading, as though he thought to
make the earth shake vnder him, with his hande vpon
his sworde, short speeches, and disdainfull answeres, gi-
ing frighte order to his two brothers, to goe take the
oath of obedience, in his name, of all the soouldiers, and
Citizens in the towne: and withall, to sweare them to
revenge the death of Amphialius, vpon Basilius. He him-
self went to see him, calling for all the surgeons & phy-
sicins there, spending some time in vewing the body,
and threatning them all to be hanged, if they did not
heale him. But they (taking view of his woundes, and
falling down at Anaxius feete) assured him, that they
were mortall, & no possible meanes to keep him aboue
two dayes alive: and he stood partly in doubt, to kil, or
faue them, betweene his owne furie, and their humble-
nes. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two
sisters, as causers of his friends death: when his bro-
thers came to him, & told him they had done his com-
maundement, in hauing receaued the oath of allegae-
ance, with no great difficultie: the most part terrifi
by their valure, & force of their servants, & many that had
bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any
thing, rather then come vnnder the subiection of Basilius
againe, and such fewe as durft gaine fay, being cut of by
present slaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to
him) they told Anaxius, that the faire Queen Helen was
come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne: húblie
desiring leaue to see Amphialius, who she had fought in
many places of the world; & lastly, being returned into
her owne countrie, she heard together of the late siege
and
and of his combat with the strange Knight, who had dangerously hurt him. Wherupon, full of loving care (which she was content euen to publish to the world, how vngratefully howeuer he dealt with her) she had gotten leave of Basilius, to come by his frontiers, to cary away Amphialus with her, to the excellentest surgeon then known, whom she had in her Countrey, but so olde, as not able to travaile: but had giuen her soueraigne annointments, to preserue his body withal, till he might be brought vnto him: and that Basilius had graunted leave: either naturall kindnes preuailing over all the offences done, or rather glad to make any passage, which might leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This discourse Lycurgus understanding of Helene, deliuered to his brother, with her vehement desire to see the body, and take her last farewell of him. Anaxius, though he were fallen out with all womankind (in respect of the hate he bare the sisters, whom he accounted murtherers of Amphialus) yet at his brothers request, graunted her leave. And she (poore Lady) with grieuose expectation, and languishing desire, caryed her faint legs to the place where he lay, euer not breathing, or in all appearance breathing but death.

In which pitious plight when she saw him, though Sorow had set before her minde the pittifullest conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the present sight went beyonde all former apprehensions: so that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her sight ranne from her service, rather then abide such a sight; and she fell in a soune vpon him, as if she could not choose but die of his wounds. But when her breath (aweary to be closed vp
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

vp in woe) broke the prison of her faire lippes, and brought memorie ( with his seruaunt; senes ) to his naturall office, she yet made the breath conuey these dolefull wordes with it. Alas (said she) Amphialus, what strange diseases be these, that hauing fought thee so long, I should be now forie to finde thee? that these eyes should looke vpon Amphialus, and be grieued withall? that I should have thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort? How often haue I blest the means that might bring me neer thee? Now, woe worth the cause that brings me so neer thee. Often, alas, often haft thou disdained my teares: but now, my deare Amphialus, receive them: these eyes can serue for nothing else, but wepe for thee; since thou wouldst neuer vouchsafe them thy comforte, yet disdaine not them thy sorrowe. I would they had bene more deare vnto thee; for then hadst thou liued. Woe is me that thy noble harte could loue who hated thee, and hate who loued thee. Alas, why should not my faith to thee couer my other defects, who only fought to make my Crowne thy footes-toole, my selfe thy seruaunt? that was all my ambition; and alas thou disdainedst it to serue them, by whom thy incomparable selfe were disdained. Yet (of Philoclea) wheresoeuer you are, pardon me, if I speake in the bitternes of my soule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent sure you are since he loued you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infinitenesse of desert, cannot be excused. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his desperued suite of marrying you, and that I had bene your seruing-maide, to haue made my estate the foile of your felicitie, so he had liued. How

Y y many
many weary steps have I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou werte vnkinde. Alas I would now thou werte, to be vnkind. Alas why wouldest thou not command my service, in persuading philoce to love thee: who could, or if every one could, who would have recounted thy perfections so well, as I: who with such kindly passions could have stirred pittie for thee as I: who should have delivered not onely the wordes but the teares I had of thee: and so shouldest thou have exerciseth thy disdain in me, and yet vied my service for thee.

With that the body moving somewhat, and giving a groane full of deaths musique, she fell upon his face, & kissed him, and with all cried out. O miserable I, that haue onely favour by misterie: and then, would she have returned to a fresh carere of complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisdome, & honour: and with al, that it was fitter to shew her loue, in carrying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first applying such excellent medicines as she had receiued of him for that purpose, rather then onely shew her selfe a woman-louer in frulltes lamentations. She was streight warned with the obedience of an overthrown mind, and therefore leaving some surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to Anaxius, & humbling her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the surgeons there had utterly given him ouer, that he would let her carrie him away, in her litter with her, since the worst he could haue shoule be to die, and to die in her armes that loved him aboue al things, & where he should haue such monu-
monuments erected over him, as were fit for her loue, 
& his worthines: beseeching him withall, since she was in a country of enemies (where she trusted more to A- 
maxius valour, then Basilus promise) that he would con- 
vey them safely out of those territories. Her reasons something moved him, but nothing thoroughly per- 
swaded him, but the last request of his helpe: which he 
straight promised, warranting all securitie, as long as that 
word had his master alive. She as happy therein as unhappines could be (having received as small comfort of her owne surgeons as of the others) caused yet the body to be easily conveyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though neuer till then they had lost their Lord. And if the terror of Anaxius had not kept them vnder, they would have mutinied, rather then suffered his bodie to be caried a-
way.

But Anaxius him selfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place, they were afraid eu- 
to crie, though they were readie to crie for feare: but (because that they might doo) euery bodie forced (e- 
uen with harming themselues) to doo honour to him: 
some throwing themselues vpon the grounde, some 
tearing their clothes, and casting duste vpon their 
heades, and some euin wounding themselues, and 
sprinkling their owne bloud in the aire. Among the 
rest, one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of sorrow, roared out a song of Lamentation, which (as well as might be) was ga-
thered vp in this forme.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Since that to death is gone the shepherd kie,
Whom most the sily shepheard pipe did prye,
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And you d trees (if any life there lies
In trees) now through your porous barks receave
The straunge resound of these my causefull cries:
And let my breath upon your branches leave,
My breath distinguis'd into wordes of woe,
That so I may signes of my sorrowe leave.
But if among your selues some one tree growe,
That aptest is to figure miserie,
Let it embassage beare your grievances to shewe.
The weeping Myrrhe I thinke will not denie
Her helpe to this, this inuest cause of plaint.
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And thon poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint
In Natures name to suffer such a harme,
As for to loose thy gemme, and such a Saint,
Upon thy face let coaly Rauens swarme:
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.
Let goldenow rust, let Diamonds waste in thee:
Let perals be wan with woe their damme doth beare:
Thy selfe henceforth the light doo never see.
And you, o flowers, which sometimes Princes were,
Till these straunge altrings you did hap to trie,
Of Princes losse your felucs for tokens reare.
Lilly in mourning blanke thy whitenes die:
O Hiacinthe let Ai be on thee still.
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.
O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,
   And do not only mark the accents last,
   But all for all reach out my wailefull will:
One Echo to another Echo cast
   Soundes of my griefes, and let it never ende,
   Till that it hath all woods and waters past.
Nay to the heau'n's your just complaining sende,
   And say the stars inconstant constant race,
   Till that they doe unto our dolours bend:
   And ask the reason of that special grace,
   That they which haue no lyues, should live so long,
   And vertuous souls so soon should loose their place?
Ask, if in great men good men doe so thronge,
   That he for want of elbowe roome must die?
   Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?
Did Wisedome this our wretched time espie
   In one true chest to rob all Vertues treasure?
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now apply.
   And if that any counsell you to measure
   Your dolesfull tunes, to them still playning say,
   To well felt griefe, plainte is the only pleasure.
O light of Sunne, which is entitl'd day,
   O well thou doest that thou no longer bidest;
   For mourning light her blacke weeds may display.
O Phoebus with good cause thy face thou hidest,
   Rather then haue thy all-beholding eye.
   Fould with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.
   And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
   A stately tombe to cover him deceased.
Your dolesfull tunes sweet Muses now apply.
   
O Phi-
The Countesse of Pembroke

"Philomel with thy brest oppressed
By shame and griefe helpe helpe me to lament
Such cursed harmes as cannot be redressed.

Or if thy mourning notes be fully spent,
Then give a quiete care unto my playning:
For I to teach the world complaince am bent.

You dimmy cloudes, which well employ your playning
This cheerefull aire with your obscured cheere,
Witness your wofull teares with daily rayning.

And if, o Sunne, thou ever didst appeare,
In shapp which by mans eye might be perceiued;
Vertue is dead, now set thy triumph here.

Now set thy triumph in this world, bereaued
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;
And by thy pompe our losse will be conceaued.

O notes of mine your selues together tie:
With too much griefe me thinkes you are dissolved.
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Time euere old, and yonge is still resolue
Within it selfe, and never tasteth ende:
But mankind is for aye to nought resolue.

The filthy snake her aged coate can mende,
And getting yonge againe, in yonge doth flourishe:
But unto Man ageuer death doth sende.

The very trees with grafting we can cherish,
So that we can long time produce their time:
But Man which helpeth them, helpelesse must perish.
Thus, thus the mindes, which over all doo clime,
When they by yeares experience get best graces,
Must finish them by deaths defeted crime.
We last short while, and build long lasting places:
Ah let us all against foul Nature cry:
We Natures workes doo helpe, she vs defaces.
For how can Nature unto this reply?
That she her child, I say, her best child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now apply.

Alas, me thinkes, my weakened voice but spilleth,
The vehement course of this insat lamentation:
Me thinkes, my found no place with sorrow filleth.
I know not I, but once in desolation
I have my selfe, and all what life containeth,
Since Death on Vertues fort hath made invasian.
One word of woe another after traineth:
Ne doo I care how rude be my invention,
So it be scene what sorrow in me raigeth.

O Elements, by whose (men say) contention,
Our bodies be in living power maintained,
Was this mans death the fruite of your dissention?
O Physickes power, which (some say) hath restrained
Approch of death, alas thou helpest meagerly,
When once one is for Atropos distraiine.
Great be Physitians brags, but aid is beggerly,
When rooted moisture failes, or groveth drie,
They leaue off al, and say, death comes too cagerlie.
They are but words therefore that men do buy,
Of any since God AESculapius ceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Justice, justice is now (alas) oppressed:
Bountifulnes hath made his last conclusion:
Goodnes for best attire in dust is dressed.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Shepheardes bewaile your uttermost confusion
   And see by this picture to you presented,
   Death is our home, life is but a delusion.

For see alas, who is from you absented?
   Absented ? say I say for euer banished
   From such as were to dye for him contented ?

Out of our sight in turne of hand is vanished
   Shepherd of shepherds, whose well setted order
   Prinate with welth, publike with quiet garnished.

While he did live, farre, farre was all disorder;
   Example more prevaileing then direction,
   Far was home misorde, and far was soe from border.

His life a law, his looke a full correction:
   As in his health we healthfull were preserved,
   So in his sicknesse grew our sure infection.

His death our death. But ah, my Muse hath swarmed,
   From such deepe plaint as should such woes descreie,
   Which be of us for euer hath deserued.

The stile of beautefull hart, can never flie
   So high, as should make such a paine notorious:
   Cease Muse therefor : thy dart o Death applie,
   And farewell Prince, whom goodnesse hath made glorious.

CHAP.
CHAP. 26.

1 The publick griefe amplified. 2 Anaxius death-threatning to the Princesses. 3 Their resolutenes in it. 4 His returne, and stop. 5 Zelmanes braue challenge unto him, scorned by him. 6 His love to Pamela, scorned by her. 7 His brothers braue loves haue as meane success.

The general confort of all such numbers mourning, performed so the naturall times of sorrow, that even to them (if any such were) that felt not the losse, yet others grief taught them griefe, having before their compassionate sense so passionate a spectacle, of a young man, of great beautie, beautified with great honour, honored by great value, made of inestimable value, by the noble vsing of it, to lye there languishing, vnder the arrest of death, and a death, where the manner could be no comfort to the discomfortablenes of the matter. But when the bodie was carried thorough the gate, and the people (having such as were appointed) not suffered to goe further, then was such an vniversal crie, as if they had all had but one life, and all receaued but one blow.

Which so moued Anaxius to consider the losse of his friend, that (his minde apter to reuenge, then tendernesse) he presently giuing order to his brother to keepe the prisoners safe, and vnuiusted, till his retourne from coueying Helen, he sent a messenger to the sisters, to tel them this curteous message: that at his retourne, with
The Countesse of Pembroke's

with his owne hands, he would cut off their heads, and send them for tokens to their father.

This message was brought unto the sisters, as they fate at that time together with Zelmae, conferring how to carry themselves, having heard of the death of Amphialus. And as no expectation of death is so painfull, as where the resolution is hindred by the intermixing of hopes, so did this new alarum, though not remove, yet move somewhat the constancy of their minds, which were so unconstant dealt with. But within a while, the excellent Pamela had brought her minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her sister (whom most deereely she loved) Sister (said she) you see how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune is not yet a wearye of vexing vs: but what? A shipp is not countd strong for byding one storme: It is but the same trumpet of death, which now perhaps giues the last sounde: and let vs make that profe of our former miseries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truely said Philoclea, deare sister, I was so beaten with the euils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to despie the sweetnesse of it, yet my weakness bredde that strength, to be wearye of the paines of it: onely I must confesse, that little hope, which by these late accidents was awakened in me, was at the first angrie withall. But euyn in the darkenesse of that horrouer, I see a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade a misse, that see Pamela's steppes? I would onely (O that my wish might take place) that my schoole-Mistres might liue, to see me say my lesson truely. Were that alite, my Philoclea, said Pamela. No, no, (said she) let it come, and put on his worst face: for at the worst it is but
but a bug-bear. Ioy is it to me to see you so well resolued, and since the world will not haue vs, let it lofe vs. Onely (with that she stayed a little, and fight) onely my Philoclea, (then she bowed downe, and whispered in her eare) onely Musidorms, my shepheard, comes betweene me and death, and makes me thinke I should not dye, because I know he would not I should dye. With that Philoclea sighed also, saying no more, but looking vp upon Zelmante: who was walking vp & downe the chamber, hauing heard this message from Anaxius, and hauing in times past heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her a-gaine into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her selfe of the manner how to preuent it, she continued her musing humour, little saying, or indeed, little finding in her hart to say, in a case of such extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatned: and so stayed they; hauing yet that comfort, that they might tarrie togethier. Pamela nobly, Philoclea sweetly, and Zelmante sadly, and desperately none of them entertaining sleepe, which they thought should shortly begin, neuer to awake.

But Anaxius came home, hauing safely conducted Helen: and satelty he might wel do it: For though many of Baslius Knights would haue attempted something vp upon Anaxius, by that means to displiuer the Ladies, yet Philanax, hauning received his masters commadement, & knowing his word was giue, would not cōlent vnto it. And the black-Knight (who by the was able to carie abroad his woulds) did not know thereof, but was bringing forces, by force to deliver his Lady. So as Anaxius, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making euenc
even chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as soone as he was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers vp with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three together; with full intention to kill the sisters with his owne hands, and send their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwise inclined) dissuaded him: but his reverence stayed their persuasions. But when he was come into the chamber, with the very words of cholerike threatening cleming vp his throate, his eies first lighted upon Pamela; who hearing he was comming, and looking for death, thought she would keepe her owne maieffie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof so strake his eyes, with such a counterbuffe vnto his pride, that if his anger could not so quickly lye, nor his pride so easly honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthinesse.

Which while it bred a pause in him, Zelmae (who had ready in her mind both what and how to say) stepped out vpnto him, & with a resolute stayednes(void either of anger, kindnes, disdain, or humblenesse) spake in this fort. Ataxius (said she) if Fame haue not bene ouerpartial to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I do call thee even before that vertue, and will make it the judge betwenee vs. And now I do affirm, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou haft done, thou doest weakly, in seeking without daunger to reuenge his death, whose life with daunger thou mightst perhaps haue preferued: thou doest cowardly, in going about by the death of these excellent Ladies, to preuente the iust punishment, that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their fa-
ther, or any other could make, might lay upon thee; and doost most basely, in once pretenting thy selfe as an executioner; a vile office upon men, and in a unjust cause: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in so vnjust a cause, and upon Ladies, and such Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman, I say, thou art unworthy to be counted a Knight, or to be admitted into the company of Knights. Neither for what, I say, will I alledge other reasons, of wisdom, or justice, to prooue my speech, because I know thou dost disdain to be tied to their rules: but euên in thine owne vertue (whereof thou so much gloriest) I will make my triall: and therefore defie thee, by the death of one of vs two, to prooue, or disprooue these reproaches. Choose thee what armes thou likest, I onely demand, that these Ladies (whom I defend) may in liberty see the combat.

When Zelmaie began her speech, the excellency of her beautie, and grace, made him a little content to heare. Besides that, a new lesson he had read in Pamela, had already taught him some regard. But when she entered into brauerie of speech, he thought at first, a mad, and railing humor possest her; till, finding the speeches hold well together, and at length come to flatter challenge of combat, he stood leaning back with his bodie and head, sometimes with bent browes looking vpon the one side of her, sometimes of the other, beyonde maruell maruailing, that he, who had never heard such speeches from any Knight, should be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that maruell made him heare out her speech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother Zoilus, and said nothing, but onely lifting vp his eyes, smiled. But Zelmaie finding his minde, Anaxius (said
(said the) perchaunce thou disdaynest to answere me, because, as a woman, thou thinkest me not fitte to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I haue bene trayned vp in martial matters, with so good success, that I haue many times overcame better Knights then thy selfe: and am well known to be equall in stattes of armes, to the famous Pyrocles, who slewe thy valiant Uncle, the Giant Euarde. The remembrance of his Unclcs death something netted him, so as he answered thus.

Indeed (saide he) any woman may be as valiant as that coward, and traytorly boy, who slewe my Uncl cle trayterouslie, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Five thousand such could not haue overcame Euarde, but by falshood. But I fought him all over Asia, following him still from one of his cony-holes to another: till, comming into this Countrie, I heard of my friends being besieged, and so came to blowe away the wretches that troubled him. But wheresoever the miserable boy slie, heauen, nor hell, shall keep his harte from being torne by thee handes. Thou lyest in thy throate (saide Zelma) that boye, where ever he went, did so noble actes, as thy harte (as proude as it is) dares not thinke of, much lestte perfoure. But to please thee the better with my presence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinne to him, then my selfe: and so well we love, that he woulde not be forrier for his owne death, then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canst not devise to revenge thy selfe more vpon him, then by killing me: which, if thou darest doe manfullie, doe it; otherwise, if thou harne these incomparable Ladies, or my
my selfe, without daring to fight with me, I protest before these Knightes, and before heauen, and earth, (that will reveale thy shame) that thou art the beggest, daftardly villaine, that dishonoureth the earth with his steppes: and if thou lettest me overlieue them, so will I blaze thee. But all this could not move Ama
drus, but that he onely said, Euill should it become the terror of the world, to fight, much lesse to skolde with thee.

But (said he) for the death of these saime (pointing to the Princesse) of my grace, I giue them life. And withall, going to Pamela, and offering to take her by the chift, And as for you, Minion (said he) yeeld but gently to my will, and you shall not only lieue, but liue so happily. He would have saide further, whè Pamela, displeased both with words, matter, and manner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud beast (said he) yet thou plaies worshe thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, assure thy selfe, since my destiny is such, that at each moment my life & death stand in equall balance, I had rather haue thee, & think thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my husband. Pride & anger, would faine have cruelly receeged so bitter an answer, but alrede Cupid had begun to make it his sport, to pull his plumes: so that vnused to a way of couertes, and put out of his byas of pride, he haftily went away, grumling to himselfe, betwene threatning & wishing, leaving his brothers with the: the elder of whom, Lycurgus, liked Philoclea, & Zoilus would nedes loue Zelma; or at leaq, entertain themselues with making the beleue so. Lycurgus more braggard, & nere his brothers humor, bega, with setting forth their bloud, their deedes, how many they
they had despised, of most excellent women, how much they were bound to them, that would seek that of them. In summe, in all his speeches, more like the bestower, then the desirer of felicitie. Whom it was an excellent pastime (to those that would delight in the play of vertue) to see, with what a wittie ignorance she would not understand: and how, acknowledging his perfections, she would make, that one of his perfections, not to be injurious to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to touching and toying, still viewing his graces in no glasse but self-likin. To which, Philoclea shamefastnes, and humblenes, were as strong resisters, as choller, and disdaine. For though she yielded not, he thought she was to be overcome: and that thought a while stayed him from further violence. But Zelmane had eye to his behauiour, and set in her memorie, upon the score of Reuenge, while she her selfe was no less attempted by Zollus, who left full of bragges, was forwardest in offering (indeed) dishonourable violence.

CHAP. 27.

* Zelmanes persuasions to temporize, and referre them to Basilius. * Anaxius-his embassage to treate the marriage. * Basilius recourse to a newe Oracle, and his negative thereon. * The flattering relation of his Mercurie. * The brothers course to resist force without, and use force within.

But
when after their fruitlesse labours they had gone away, called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed betweene new conceaued desires, and disdaine, to be disdained) Zelmane (who with most assured quietness of judgement looked into their present estate) earnestly persuaded the two sisters, that to auaide the mischieves of prowde outrage, they would onely so farresute their behauior to their estates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worse case then they were, so it might bring forth unexpected relief. And why (said Pamela) shall we any longer flatter aduersity? Why should we delight to make ourselves any longer balls to injurious Fortune, since our owne kinne are content traitorously to abuse vs: Certainly, in mishap it may be some comforte to vs, that we are lighted in these fellowes handes, who yet will keepe vs from hauing cause of being miserable by our friends means. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie Zelmame (to whome the worlde might haue made vs able to doo honour) shoulde receaue onely hure by the contagion of our miserie. As for me, and my sister, undoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we haue done, or suffered nothing, which might make our soule ashamed at the parture from these bodies. Hope is the fawning traitour of the minde, while under colour of friendship, it robbes it of his chiefe force of resolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie
The Countesse of Pembroke

Ladie (said Zelmane) what you say is true; and that truth may well make up a part in the harmonic of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought always to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring forth any good, do not barre your selve theraoof: for then would be the time to die nobly, when you can not live nobly. Then so earnestly she persuaded with them both, to referre themselves to their fathers consent (in obtayning whereof they knewe some while would be spent) and by that meane to temper the mindes of their prowde woers; that in the ende Pamela yeelded to her, because she spake reason; and Philoclea yeelded to her reason, because she spake it.

And so when they were againe sollicited in that little pleasing petition, Pamela forced her selve to make answere to Anaxius, that if her father gaue his consent she would make her selve believe, that such was the heauenly determination, since she had no meanes to auoide it. Anaxius (who was the most franke promiser to him selve of successe) nothing doubted of Basilius consent, but rather assured him selve, he would be his oratour in that matter: And therefore he chose out an officious seruaunt (whome he esteeme very wise, because he never found him but just of his opinion) and willed him to be his embassadour to Basilius, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to haue his daughter both safe and happie, and desired him selve to haue such a sonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet course, but (if he list to accept it) would giue him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he should receaue Anaxius, who never before knewe what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not,
not, he would make him know, that the power of A-
axius was in every thing beyonde his will, and yet
his will not to be resisted by any other power. His
seruantaunt with smiling and caste-up looke, desired
God to make his memorie able to containe the trea-
sure of that wise speach,: and therefore besought him
to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his
mind might be the better acquainted with the diuine-
ness of therof; and that being gratioufly granted, he then
doubted not by carrying with him in his conceit, the
grace wherewith Anaxius spake it, to persuaude rocky
minds to their owne harme:so little doubted he to win
Basilius to that, which he thought would make him
thinke the heauens opened, when he harde but the
proffer thereof. Anaxius gruely allowed the probabi-
litie of his conception, and therefore sent him away,
promising him he should haue the bringing vp of his
second sonne by Pamela.

The messenger with speede perfourmed his Lords
commaundement to Basilius, who by nature quiet, and
by superstition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any
matter of armes in hand, wherein already he had found
so fewe successe; though Philanax vehemently urged
him therunto, making him see that his retiringe back did
discover injuries. But Basilius betwixt the feare of A-
axius might, the passion of his loue, & jealousie of his e-
state, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he
tooke the common course of me, to flie only the tedeu-
tio, whe they want resolutio: so detaining the messenger
with delaies, he deferred the directing of his course to
the cousell of Apollo, which because himselfe at that time
could
could not well go to require, he entrusted the matter to his best trusted Philanax: who (as one in whom obedience was a sufficient reason vnto him) went with diligence to Delphos, where being entred into the secrete place of the temple, and haveing performed the sacrifices vsuall, the spirit that possesst the prophesying woman, with a sacred fury, attended not his demand, but as it would argue him of incredulitie, tolde him, not in darke wonted speeches, but plainely to be understood, what he came for, and that he should returne to Basilius, and will him to denie his daughters to Amarius and his brothers, for that they were refered for such as were better beloued of the gods. That he should not doubte, for they should returne vnto him lately and speedily. And that he should keepe on his solitary course, till bothe Philanax and Basilius fully agreed in the vnderstanding of the former prophecie: withall, commaunding Philanax from thence forward to giue tribute, but not oblation, to humane wisedome.

4. Philanax then finding that reason cannot shewe it self more reasonable, then to leave reasoning in things aboue reason, returns to his Lorde, and like one that preferred truth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence foorth durste any more dissuade him, from that which he founde by the celestiall prouidence directed; but he him selfe looking to repayre the gouvemment as much as in so broken an estate by ciuill dissention he might, and fortifying with notable arte, bothe the lodges, so as they were almost made vnaprochable, he lette Basilius
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

Basilius to bemoan the absence of his daughters, and to bewail the imprisonment of Zehmane: yet wholly given holy to obey the Oracle, he gave a resolute negative unto the messenger of Anaxius, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good terms desiring him to shew him selfe, in respect of his birth and profession, So Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to seek the way of force, to deliver in noble force those Ladies vnto him, and so should the injurie have bene in Amphialus, and the benefit in him.

The messenger went backe with this answere, yet having euer vfid to sugre any thing which his Maister was to receive, he tolde him, that when Basilus first understood his desires, he did ouerreach so farre all his most hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldnesse to harken to such a man, in whom the heauens had such interest, without asking the Gods counselle, and therefore had sent his principall counsailour to Delphos, who although he kepte the matter never so secrete, yet his diligence, inspired by Anaxius his pruiledge ouer all worldly things, had founde out the secrete, which was, that he should not presume to marrie his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demie-Gods, and yet much lesse he should dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and Force his God, nowe beganne to finde another wisedome to be aboue, that judged so rightly of him: and where in this time of his seruauntes waiting for Basilus resolution, he and his brothers had courted
The Countesse of Pembrokes
courted their Ladies, as whom they vouchsafed to have for their wives, he resolved now to dally no longer in delays, but to make violence his Oratour, since he had found persuasions had gotten nothing but answers. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who having all this while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authorie, gate spurres to his running, and vnworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themselves, nor tending it in others, they were headlong to make that euill consorte of loue and force, when Anaxius had worde, that from the Tower there were descried some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gave presente order to his seruantes, and soldiers, to go to the gates and walles, leaving none within but himselfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that Mars-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely have awaked him.

CHAPEL 28.

Zoilus the messenger, and first offerer of force, is forced to fly, and die. Lycurgus pointeth to kill, as fought withal, foiled, & killed. Anaxius the Reuenger, with Pyrocles the Punisher brave, and bravely combatted.

Vt while he was directing what he would have done, his yongest brother Zoilus, glad that he had the commission, went in the name of Anaxius, to tel the sisters, that since he had answere from their father, that he and
and his brother Lacurgus, should have them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but presently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or persuadable. Pamela made him answer, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherein she had ever answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular message understood something from the elect, & not have her belief bound to the report of their partial servants, & therefore, as to their words, she & her sister, had ever a simple & true resolution, so against their unjust force, God, they hoped, would either arm their lives, or take away their lives.

Well Ladies (said he) I will leave my brothers, who by & by will come unto you, to be their own embassadours, for my part, I must now do my self service. And with that turning vp his mustachios, & marching as if he would begin a paen, he went toward Zelma. But Zelmae (having had all this while of the messengers being with Basilus, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the pasport of death, to escape those base dangers whereunto they found themselves subject) still hoping that Mufidorus would finde some means to deliver them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, & comfortable reasons, persuaded the to ouerpass many insolent indignities of their proud suters, who thought it was a sufficient favour not to doo the uttermost injurie, now come againe to the freight she most feared for them; either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would have let her, she had beene beyond herself amazed: but that...
yet held vp her wit, to attend the uttermost occasion, which eué then brought his hairie forehead vnto her: for Zoilus smacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something advancing himselfe, Darling (laid he) let thy hart be full of joy, and let thy faire eies be of counsel with it, for this day thou shalt haue Zoilus, whō many haue lóged for, but none shall haue him, but Zelmane. And oh, how much glory I haue to think what a race will be betwene vs. The world, by the heauens, the world will be too little for them. And with that, he would haue put his arme about her necke, but she, withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (laid she) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not diſsemble with you, my natuuite being cast by one that neuer failed in any of his prognostications, I haue bene assured, that I should neuer be apt to beare children. But since you wil honor me with so hie favor, I must onely desire that I may performe a vow which I made among my coutriewomen, the famous Amazons, that I would neuer mariée none, but such one as was able to withstand me in Armes: therafore, before I make mine own desire serviceable to yours, you must vouchsafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at least, with a blow or two of the sword, I may not finde my selffe periured to my selffe. But Zoilus (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other answere, but since she had a minde to trie his Knighthood, she should quickly know what a man of armes he was: and so, without reverence to the Ladies, began to struggle with her.

But in Zelmane then Difdaine became widsome, & Anger gaue occasion. For abiding no longer aboad in
the matter, she that had not put off, though she had disguised Pyrocles, being farre fuller of strong nimblenes, tript vp his feete, so that he fel down at hers. And withall (meaning to pursue what she had begun) puld out his sword, which he were about him: but before she could strike him withall, he gat vp, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethre, preparing themselves to come downe to their mistresses. But she followed at his heeles, & euë as he came to throw himself into their arms for succor, she hit him with his own sword, such a blow vpon the waft, that she almost cut him a slider: once, she fundred his soule fro his body, siding it to Proserpina, an angry Goddesse against rauilhers.

But Anaxius, being before his eyes the miserable end of his brother, fuller of despite the wrath, & yet fuller of wrath then sorrow, looking with a wofull eye vpon his brother Lycurgus, Brother, said he, chastise this vile creature, while I go down, & take order left further mischief arise: & so went down to the Ladies, whom he visited, doubting there had bene some further practife the yet he conceived. But finding the only strong in pacience, he went & lockt a great Iron gate, by which onely any body might mounte to that part of the Castle, rather to conceale the shame of his brother, slaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and the went vp to receive some comfort of the execution, he was sure his brother had done of Zelmane.

But Zelmane no sooner saw those brothers, of whom Reaso assured her she was to expect revenge, but that she kept to a target, as one that well knew the first mark of, value to be defence. And the accepting the opportuni-
tie of Anaxius going away, she waited not the pleasure
of Lycurgus, but without any words (which she euer thought vaine, where resolutiō tooke the place of persuasion) gaué her owne hart the contentment to be the affailer. Lycurgus, who was in the disposition of his nature hazzardous, & by the luckie passing through many dangers, growne confident in himselfe, went toward her, rather as to spoile, then to fight, so farre from feare, that his assurednesse disdained to hope. But whē her sword made demonstrations aboue all flattery of argumēts, & that he found she prest so vpon him, as shewed that her courage sprang not from blind despair, but was garded both with cunning & strength; self-loue the first in him duided it selē from vain-glory, & made him find that the world of worthines had not his whole globe coprised in his brest, but that it was necessary to have strong resistānce against so strong affailing. And so between the, for a few blowes, Mars himself might haue bin delighted to looke on. But Zelma, who knew that in her case, lownesse of victorie was little better the ruine, with the bellowes of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he strikin a maine blow at her head, she warded it with the shield, but so warded, that the shield was cut in two pieces, while it protected her, & withall she ran in to him, and thrusting at his brest, which he put by with his target, as he was lifting vp his sword to strike again, she let fall the piece of her shield, and with her left hand catching his sword of the inside of the pomel, with nimble & strong fleshē, she had gottē his sword out of his hand before his fence could couey to his imaginatio, what was to be doubted. And haue now two swords against one shield, meaning not foolishly to be vngratefull to good fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being vnweapned, then with the suddainnes therof, she gaué him
him such a wou’d vпо his head, in despite of the shields over-weak resistânce, that withal he fel to the ground, astonished with the paine, & agast with feare. But seeing Zelmane ready to cœlude her victory in his death, bowing vпо his head to her, with a countenance that had forgotten all pride, Enough excellent Lady, said he, the honor is yours: Whereof you shall want the best witnes, if you kil me. As you haue také frō men the glory of māhood, returne so now againe to your owne sex, for mercy. I wil redeeme my life of you with no small service, for I will vndertake to make my brother obey all your commandements: Grant life I beseech you, for your own honor, and for the persons sake that you loue best.

Zelmane reprefl a while her great hart, either disdaining to be cruell, or pitifull, & thencefore not cruell: & now the image of humane condition, begā to be anOrator vnto her of compasfiō, whē she saw, as he lifted vпо his armes with a suppillâts grace, about one of the, unhappily, tied a garter with a Jewel, which giuē to Pyrocles by his aunt of Theſsalia, & greatly esteemed by him), he had prefēted to Philocea, & with inward rage promising extream hatred, had seene Lycurgus with a proud force, & not without some hurt vnto her, pull away frō Philocea, because at entreatie she would not giue it him. But the sight of that was like a cyphar, signifying all the injuries which Philocea had of him suffred, & that remembrance feeding vпо wrath, trod down al coœcits of mercy. And thencefore saying no more, but, No villaine, dye: It is Philocea that feeds thee this toké for thy loue. With that she made her sword drink the blood of his hart, though he wrestling his body, & with a countenance prepared to excuse, wold fain haue delayed the receiving of deaths embassadors.

But neither that stayed Zelmanes hand, nor yet Anaxius & crie
crie vn to her, who having made fast the Iron gate, even then came to the top of the staires, when, contrarie to all his imaginations, he saw his brother lie at Zelmanes mercie. Therefore crying, promising, and threatening to her to hold her hand: the last grone of his brother was the onely answere he could get to his unrespected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine have drawn teares, which Furie in their spring dried; and Anger would faine have spoken, but that Difdaire sealed vp his lippes; but in his hart he blasphemed heauen, that it could haue such a power ouer him; no leffe ashamed of the victorie he should haue of her, then of his brothers ouerthrow: and no more spited, that it was yet unreuenged, then that the reuenge should be no greater, then a womans destruction. Therefore with no speach, but such a groning crie, as often is the language of sorrowfull anger, he came running at Zelmane, vie of fighting then seruing in stead of patient consideration what to doo. Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, pressing upon Zelmane in such a wel defended manner, that in all the combats that ever she had fought, she had not more need of quicke senses, & ready vertue. For being one of the greatest men of stature then living, as he did fully answere that stature in greatnesse of might, so did he exceed both in greatnesse of courage, which with a countenance formed by the nature both of his mind & body, to an almost horrible sierenes, was able to haue carried feare to any mind, that was not privie to it selfe of a true & constant worthines. But Pyrocles, whose soule might well be separated from his body, but never alienated from the remembring what was comely, if at the first he
he did a little apprehend the dangerousnes of his adversarie, whom once before he had something tried, & now perfectly law, as the very picture of forcible furie: yet was that apprehension quickly stayed in him, rather strengthening, then weakning his vertue by that wrestling, like wine, growing the stronger by being moued. So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in hands, did honor solitarines there with such a combat, as might haue demaunded, as a right of fortune, whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there, where manhood blew the trumpet, & satisfaction did whette, as much as glorie. There was strenght against nimblenes; rage, against resolution; fury, against vertue; confidence, against courage; pride, against noblenesse: loue, in both, breeding mutual hatred, & desire of ruing the injurie of his brothers slaughter, to Anaxios, being like Phiotocles captiuitu to Pyrocles. Who had seen the one, would haue thought nothing could have resisted; who had marked the other, would haue marcelled that the other had so long resisted. But like two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry worldes of shippes, and men upon them, with such swiftnes, as nothing seemes able to withstand them: yet meeting one another, with mingling their warrie forces, and strugling together, it is long to say whether streame gets the victorie: So betweene the one, if Pallas had bene there, she could scarcely haue tolde, whether she had nurced better in the seates of armes. The Irish greyhound, against the English mastiffe; the sword-fish, against the whale; the Rhinoceros, against the elephant, might be models, & but models of this cōbat. Anaxios was better armed defensuely: for (beside a strong calke

braue-
The Countesse of Pembroke

bravely covered, wherewith he covered his head: he had a huge shield, such perchance, as Achilles shewed to the pale wallies of Troy, wherewithall that body was covered. But Pyrocles, utterly unarmed for defence, to offend had the advantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, & with both hands nimbly performed that office. And according as they were diversely furnished, so did they differ in the manner of fighting. For Anaxius most by warding, and Pyrocles oftneest by annoying, resisted the adversaries assault. Both haste to end, yet both often staying for advantage. Time, distance, & motio custom made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene fellow Counsellers, and not enemies, each knew the others minde, and knew how to prevent it. So as their strength failed them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath faileth them sooner then their strength. And breathles indeed they grew, before either could complains of any losse of bloud.

CHAP. 29.

O consenting by the mediation of necessitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawn a little one from the other; Anaxius stood leaning upon his sword, with his grym eye, so setled upon Zelmane, as is wont to be the look of an earnest thought. Which Zelmane marking, & according to the Pyrocean nature, fuller of gay brauerie in the midst, then
then in the beginning of dæger; What is it (said he) Anaxius, that thou so deeply musedst on? Dost thy brothers example make thee thinke of thy fault past, or of thy coming punishment? I think (said he) what spiteful God it should be, who, envying my glory, hath brought me to such a waywarde case, that neither thy death can be a reveng, nor thy overthrow a victorie. Thou dost well indeede (saide Zelmane) to impute thy case to the heavenly providence, which will have thy pride find it selfe (even in that whereof thou art most proud) punished by the weake sex, which thou most contemnest.

But then, having sufficiently rested themselves, they renewed againe their combate, farre more terribly then before: like nimble vaulterers, who at the first and second leape, doe but stirre, and (as it were) awake the fierie and ærie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doe with more excellencie exercize. For in this pausing, each had brought to his thoughts the maner of the others fighting, and the aduantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might work themselves; and so againe repeated the lesson they had said before, more perfectly, by the ving of it. Anaxius oftner vied blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his shield, animating him vnto it. Pyroclæs, of a more fine, and delieuer strength, watching his time when to give fitte thrustes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commaundement, he shunned any harme Anaxius could do to him: so would he soon haue made an end of Anaxius, if he had not found him a man of
wonderful, & almost matchlesse excellècy in matters of
armes. Pyrocles vsed diuers saynings, to bring Anaxius
on, into some inconuenience. But Anaxius keeping a
found maner of fighting, neuer offered, but seeing faire
cause, & then followed it with wel-gouerned violence.
Thus spent they a great time, striaung to doo, and with
striaung to doo, wearying themselues, more then with
the very doing. Anaxius finding Zelmane so neere vnto
him, that with little motion he might reach her, knitt-
ing all his strength together, at that time mainly foy-
ned at her face. But Zelmane strongly putting it by with
her right hande sword, comming in with her left foote,
and hande woulde haue giuen him a sharpe visitation
to his right side, but that he was faine to leape away.
Whereat ashamed, (as hauing neuer done so much be-
fore in his life)